MOVED BY THE CITY
EXPERIENCES OF HELSINKI IN FINNISH PROSE
FICTION 1889–1941

Lieven Ameel

ACADEMIC DISSERTATION

To be presented, with the permission of the Faculty of Arts at the Helsinki University for public examination in Auditorium XII, University Main Building, 14 June 2013, at 12 noon.
ISBN 978-952-10-8861-2 (pbk.)
ISBN 978-952-10-8862-9 (PDF)

Cover Image (printed book)
Photographer: Rauno Träskelin

To purchase the printed book, contact the author at lieven.ameel@helsinki.fi

Unigrafia
Helsinki 2013
To Lucas and Iris
This study analyses experiences of Helsinki in prose fiction published in Finnish in the period 1889–1941. It examines the relationships that are formed between Helsinki and fictional characters, focusing, especially, on the way in which urban public space is experienced. Particular attention is given to the description of movement through urban space. The primary material consists of more than sixty novels, collections of short stories and individual short stories. Theoretically, this study draws on two sets of frameworks: on the one hand, the expanding field of literary studies of the city, and on the other hand, theoretical concepts provided by humanistic and critical geography, as well as urban studies. Following an introduction, which includes a concise history of Helsinki, a theoretical chapter charts the relevant concepts and theoretical approaches to the city in literature.

The analysis of the selected corpus is divided into five chapters, loosely following a chronological order and structured thematically. In each chapter, one key text is used as a window from which to approach particular thematics. The third chapter analyses experiences of arrival in the city, using Juhani Aho’s *Helsinkiin* (1889) as a prototypical text. The fourth chapter studies experiences of urban public space around the turn of the century, with particular attention given to Eino Leino’s *Jaana Rönty* (1907). In the fifth chapter, Arvid Järnefelt’s kaleidoscopic *Veneh’ojalaiset* (1909) functions as a key novel to approach experiences of a transforming and even disappearing Helsinki. The sixth chapter, focusing on Mika Waltari’s *Suuri illusioni* (1928), analyses the aestheticization and internalization of the urban experience in 1920s and 1930s Helsinki novels. The seventh and final chapter examines the cumbersome movement of socially marginalized characters on the urban fringes, with Joel Lehtonen’s *Henkien taistelu* (1933) as a key primary text.

This study argues that around the turn of the twentieth century, literary Helsinki was approached from a surprisingly rich variety of generic and thematic perspectives which were in close dialogue with international contemporary traditions and age-old images of the city, and defined by events typical of Helsinki’s own history. This resulted in fascinating and varied experiences of the city that set the tone for later literature. Helsinki literature of the 1920s and 1930s further developed the defining traits that took form around the turn of the century, adding a number of new thematic and stylistic nuances. The city experience was increasingly aestheticized and internalized, and as the description of the city moved inwards, the experience of Helsinki became dominated by a sense of centrifugal dynamics. The centre of the city became less prominent in literature, and in its place, the margins of the city and specific socially defined neighbourhoods gained in importance.
ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

All cities are made up of narratives, and in the years during which this dissertation was written, my own life story has become intimately intertwined with the narratives of Helsinki. It has been a rewarding but also at times unsettling experience to write a study of the literature of a city with which one is constantly surrounded. Narratives are, if anything, acts of communication, and they thrive in dialogue. If I have succeeded in not getting fatally lost in the maze of Helsinki narratives, real-life and fictional, this is to a considerable degree thanks to the many people who have guided, supported and challenged me during these past years: colleagues, friends and family, students, and my doctoral supervisors.

Many thanks are due, first of all, to my supervisor Pirjo Lyytikäinen, for her continuous and heart-felt support, and for the expert comments she has given on my various drafts on numerous occasions. Pirjo Lyytikäinen has been as important in providing academic supervision as she has been instrumental in introducing me to national and international research networks, and in helping me secure funding. She has also been more than understanding about the challenges inherent to balancing family life and academic tasks.

When I joined the international PhDnet for Literary and Cultural Studies in 2008, I had only the faintest idea of what this network was going to contribute to my dissertation project. Looking back at the numerous PhDnet doctoral seminars and conferences in which I have since participated, I feel very privileged to have been part of an inspiring and in many ways unique doctoral network. I am grateful to the participants of all five universities involved in the PhDnet, especially to the network coordinator Kai Sicks and to fellow doctoral students Robert Vogt and Elisa Antz. In particular, I would like to thank Ansgar Nünning, my supervisor from Giessen’s Justus Liebig University, for his generous support and his detailed feedback. In innumerable small and large ways, this work has benefited from his support.

My second supervisor at Helsinki University, Sirpa Tani, has followed my academic progress from its early beginnings, when I was writing my Master’s Thesis. Our joint research work and the supervision she has given me in my doctoral project have taught me immensely about conducting interdisciplinary academic research, and about editing and submitting academic texts to international audiences from diverse research disciplines.

Several colleagues at my department, the Department of Finnish, Finno-Ugrian and Scandinavian Studies, have contributed to the completion of this study. I would like to thank the department’s head, Jyrki Kalliokoski, who was the supervisor of my Master’s Thesis and who has been supportive of my research ever since. My sincere gratitude goes out to the many colleagues who have found the time to read and comment on chapters of my
dissertation: Jyrki Nummi, Anna Hollsten, Irma Perttula. Thanks to Tuomas Juntunen for academic feedback and for refreshing lunch talks. Thanks also to past and present “roommates” Päivi Koivisto, Elise Nykänen and Paula Arvas, and also to Riikka Rossi and Minna Majala, with whom I could not only discuss academic woes but also the wonders of parenthood.

Thanks to Andrew Newby, from the Helsinki Collegium, for carefully commenting on a chapter of my dissertation.

My warmest appreciation goes to the Finnish Doctoral Programme for Literary Studies, which has provided me with vital funding for two years, as well as to all participants in our inspiring doctoral seminars. Special thanks to Laura Karttunen and Tintti Klapuri for reading and commenting on my texts, and for dreaming of grand and trail-blazing future research projects.

The first three years of my research project were funded by the KONE foundation. The City of Helsinki Urban Facts encouraged me with a research grant in the first year of my research.

In 2011, I co-founded the Helsinki Literature and the City Network (HLCN). The possibility of sharing my fascination for the literary city with colleagues from other disciplines and universities has been incredibly rewarding. I would like to thank everyone involved in the activities of our thriving network, Sofie Verraest, Giacomo Bottà, Markku Salmela and Jason Finch, in particular.

Over the past years, I have taught several courses related to my research interests. My gratitude goes out to my students at the Helsinki University and to the students and staff at the Estonian Academy of Arts, where I have had the opportunity to teach the course “City in Literature” for several years now. I am particularly grateful to Panu Lehtovuori, currently at the Tampere University of Technology, who originally invited me to Tallinn, and whose genuine interest in my research projects has always felt encouraging.

The comments I have received from the pre-examiners of my work, Bart Keunen and Päivi Lappalainen, have been of considerable importance for finalizing my text and for making crucial adjustments.

Thanks to the staff at Didrichsen museum and to Jaana Cawén for granting me kind permission to use Alvar Cawén’s fascinating painting as the cover image of the printed version of this dissertation.

My gratitude goes out to Jarmo Wideman, who created, with painstaking attention to detail, the maps of Helsinki used in this study.

My work has greatly benefited from the untiring help of the staff of the various Helsinki University libraries.

It would perhaps have been possible to write a dissertation without the presence of dear friends, but it certainly would have been a lot less fun. Thanks to all the friends in Helsinki, and those further away, for the moments you asked me how my research was going, and for the moments you didn’t.

I owe much gratitude to my extended family (“Mummo” in particular) for helping out with childcare during these last hectic years.
I thank my parents for bringing me up with literature, and my brother for always being there.

My wife Maria has my deepest gratitude for her unwavering belief, support and patience.

I dedicate this thesis to our children Lucas and Iris.
CONTENTS

Abstract .................................................................................................................................................. 4
Acknowledgements ................................................................................................................................. 5
Contents ................................................................................................................................................... 8
1 Introduction ....................................................................................................................................... 12
   1.1 An Eternal Cinderella? ............................................................................................................ 12
   1.2 Selected Material .................................................................................................................. 16
   1.3 Earlier Writings on Helsinki in Finnish Literature ................................................................. 19
   1.4 Real and Imagined Cities ....................................................................................................... 22
   1.5 Dissertation Outline ............................................................................................................... 25
   1.6 A Short History of Helsinki .................................................................................................. 28
2 Ways of Writing and Reading the City ............................................................................................ 35
   2.1 Perspectives on the City in Literature .................................................................................... 35
       2.1.1 Dichotomies ................................................................................................................ 37
       2.1.2 City Ambiguity ....................................................................................................... 39
   2.2 Metaphorizations of the City .................................................................................................. 42
   2.3 From Abstract Space to Lived Place ...................................................................................... 48
       2.3.1 The Production of Space ............................................................................................ 51
   2.4 Towards a Poetics of Movement ............................................................................................ 55
       2.4.1 Trajectories through Space and Narrative ................................................................... 56
       2.4.2 Focalization and the Panoramic Perspective ............................................................... 58
       2.4.3 Walking as Enunciation ............................................................................................. 61
       2.4.4 Alienation and Belonging .......................................................................................... 63
3 The Shock of Arrival. Expectations and First Impressions of the City ........................................... 67
   3.1 Arrival in the City in Juhani Aho’s Helsinkiin (1889) ......................................................... 68
1 INTRODUCTION

and the city takes a breath, stony and pitiless,
on her barren peninsula,
bathed by the open sea and the pale sky
(Waltari 1936: 234)

1.1 AN ETERNAL CINDERELLA?

Reflections on the literary representation of Helsinki have often been
permeated by a negative tone, stressing what is lacking rather than the rich
variety to be found, and arguing that Helsinki and its literature are defined
by immaturity and a lack of history. V.A. Koskenniemi’s 1914 essay on
Helsinki’s literary representations in the book Runon kaupunkeja (“Literary
Cities”) can be seen as symptomatic in this respect. Koskenniemi gives an
account of the existing literature of Finland’s capital in terms that express
both earnest disappointment and cautious hopes for the future. His essay
presents Helsinki side by side with the likes of Bruges, Weimar and Verona,
but comparing unfavourably to such well-established literary cities:

Stockholm has Strindberg, St. Petersburg has Dostoevsky, Berlin has
Kretzer, Hamburg has Frenssen, Oulu has Pakkala and Rauma has
Nortamo – but who is Helsinki’s poet? Who has claimed for Helsinki
the admission ticket into the society of literary cities?

Who is the poet of Helsinki? The answer, in Koskenniemi’s opinion, was
disheartening: Finnish literature had not yet produced a “synthetic literary
work about Helsinki, a novel or an epic, in which this Northern capital would
live in its totality with all those characteristics which nature, race and culture
have bestowed upon her” (Koskenniemi 1914: 89). In his view, Helsinki

---

1 “ [...] kaupunki hengähtää kivisenä ja armottomana, avoimen meren ja vaalean
syleilemänä karulla niemekkeällään [...]”

All translations are mine unless mentioned otherwise.

2 “Tukholmassa on Strindberginsä, Pietarilla Dostojevskinsa, Berlinillä Kretzerinsä, Hampurilla
Frensseninsä, Oululla Pakkalansa ja Raumalla Nortamonsa – kuka on Helsingin runoilija? Kuka on
Helsingille lunastanut lupakirjan runon kaupunkien yhdyshyödyntä?”

It is noteworthy that Koskenniemi debuted with a collection of poetry in which urban images
dominated (1906); in his later lyrical works, however, urban material gradually disappeared from sight
(see Kupiainen 1941: 368).

3 “[...] syntetistä runoelmaa Helsingistä, romaania tai eeposta, jossa tämä pohjoinen
pääkaupunki eläisi kokonaisuudessaan kaikkine niine ominaisuuksineen, joita luonto, rotu ja kulttuuri
ovat siille määrittelevät.”
lacked as yet a writer who could capture its particular nature and characteristics, and a poetical work that would present this vision. It is a vision of Helsinki and its literature that is as old as it is persistent: the image of an eternal Cinderella, forever under age, waiting to be allowed to go to the ball.4

Perhaps the literary representation of turn-of-the-century Helsinki did not live up to the expectations of contemporaries, but a close look at the rich material available reveals a surprisingly manifold variety. In newspaper stories, novels, and novellas appearing in ever quicker succession towards the turn of the twentieth century, Helsinki starts to take shape in much of its rich diversity. After the upheavals of 1917 (Finnish independence) and 1918 (the Civil War), the range of thematics and genres is further expanded, and a truly kaleidoscopic image of the capital, with all its various trades, pleasures and vices emerges. In the two centuries since 1812, when Helsinki became the capital of Finland, and in particular from the late 1880s onwards, when Finnish prose literature came into bloom, the city has spawned a complex literary imagination, which as yet remains largely unstudied. An extensive analysis of how Helsinki is experienced in Finnish literature is not available, and addressing this hiatus is the main aim of this dissertation.

How does Helsinki appear in Finnish literature? What kinds of experiences has it evoked and provoked? Through what processes was this literary city constructed, in terms of both its relationship to international urban discourses, genre and period conventions, and its particular social, political and also military history? What kinds of relationships are formed between Helsinki and the fictional characters in these novels and short stories? Or, to phrase one overall question that informs all of the above: how is the experience of urban public space rendered in Finnish prose literature from the late 1880s until the beginning of the Second World War?

4 Maila Talvio draws a direct comparison between Helsinki and Cinderella in a short essayistic text “Pieni puhe meidän Helsingille” (“A Small Talk with Our Helsinki”; 1936/1951), which is clearly in dialogue with Koskenniemi’s Runon kaupunkeja. The text yet again laments Helsinki’s short (cultural) history. In the same year, Talvio wrote the article “Onko Helsingillä historiaa?” (“Does Helsinki Have a Past?”), in which she answers the question of the title in the affirmative, and, once again, draws on the image of a Cinderella to depict Helsinki (Talvio 1936: 9). In 1929, a column in the magazine Aitta refers again to the ongoing discussion concerning the lack of a real Helsinki novel (Ahonen 1929). Ahonen gives as one of the reasons the fact that many Finnish authors were not born in the capital. In 1931, Yrjö Kivimies returns to the same thematics in the causerie “Öistä Helsinkiä” (“Helsinki at Night”), regretting the lack of a novel with Helsinki as its main character (1931).

The fact that turn-of-the-century Helsinki, in particular, has received little attention, can be related to the prevailing interest in realist literature for countryside settings, but also to its interest in the provincial town. After the Second World War, Viipuri, Finland’s second largest city, was lost to the Soviet Union and gained arguably the most mythical proportions in the Finnish collective imagination concerning symbolic cities.
Particular attention will be paid to the experience of Helsinki’s public space, and to representations of mobility related to the city. The turn of the century and the decades that followed have not without reason been called the “vertigo years” (Blom 2008), years defined by an ever-increasing, dizzy-making speed, acceleration, and expansion. Rapidly expanding urban space was the quintessential spatial plane on which these vertiginous experiences of modernity were played out. Finland was no exception: situated at the fringes of Europe, and as a country that had a long way to catch up on technological, industrial and urban innovations, the all-embracing changes of the age were arguably even more tangibly felt here than elsewhere, since they were so much more condensed in time and space. The population of Helsinki doubled many times over in the century leading up to Finnish independence, and new innovations such as the tramway, the railway, gas lighting and the telephone, amongst many others, were adopted eagerly, and in some cases only a few years after their introduction in the major capitals of Europe (see Hietala 1992; Pöyhönen 1992; Bell & Hietala 2002). In addition to the burgeoning technological and urban developments visible in the Finnish capital, Helsinki’s cityscape witnessed a number of far-reaching social and political disruptions that infused the literary descriptions of (public) urban space with an added sense of tension and urgency: the 1905 General Strike, the 1906 rebellion of the Russian soldiers at the fortress at Viapor/Suomenlinna, the 1918 Civil War, the Prohibition during the 1920s, and the depression and political radicalism of the 1930s.

Questions of mobility, both social and physical, define the experience of the city in this period, and they lie at the core of the research questions tackled in this dissertation. Helsinki, like so many other cities in the early twentieth century, was a city that left nobody unmoved, either literally or metaphorically. The sense of being embraced by the movement and emotion connected to the city could range from a variety of clearly discernible experiences – joyful expectation, enchanted intoxication, anxiety – to the most extreme forms of nausea or vertigo. The experience of young Antti Ljungberg, the protagonist of Juhani Aho’s seminal novella Helsinkiin (“To Helsinki”; 1889), which will be discussed in the first analysis chapter, can be considered prototypical. After travelling from his home town Kuopio to the capital, Antti is so overcome by bewilderment at the dazzling spectacle of the restaurant Kappeli, located centrally in the Helsinki Esplanade, that he is bereft of all sense of direction. The city appears to him like a foaming whirlpool, hurling him downward, with no end in sight (Aho 1889/2000: 77).

5 One important thematic perspective which remains outside of the research questions addressed here is that related to domestic spaces and the dream of a home, a rich field in the literature on Helsinki which as yet is largely unexplored.

6 The fortress was known under the Swedish name “Sveaborg” (literally “fortress of Sweden”), which in Finnish was known as “Viapori”. In 1918, the name was changed to Suomenlinna (“fortress of Finland”).
Most significantly, Antti’s geographical journey to the political centre of the country can also be read as a narration of social trajectories through space, since the descent of the protagonist to the capital is also a downward movement on a moral and social scale.

This dissertation makes a contribution, first of all, to the field of Finnish literary studies, in which the city as cultural artefact and generator of literary images has received relatively little attention.\(^7\) Contrary to the deprecating view presented by Koskenniemi and others, Helsinki emerges around the turn of the twentieth century as a complex literary space in Finnish literature, combining the strong echoes of a wide range of international discourses of the city. These early literary experiences of the city in the period 1890–1920 will be the focus of the first three analysis chapters, while the last two analysis chapters will examine the gradual rupture that took place in the way literary Helsinki was constructed from the 1910s onwards. I will argue that the major change did not, as often suggested, take place in the literary texts written by authors influenced by, or closely related to, the Torch Bearer movement, a highly mediatized group of Finnish authors – predominantly poets – that debuted in the early 1920s.\(^8\) Rather, it is a rupture that took place in the texts of writers that were acting in a double periphery, making use of peripheral genres and thematics, and using as the setting of their literature the urban periphery rather than the centre. In texts such as Joel Lehtonen’s *Henkien taistelu* (“The Battle of the Spirits”; 1933), the image of a relatively homogeneous and comprehensible city makes way for a more fragmented and deformed urban landscape.

In a more international context, this study makes a contribution to research on literary cities in general, especially as a reminder of how powerful the images and experiences evoked by smaller cities and capitals on the margins of the Western literary field can be. By analysing a relatively small capital on the fringes of Europe, it becomes possible to add fresh insights to the research of urban space in literature, which has been mostly

---

\(^7\) The idea of Finnish literature as largely lacking a rich imagination on the city would recur time and again throughout the twentieth century, most notably in Kai Laitinen’s essay “Metsästä kaupunkiin” (“From the Forest to the City”; 1973), which reduced the “grand tradition” of Finnish prose literature to a gradual descent from the forest to the city. This evolution logically stressed the “unnatural” character of the city in a Finnish cultural context, and the late arrival of a complex urban imagination in literary representations. While representing a rather different point of view from Laitinen’s, a similar thinking on the city can be observed in Karkama’s study *Kirjallisuus ja nykyaika* (“Literature and Modernity”; 1994), which gives urbanity a historically negligible role within Finnish literary representations of modernity.

\(^8\) One of the critics who suggests that the Torch Bearers constitute a caesura in Finnish city literature is Raoul Palmgren, whose influential study *Kaupunki ja tekniikka Suomen kirjallisuudessa* (“The City and Technique in Finland’s Literature”; 1989) carries the subtitle “Kuvauslinjoja ennen ja jälkeen tulenkantajien” (“Aesthetic tendencies before and after the Torch Bearers”). For more on the Torch Bearers, see Chapter 6.
Introduction

cconcerned with a small group of metropolises. Whereas much of the ever-
more expanding literature on the classical literary cities (Paris, London, New
York, L.A.) seems to merely add to an idiosyncratic debate, the study of
smaller cities and peripheral urban centres can make, in my opinion, real and
tangible contributions to an understanding of the potential inherent to city
discourses and images. These may be used as sources to energize and
revitalize everyday living spaces, to establish a sense of community and
belonging, and to foster liveable neighbourhoods and urban environments.9

Literary scholars are particularly well placed to analyse and gauge the
potential for images and discourses of the city, and to contribute to how these
can be brought to bear on the actual city in everyday contexts, both through
recent trends in city (and neighbourhood) branding, and at the grass-roots
level of individual streets and building blocks. Studies on such issues, which
have been largely monopolized by cultural geography and urban studies, can
be greatly invigorated by added insights from literary studies. A more
concerted cross-insemination from all relevant academic disciplines has been
called for by such social geographers as David Harvey, who has stressed that
“[t]he geographical imagination is far too pervasive and important a facet of
intellectual life to be left alone to geographers” (Harvey 1995: 161).10

1.2 SELECTED MATERIAL

The prose literature which constitutes the corpus for this study consists of a
selection of books and short stories published in Finnish between the late
1880s and the beginning of the Second World War. This period constitutes
what is in effect the first half century of literary representations of Helsinki in
Finnish-written literature, starting with the very first texts thematizing the
Finnish capital (Juhani Aho’s “Helsinki” (“To Helsinki”; 1889], and some
of Aho’s other short prose) and ending with the disruption caused by the
Second World War.11 This is the period in which the foundations of literary
Helsinki were laid, the decades in which the city was approached from a wide
range of generic and thematic perspectives. This was done in close dialogue
with both international contemporary traditions and age-old images of the
city, but also in ways that were defined by events typical of the city’s own

---

9 For recent explorations in the potential of “urban imaginaries” and “urban plots” in relation to
urban policy-making, see Weiss-Sussex & Bianchini 2006, and in particular Bianchini 2006, Lindner
2006 and Bloomfield 2006 in the same volume; also Sonda et al. 2010.

10 The utterance mirrors his earlier assertion that “the question of space is surely too important to
be left exclusively to geographers” (Harvey 1989b: 5).

11 Prose literature written in Finnish was late in coming; the first novels written in Finnish
appeared in the 1870s. In Finland, the Second World War is divided into three semi-separate wars: the
Winter War, the Continuation War and the Lapland War.
distinct history, thus building a fascinating and varied literature of Helsinki that has set the tone for later literary descriptions.

A number of potentially interesting prose texts were excluded. Popular literature (crime novels, for example) and children’s literature will not be referred to, or only in passing. This exclusion does not want to suggest that these genres are without interest for the development of urban literature — on the contrary. In many respects, the modern city was thematized most clearly in the light literature of “office girl books”, detective novels and youth novels (see Tunturi 1996; Koskela 1999b: 266, 279; Malmio 1999: 291–292). The popular fiction written by Kersti Bergroth, in particular, contains innovative and fascinating experiences of Helsinki from an unusual perspective (that of young, upper middle class girls). Historical novels published during these years but set in an earlier period have also been excluded, unless as background material. Theatre plays and works of poetry are largely excluded. In the selection of the novels and short stories, the rather comprehensive list of literary representations of Helsinki in Finnish literature drafted by Ismo Loivamaa (1993) has been of considerable help, as have the overviews of source material presented in the work of Aarne Anttila (1956), Pentti Liuttu (1963), I. Havu (1965) and Raoul Palmgren (1989) (see below, 1.3.).

I chose to include prose texts from a relatively long time frame, spanning the period of the turn of the twentieth century as well as the inter-war period. Many of the earlier studies on Finnish texts foregrounding the city in this period have focused on placing them in their immediate frame of genre and period, which has tended to obscure the continuous development of the literary images of Helsinki. Analysing literary texts from a more extensive corpus makes it possible to re-appraise the thematics and importance of individual novels in the light of a continuity that would otherwise remain less clearly visible. In total, some sixty novels, collections of short stories and individual short stories were selected. Some authors, such as Mika Waltari and Maila Talvio, are present with as many as half a dozen texts or more, while other authors, such as Hilda Tihlå, are included with just one.

In the period 1889–1920, particularly relevant texts for the development of urban literary images on Helsinki (apart from Juhani Aho’s aforementioned novella “Helsinkiin”) are: Arvid Järnefelt’s kaleidoscopic novel Veneh’ojalaiset (“The Family Veneh’oja”; 1909); Eino Leino’s Frost Year Trilogy (1906, 1907, 1908; Jaana Rönty in particular [“Jaana Rönty”; 1907]), documenting the years of Russian oppression in the first decade of the twentieth century; and a number of student novels from authors such as Kyösti Wilkuna (Vaikkea tie [“The Difficult Road”]; 1915), and Santeri Ivalo (Hellaassa [“In Hellas”]; 1890), Aikansa lapsipuoli [“Stepchild of his Time”]; 1895). A special genre of the urban text is the short story, which in this

period was used to great effect by Juhani Aho, L. Onerva (Nousukkaita [“Parvenus”]; 1911, Vangittuja sieluja [“Imprisoned Souls”]; 1915) and Toivo Tarvas (Häviävää Helsinkiä [“Disappearing Helsinki”]; 1917, Helsinkiläisiä [“Helsinkiers”]; 1919).

In the decades following Finnish independence (1917), a new generation of urban novelists appeared, inspired in part by the Torch Bearer movement with its interest in urbanity and modernity; amongst these, Mika Waltari was the most well-known and productive writer, with a number of highly popular Helsinki novels that appeared in quick succession in the late 1920s and 1930s. In the 1930s, the tradition of composing quick sketches of urban life in the form of short story collections was continued by Iris Uurto (Tulta ja tuhkaa [“Fire and Ashes”; 1930]), Arvi Kivima (Katu nousee taivaaseen [“The Street Rises to the Heavens”; 1931]) and Elvi Sinervo (Runo Söörnäisistä [Poem about Sörnäinen; 1937]), amongst others. During these decades, new ways of approaching Helsinki emerge, breaking away from the more traditional confines set by earlier realist and naturalist descriptions. Innovative novels in this respect are, amongst others, Joel Lehtonen’s satiric Henkien taistelu (“The Battle of the Spirits”; 1933), Helvi Hämäläinen’s late naturalistic Katuojan vettä (“Water in the Gutter”; 1935) and urban pastoral Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä (“A Respectable Tragedy”; 1941). The fact that Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä appeared in 1941 puts it at first sight outside the temporal horizon of the present dissertation, which examines experiences of literary Helsinki in the half century preceding the Second World War. Nevertheless, for various reasons, I have decided to include the novel. One reason is its obvious relevance to the thematics analysed in this dissertation. In the case of Helvi Hämäläinen’s Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä, an added argument for including the novel in the corpus for this dissertation is that it was originally scheduled to appear in 1939; controversies surrounding the novel delayed its appearance until 1941.

For a number of reasons, Finnish literature written in Swedish was not included. The most important reason is that there are arguably two different literary traditions on Helsinki: one written in Swedish by Finland-Swedish authors, the other written by Finnish-writing authors. Until the late nineteenth century, Finland-Swedish authors succeeded in reaching readers across the language divide in Finland. From the 1880s, however, in the very period when Helsinki gradually became more prominent in Finnish literature, this would become increasingly rare. K.A. Tavaststjerna, whose major works appeared in the 1880s and 1890s, was the first important Finland-Swedish author who found himself in the position of a minority author, unable to make a lasting mark on Finnish literature beyond the Swedish-speaking minority in Finland (see Laitinen 1991: 243; Nummi

---

13 Apart from some scattered fragments, the texts in my corpus have not been translated into English, although some have been translated into Swedish, German, French, and Estonian, amongst others.
2003b: 91). The rich tradition of writing on the city in Finland-Swedish literature has already received considerable academic attention, and recent academic monographs on the subject serve as reminders of the continuing interest in city images in Finland-Swedish literature (see Ciaravolo 2000, and in particular, Pedersen 2007). In contrast, little progress has been made in mapping the experiences evoked by Helsinki in literature written in Finnish.

### 1.3 EARLIER WRITINGS ON HELSINKI IN FINNISH LITERATURE

In 2000, Helsinki celebrated its 450th anniversary, and an overview of recent publications featuring the Finnish capital appeared under the slightly laconic title “450 vuotta – entä sitten? Korkea pino kirjoja” (“450 years – and then what? A big pile of books”; Laurila 2001). The article listed a wide range of texts celebrating, evoking and studying Helsinki: collections of poetry, photo books, anthologies, novels, city guides, historical works and academic contributions. No comprehensive study of how Helsinki appeared in literature, however, featured on the list. This had not changed by 2012, when celebrations related to the bicentenary anniversary of Helsinki as the capital of Finland caused a new outpour of Helsinki-related publications. Finnish literary history has generally shown little interest in city themes (see also Laine 2011: 155). Compared to other capitals within Europe in general, or Helsinki’s most immediate large neighbours, Stockholm and St. Petersburg, there are remarkably few articles and monographs on literary Helsinki.

To date, the most important study on Helsinki in Finnish literature is arguably still Raoul Palmgren’s *Kaupunki ja tekniikka Suomen kirjallisuudessa* (“The City and Technology in Finnish Literature”; 1989), a book which is, however, not primarily concerned with Helsinki, and aims to provide an overview of all relevant references to the city and technology from the very beginnings of Finnish literature to the date of its appearance. Palmgren’s study is consequently mostly descriptive in nature, and does not present an extensive analysis of the material. The only recent monograph

---

14 At least two 2012 publications do, however, refer to Helsinki’s literature. *Helsingfors i ord och bild* (“Helsinki in words and images”; Assmith et al. 2012) presents photographs of Helsinki from the turn of the twentieth century side by side with literary excerpts in a volume aimed at the general public. There is, however, little or no contextualization or analysis of the literary examples. And Eino Leino’s (no relation to the famous author) *Kirjailijoiden Helsinki* (“Writers’ Helsinki”; 2012) gives a popular history of anecdotes related to Helsinki and its literary authors.

15 One reason for this lack of interest in city representations in literature is the view that there is little Finnish literature of importance which takes the Finnish capital as its setting. Janne Tunturi, for example, claims that “there are hardly any significant Finnish novels set in Helsinki” (Tunturi 1996: 160).
dealing with literary Helsinki, Arne Toftegaard Pedersen’s evocative *Urbana odysseer* (“Urban Odysseys”; 2007) focuses on Finland-Swedish prose from the 1910s, mentioning Finnish-written texts on Helsinki only tangentially. Helsinki in Finland-Swedish literature, more specifically, in the literature of the contemporary author Kjell Westö, is the subject of Alessandro Bassini’s 2012 doctoral dissertation *Notes from the Suburb: the Image of Helsinki in the works by Kjell Westö* (Bassini 2012), which gives no mention of literature written in Finnish on Helsinki.

In the course of the last century, a small number of general articles have appeared on Helsinki representations in literature. The first group of articles was published in connection with, or closely following, the centenary anniversary of Helsinki as the capital of Finland in 1912: Runar Schildt’s “Helsingfors i skönlitteraturen” (“Helsinki in literature”; 1912), V.A. Koskenniemi’s contribution on Helsinki in *Runon kaupunkeja* (“Literary Cities”; 1914) and M. Saarenheimo’s “Helsinki kaunokirjallisuuden kuvastimesa” (“Helsinki in the mirror of literature”; 1916). Schildt’s and Koskenniemi’s texts have the added benefit of being written by literary authors that actively contributed to the development of literary Helsinki. They are not only descriptive, but in a sense also programmatic. Both authors start out with a rather negative view of the quality and quantity of literary representations of the Finnish capital, but look forward to new developments. Interestingly, Runar Schildt, V.A. Koskenniemi, as well as Mikko Saarenheimo point out that there are several unchartered territories in literary Helsinki, and voice the hope that literary representations of Helsinki would be more inclusive of working-class perspectives than had been the case.

Compared to Koskenniemi’s and Schildt’s engaged and insightful contributions, many of the later articles devoted to the literary representations of Helsinki were content with enumerating plots and extensive quotations of descriptive passages. This is the case, in particular, for three studies that appeared in the 1950s and 1960s: Aarne Anttila’s “Helsinki kaunokirjallisuuden kuvastimesa” (“Helsinki in the mirror of literature”; 1956), which covers the period 1875-1918, Pentti Liuttu’s article “Helsinki suomenkielisessä taidekirjallisuudessa” (“Helsinki in Finnish-written literature”; 1963), covering the years from the 1880s to the 1940s, and I. Havu’s “Helsinki kaunokirjailijoiden kuvaamana” (Helsinki as depicted by literary authors”; 1965). Very little is visible in these studies of the evolution of relationships between characters and their environments, and of any sense of motion through urban time and space – two aspects of the urban experience with which this dissertation is concerned in particular. One further source which has to be mentioned here is the insightful article “Helsingfors i 1800-talets skönlitteratur” (“Helsinki in nineteenth-century

---

16 Liuttu’s article draws extensively on his earlier unpublished “laudatur study” conducted at the Helsinki University (see Liuttu 1950).
literature”; 1947) by Gunnar Castrén, which discusses Helsinki literature during the nineteenth century.

The 1990s witnessed the appearance of a handful of articles on Helsinki (and Finnish cities in general) in literature, pointing at new vistas of research and a renewed interest in the study of literary space, in part inspired by innovative approaches from other academic disciplines. Pertti Karkama’s introductory article “Kaupunki kirjallisuudessa” (“The City in Literature”; 1998) was one of the first extensive overviews of the Finnish literary imagination of the city after Palmgren’s Kaupunki ja tekniikka Suomen kirjallisuudessa. Although it does not aim at giving more than a general outline, and does not focus on Helsinki exclusively, it makes an important contribution by breaking away from the more traditional, deprecating view on the city in Finnish literature, in particular in the way it gives ample attention to the turn of the twentieth century as a fruitful period for literary representations of urban thematics. Pauli Tapani Karjalainen’s and Antti Paasi’s article “Contrasting the Nature of the Written City: Helsinki in Regionalistic Thought and as a Dwelling-place” (1994), which looks quite broadly at literary representations of Helsinki from the 1920s on is seminal in the way it approaches literary Helsinki from a cultural-geographical point of view. In addition to these, a number of fairly general contributions on literary Helsinki by Harri Veivo, and intended for the general public (1997, 2009), should be mentioned as well. Lastly, H. K. Riikonen’s article on Helsinki as a crime scene in Finnish crime fiction (1994) provides an illustrative account of the importance of urban space as a setting within particular genres of popular literature.

In addition to these contributions, a number of articles have traced Helsinki representations in the work of one specific author or one specific text (see, for, example Nieminen 1974; Laurila 1982a; Envall 1992; Karjalainen 1995; Korsberg 2008). Scattered references to city representations in Finnish fiction can also be found in a number of monographs on specific themes or authors (see Envall 1994: 11–44; Hapuli 1995; Nummi 2002: 253–293). The recent dissertation by Silja Laine on the question of skyscrapers and urban architecture in Helsinki in the 1920s features an extensive overview of some of the central developments concerning the image of Helsinki in literature, but with a special focus on representations of architecture and high buildings (Laine 2011: 137–183).

---

1.4 REAL AND IMAGINED CITIES

The strong link between historical cities and their literature is so obvious and forceful that it has sometimes obscured how complex the relation is between imagined and “real” cities. We can go on a literary walk in Dostoevsky’s St. Petersburg; Paris is evoked by the writings of Zola, Balzac and Proust; Prague markets itself as the city of Kafka, and Lisbon is packed with Pessoa paraphernalia. The practice of inflating an author’s image of a city with the geographical city of the same name has been criticized from various perspectives, and any study on city representations would be well informed to position clearly what is, in fact, the prime object of the study involved. Is this the actual, historical city as reflected in the “mirror” of literary representation, or the imagined city as a semi-autonomous cultural artefact, or any of the various ways in which the actual city and its literary representation interact with each other and with other literary city representations? This question was taken up by Virginia Woolf in her first review for the Times Literary Supplement, entitled “Literary Geography” (1905). In Woolf’s words: “to insist that it [a writer’s city] has any counterpart in the cities of the earth is to rob it of half its charm” (Woolf 1905/1986: 35; see also Johnson 2000: 199). There is indeed something profoundly reductionist in equating the literary city with its geographically locatable counterpart, and I would agree with Burton Pike’s claim that “Dickens’ London and London, England, are located in two different countries” (Pike 1981: 13). But, like most scholars, I would also agree with Marco Polo’s assertion in Calvino’s The Invisible Cities that, while “the city must never be confused with the words that describe it”, nevertheless “between the one and the other there is a connection” (1972/1997: 61).18

Scholars studying the literary city can be roughly divided into two groups, with the extreme sides of the axis insisting on either a direct relation between the “actual” and “fictional” city, or treating the literary city as a completely independent world. William Sharpe calls these opposing poles respectively “formalists” and “historicists” (Sharpe 1990: xii), and insists that, despite heated debates, “the study of the city and its art is not a matter of ‘either/or’, of embracing one approach to the exclusion of others” (ibid.). More to the point, the difference between these perspectives reflects different kinds of research interests in the literary city. After all, there are a great many things a literary text can “do”, and all of these can be legitimate objects of study.

Drawing on Paul Ricoeur, the relation between a literary text and the city it evokes can be argued to involve a “threefold mimesis”, which constitutes a

---

18 See also Maria Balshaw and Liam Kennedy, who, in their introduction to the volume Urban Space and Representation (2000), argue that the city, while being “inseparable from its representations”, is nevertheless “neither identical with nor reducible to them” (Balshaw & Kennedy 2000: 3; see also Deriu 2001: 795).
mimetic circle of prefiguration, configuration and refiguration (Ricoeur 1984/1990: 52). Existing ideas of the actual world precede the literary text (prefiguration); they are brought within a meaningful relation with each other in the literary text (configuration). Eventually, they bleed back into the world (refiguration), closing the mimetic circle into an ever-continuing process (ibid.: 52–54). These three processes are called by Ricoeur respectively Mimesis¹, Mimesis² and Mimesis³. When analysing the experience of the literary city, in our case Helsinki, it is important to keep in mind that knowledge of the historical and geographical city of Helsinki, as well as age-old discourses on imagined cities, is presupposed in any given novel. Within such a specific novel on Helsinki, a selection of these elements is brought together and configured by way of emplotment. And when the text finds a readership, the fictional world it presents will have, in turn, its influence on the world. The “formalists” in the quote by Sharpe are mostly interested in what Ricoeur calls “mimesis²”, the process of configuration within the literary text, while many of the “historicists” are more interested in a different object of study, “mimesis” in Ricoeur’s classification.

In order to analyse the urban experiences in a given novel, it will be necessary to look at the processes involved in the prefiguration and configuration of a particular literary city. Building on Nelson Goodman’s theory of worldmaking (see Goodman 1978; Nünning 2010: 216–217), one should examine the processes involved in what I would like to call “citymaking” in a given literary text. As Carlo Rotella points out, “[t]he city’, that abstract generalization, is made up of many cities and by many representational strategies” (Rotella 1998: 14; see also Sharpe 1990: xi); and Nelson Goodman (1978) has provided a useful taxonomy of the processes involved in the prefiguration, configuration and refiguration of the literary city.

19 In Sirpa Tani’s study of Helsinki in Finnish films, this complex interaction between city representations and the “real” city is approached with the help of the concept of the “magic mirror”, drawing on a lithograph by M.C. Escher (see Tani 1995: 4–6).

20 The effect of representations of cities, or “possible cities” on the experience of “real” cities has been stressed time and again; Kevin Lynch, for example, claims that “Dickens helped to create the London we experience as surely as its actual builders did” (1981: 147–150; see also Donald 1992: 420), while Oscar Wilde famously claimed that the London fog had never been so thick before the onslaught of impressionist painting (see Sharpe 2011: 134).

In my personal experience of Helsinki, the view of fog covering the Helsinki Senate Square (a square which is immediately adjacent to the Main Building of the Helsinki University, where I am currently [2013] working) has never been without a sense of impending crisis ever since I first read Eino Leino’s “Helsinki in the Mist” (“Helsinki sumussa”; 1899). Conversely, few views over Helsinki have become as dear to me as the view from the “Birdsong Bridge” (“Linnunlaulun silta”), looking down at the railway running to the Central Station, a view which has become eternalized in the unforgettable finale of Mikko Rimmnen’s Pussikaljaromaani (“The Six-Pack Novel”; 2004).

21 Research on the literary city has traditionally concentrated mainly on how “the material realities of the city are registered in the novel” (Alter 2005: ix).
implied in structuring worlds.\footnote{22 Nelson Goodman uses city representations as one example of radical reordering of material. Goodman was not, however, primarily concerned with worldmaking in the context of literary studies; in \textit{Ways of worldmaking}, the philosopher was concerned more with music and paintings than with literature. For a more extensive application of Goodman’s theory to literary studies, see Nünning 2010; Nünning & Nünning 2010.} According to Goodman, worldmaking involves composition and decomposition, weighting, ordering, deletion and supplementation, and deformation – all processes by which the pre-existing material at hand is moulded into a new “world”.\footnote{23 “Radical reordering […] occurs in constructing a static image from the input on scanning a picture, or in building a unified and comprehensive image of an object or a city from temporally and spatially and qualitatively heterogeneous observations and other items of information” (Goodman 1978: 13).}

Echoing Goodman, one can say that in order to “make” an imagined city world, a text will draw on a whole variety of pre-existing cities, and recycle prefiguring material as the plot evolves. In the case of the literary city of Helsinki in a particular prose text, the narration will bring at least some of the following elements to bear in its “citymaking”: architectural and historical fragments from the “actual” city of Helsinki; a wide range of images belonging to other literary cities (such as Paris, London, or St. Petersburg); conventions of genre and period; and archetypal images of the city. Moulded by the processes delineated by Goodman, the imagined city of Helsinki in literature appears, then, as a variety of very different possible cities, with their own particular value systems. It is these cities that are at the focus of this dissertation.\footnote{24 These literary cities carrying the name of Helsinki, of course, resemble the historical and geographically locatable city of Helsinki in many respects. This resemblance can be accounted for by the “principle of minimal departure”, which postulates that a reader conceives of a possible world in fiction to be only minimally deviating from the actual world (see Ryan 1991, 2005). To a certain degree, the question concerning the relation between literary city and “actual” city is similar to the question of “Transworld Identity” in possible worlds theory, which relates to versions of the same individual character appearing in different worlds (Napoleon winning Waterloo in a historical novel) (see Dannenberg 2008: 55–62).} In other words, the object of this study is primarily the cityworlds bearing the name of Helsinki configured in the selected prose texts. In order to analyse these, it is evidently important to include a whole range of city myths, discourses, genre and period conventions, as well as historical and geographical data prefiguring these configurations.

The complex relation between the literary city and the “actual”, geographically locatable city is one of the reasons why no existing maps of the historical city of Helsinki during this period are included in this study. To facilitate the readability for readers unacquainted with Helsinki, two tailor-made maps of the Helsinki peninsula were added. These provide information on places and districts that are thematized in literature in this period, and are not intended as scientific maps of historical Helsinki. The first map,
depicting Helsinki around 1900, can be found on page 66, immediately preceding Chapter 3. The second map, depicting Helsinki around 1930, can be found on page 194, preceding Chapter 6.

1.5 DISSERTATION OUTLINE

This dissertation draws on two theoretical frameworks: on the one hand, the large amount of existing research in the field of literary studies, and on the other hand, theoretical concepts provided by humanistic and critical geography, as well as urban studies. The image of the city has been extensively studied in literary studies, which form a first important framework for my analysis (see Pike 1981; Wirth-Nesher 1996; Lehan 1998; Keunen 1999; Alter 2005). In addition to the image of the city in literature – and firmly intertwined with it – there is also the experience of the city as a personally lived “place”, rather than an abstract “space” (see below, 2.3.). For the analysis of the way in which literary characters experience the city in literature, conceptual frameworks from geographical and urban studies can provide a number of important complementary insights. New developments within humanistic, social and critical geography, which gathered pace in the 1980s, and spilled over into other disciplines, have increasingly drawn attention to the experience of space, as well as to the dimensions of power, fear and surveillance attached to urban public space (Tuan 1974; Lefebvre 1974/1991; Relph 1976; Tani 1995; Mitchell 2003). Who is allowed to use urban public space, and by what right? An important theoretical perspective in this respect is that of gender and space, which has inspired an extensive literature on the flâneuse (see Wilson 1992; Davidoff 2003; D'Souza & McDonough 2008) and a discussion of the geographies of fear in public space (Koskela 2004, 2009). The city is not only experienced by lonely, male city walkers – a class of urban dwellers that have arguably received disproportionate attention in literary studies of the city. It is also the environment in which women, as well as representatives of minorities or the lower classes, live and move about.

In the theoretical chapter “Ways of Writing and Reading the City”, I will start out by introducing the theoretical perspectives on the city in literature most relevant for this study. The study of the city in literature has been strongly informed by taxonomies of genre and period. A highly canonized view of the development of city images in Western literature has come into being, structured around particular Western capitals of modernity and postmodernity such as Paris, London, and Los Angeles, with considerable room given to St. Petersburg, Berlin, and New York. I will focus on two approaches that I have found to be particularly pervasive in descriptions of the evolution of literary city experiences. These are, firstly, the use of polarizing dichotomies (alienation–belonging, for example), and secondly, the emphasis on the city’s inherent ambiguity and contradictory nature.
(section 2.1.). The evaluation of existing writings on the city in literature will be complemented by considering a set of metaphors or, more precisely, “metaphorizations” that are repeatedly drawn upon to describe the city in literature and literary studies, as well as in urban studies, philosophy and critical geography. Examples of such metaphorizations are the city as body, as labyrinth and as text, amongst many others (section 2.2.).

The most important research subject in the present dissertation, however, is not so much the city itself, or even images of the city, but the experience of the city in literary texts. This interest in subjectively lived urban space is in part inspired by developments in humanistic as well as critical geography, which have had a considerable impact on how the city has been examined in the humanities. The analysis of city experiences in literature will require a methodology or what one might call a poetics of movement, which will be provided in the final part of the theoretical chapter. Such a tentative poetics of movement, drawing on the thinking of Charles Baudelaire and Walter Benjamin, but also on more recent thinkers such as Michel de Certeau and others, will serve as a theoretical framework with which to investigate urban trajectories through space and narrative.

The analysis of the selected corpus is divided into five chapters, loosely following a chronological order, and structured thematically. The first three chapters focus on literature from the turn of the century, extending into the 1910s, while the fourth and fifth analysis chapters analyse experiences of the city in novels published in the 1920s and the 1930s. In every chapter, one key text will be used as a window from which to approach particular thematics. Using a key text to approach the material provides the opportunity to contextualize one author and text in more detail, and to present a more thorough reading of at least one particular text than otherwise would have been possible. In the course of the respective chapters, additional relevant primary texts will be linked to the themes taken up in discussing the key text.

The third chapter (and the first analysis chapter), entitled “The Shock of Arrival”, traces the first experiences of literary Helsinki in Finnish prose texts, focusing on arrival in the city – one of the most potent topoi used in literature in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries (see Keunen 1999: 359). The key text in this chapter is Juhani Aho’s novella, Helsinkiin (“To Helsinki”; 1889), which will be complemented by a comparison with other turn-of-the-century Finnish prose texts featuring the arrival of a provincial protagonist in the capital. A central theoretical framework in this chapter is the character typology of the young man/woman from the provinces (drawing on Trilling 1948 and Chanda 1981).

The fourth chapter, entitled “The Fateful Esplanade”, starts out with an analysis of what is in effect a Helsinki microcosm: the Esplanade, situated in central Helsinki. The chapter studies literary experiences and images connected to the Esplanade, concentrating on representations of walking and moving through urban public space. It pays close attention to the stratification of urban public space, in particular from the perspective of
gendered space, taking into account the notions of socially, politically and linguistically divided space. The theoretical findings provided by recent research on the figures of the *flâneur* and the *flâneuse* will be of particular importance. The key novel in this chapter is Eino Leino’s *Jaana Rönty* ("Jaana Rönty"; 1907).

While the third chapter examines the first experiences of people moving to the capital, and the fourth chapter follows the footsteps of literary characters roaming the streets of Helsinki, Chapter 5, “Experiences of a Metropolis in Motion”, analyses how developments in the built environment have repercussions on literary characters’ experiences. This chapter, in which Arvid Järnefelt’s *Veneh’ojalaiset* (“The Family Veneh’oja”; 1909) will be treated as a key novel, examines how literary Helsinki appears as a rapidly transforming city, in which the accelerating processes of modernity become responsible not only for (re)generating, but also for erasing parts of the cityscape. In the volatile socio-political context of early-twentieth century Helsinki, city representations are imbued with a sense of impending doom, and references to apocalyptic discourse are rife. The millenarian undercurrents evident in a number of texts in this period can be linked to the realist-naturalist, and in some cases symbolist, aesthetics which turn-of-the-century authors draw on. This also is a time, however, in which highly positive attributes are associated with the city, and a positive sense of attachment towards Helsinki becomes increasingly visible, in sharp opposition to the dysphoric experience of the city that otherwise tends to dominate late nineteenth and early twentieth century literature. Gradually, characters succeed in creating a home in the city, and move towards a sense of belonging to their immediate surroundings. The conceptual framework used in this chapter belongs largely to the domain of comparative literary studies on the city in literature, mostly in the field of genre and period studies. In order to conceptualize characters’ experiences of belonging and alienation, I draw on Edward Relph’s concepts of alienation and belonging (Relph 1976).

The sixth chapter, entitled “Aestheticizing the City”, discusses the internalization and aestheticization of the city experience in Finnish literature from the late 1920s and 1930s. I will use Mika Waltari’s cult novel *Suuri illusioni* ("The Great Illusion"; 1928) to approach these themes, and to analyse how, during these years, the city experience was also described through new stylistic features and techniques. In addition to *Suuri illusioni*, one other novel obtains a more privileged position in this chapter: Helvi Hämäläinen’s *Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä* (“A Respectable Tragedy”; 1941).

The seventh and final chapter, “Towards the Margins”, examines how, in particular during the 1930s, but starting in the late 1910s, a parallel writing on the city develops, based not so much on the symbolic centre of Helsinki with its Esplanade, its banks and cafés, but situated in the suburbs, in working-class courtyards, or at the seashore; in other words, at the fringes of the city. The key novel in this chapter is Joel Lehtonen’s *Henkien taistelu*
Introduction

(“Battle of the Spirits”; 1933). The city in these texts appears in a variety of new guises, from the deformed city of the imaginary suburb “Krokelby” to the late naturalistic yet surprisingly homely working-class suburbs in prose texts focusing on Helsinki working-class districts such as Sörnäinen and Vallila. Particular attention will be given to how characters’ movement through the city is described as cumbersome and inhibited by factors related to the characters’ social (and/or gendered) background. Even though the novels discussed in this chapter repeatedly describe (sub)urban spatial environments and particular characters’ movement through the city in terms of deformity, the socially marginalized protagonists in these prose texts are often profoundly at home in the city, and express feelings of strong attachment, in particular in relation to their local neighbourhoods.

1.6 A SHORT HISTORY OF HELSINKI

As noted above (1.1.), Helsinki is often characterized as young, immature, and lacking in history. Historically speaking, however, Helsinki is centuries old: the city was founded by the Swedish king Gustav Vasa in 1550 on a site that showed traces of earlier medieval occupation. Writings on the history of Helsinki, in particular in relation to the first three centuries of its history, tend to stress the artificiality of the city’s development and the extent to which Helsinki was passively subject to the often unrealistic plans of far-away rulers. There is certainly reason for such a reading of Helsinki’s early history. When the city was founded, burghers from other, well-established towns were forced to move to the new settlement by royal decree. And when the chosen site proved to be impracticable, a new decree, in 1640, ordered the site of the town to be transferred southwards (Hietala & Helminen 2009). The two other major decisions in Helsinki’s history before Finland’s independence (1917) were equally made in foreign capitals: the choice of Helsinki as the site for the largest maritime fortification of the Nordic countries in 1784, and the decision to give Helsinki the status of capital of Finland in 1812 (Klinge & Kolbe 1999: 16–22; Bell & Hietala 2002: 21). There is, in other words, certainly some truth in calling Helsinki the “offspring of not only the king that founded it but also of a queen and two emperors”, a capital that came into being as “the result of the innovative actions of four sovereigns of Finland, King Gustavus I and Queen Christian of Sweden and the Tsars Alexander I and Nicholas I of Russia” (Bell & Hietala 2002: 19). It is good to bear in mind, however, that accentuating the artificiality and “foreignness” of Helsinki has been part of a rhetoric that saw urbanity in

25 See also Zacharias Topelius, who states that in comparison with Turku, Helsinki “does not have any history” (Topelius 1845/2003: 11), and the foreword to Helsinki, a Literary Companion, which begins with the words “Helsinki is a young city” (Hawkins & Lehtonen 2000: 6). See also Marja-Liisa Rönkkö on the myth of Helsinki’s youth (1992: 160).
general and Helsinki in particular as not representative of Finland and its population, and that described the Finnish capital as an alien organism imposed on unwilling surroundings. This rhetoric can be singled out as one of the reasons why Helsinki (and its literature) has been relegated to a marginal position in Finnish literary and cultural studies for much of the twentieth century.

After what has become known as the “Finnish War” between Russian and Sweden (1808–1809), a conflict that was part of the Napoleonic wars, Finland was incorporated into the Russian Empire as a semi-autonomous Grand Duchy (1809). In part for political and military reasons, but also as a result of intensive lobbying by Helsinki burghers, the Russian Czar decided to transfer the Finnish capital from Turku (in Swedish: Åbo) to Helsinki (Helsingfors) in 1812 (see Blomstedt 1963). New plans were drawn up to transform the small commercial centre in the shadow of the naval fortress Viapori into a worthy capital. In the following decades, Helsinki was provided with a grandiose urban layout and magnificent buildings, according to designs drawn up by Johan Albrecht Ehrenström and the German-born architect Carl Ludvig Engel.26 In 1828, following a devastating fire in Turku, the university was also transferred to Helsinki. Helsinki’s population grew explosively in the century following 1812, making it one of the fastest-growing European cities. The population spiralled from a mere 4,000 souls at the beginning of the century to almost 30,000 in 1870, 93,000 in 1905, and more than 150,000 in 1920 (see Palmgren 1989: 22, 38).

In the second half of the nineteenth century, Helsinki not only grew in numerical terms, it also modernized at a fast pace. Technological innovations included the application of gas lighting in 1860 and rail traffic, first by horse-drawn trams, and from 1901 by electric trams (Bell & Hietala 2002: 96; see also Tommila & Hirn 1980). Connections between Helsinki and the Finnish hinterland, as well as with cities abroad, were improved considerably: Helsinki was linked by train to Hämeenlinna in 1862 and to St. Petersburg in 1870, and the movement of people to the capital was enhanced by the freedom of trade and migration, legislated in 1879 (see Bell & Hietala 2002: 71; Kervanto-Nevanlinna 2003a: 342).

Politically, life in Helsinki in the period 1890–1918 was dominated by three struggles. First, there was the struggle of the Finnish-speaking majority of the country to translate numerical dominance into political, cultural and economic capital at the expense of the Swedish-speaking minority. Helsinki had been predominantly Swedish-speaking, but as its population grew, the balance gradually tipped in favour of the Finnish-speaking population. Around 1900, Finnish- and Swedish-speakers had become equal in numbers, although Swedish-speakers continued to dominate cultural, political and

26 The sheer size of the Senate Square gives an illustrative indication of the enormous scale of the transformations Helsinki underwent: the Square “was made spacious enough for an audience twenty times larger than the 4,000 people then inhabiting Helsinki” (Bell & Hietala 2002: 25).
Introduction

Economic life. In addition to the language question, there was also the struggle of the Finnish people to uphold the nation’s constitutional rights in the face of increasing Russian oppression; and third, there were the increasing clashes of interests between the organizing working classes and the entrenching bourgeoisie.

In Russo-Finnish relations, two periods of increased tension can be singled out, during which the Russian authorities tightened their grip on Finnish society. The first of these, which has become known as the “Frost Years” (“Routavuodet”) or even the “cursed years” (Aspelin-Haapkylä 1980), was set in 1899–1905, and was almost immediately followed by the second period, which constitutes the decade leading up to Finnish independence (1908–1917). The starting point of the first period of oppression was the February Manifesto, issued in 1899 by Nikolai II, Czar of the Russian Empire and ruler of Finland (see Laati 1955: 115–128). The aim of the Manifesto was to draw Finland more firmly within the administration of the Russian Empire. Political opponents were exiled, political gatherings and newspapers were banned; institutions such as the Finnish army, the Finnish customs, postal and money services were dismantled, and measures were taken to strengthen the position of Russian as an official language. The February Manifesto and the oppression it embodied caused a shock wave throughout Finnish society. The first literary reaction to the Manifesto, a reaction which can be considered programmatic, was the poem “Helsinki sumussa” (“Helsinki in the Mist”) by Eino Leino, an author whose prose literature will be discussed in depth. “Helsinki sumussa” was published in the newspaper Päivälehti (“Daily Paper”) on 17 February 1899, only two days after the February Manifesto was issued. It was the first time Leino would choose Helsinki as a literary setting (Larmola 2000: 21). In the poem, the monumental heart of Helsinki, centred upon the Senate Square, is gradually covered by a menacing mist, and a number of potent images are attached to the capital. As the political centre of the country, Helsinki becomes a metaphor for the nation as a whole, and an affliction at the heart of the city functions as a symbol of the nation’s social and political sickness. But in Leino’s poem, the cityscape is more than just a representation of the powers that brought it into being; it becomes also the expression of the mood of the city’s inhabitants, presenting a troubled face when the citizens feel perturbed.

If Nikolai II’s February Manifesto was the starting point for a dramatically heightened tension in Finland at large and in Helsinki in particular, the following pivotal moment in Helsinki’s history was constituted by the shooting of Finland’s Russian Governor-General Bobrikov. The assassination was carried out on the staircase of the Finnish Senate, at the very site of the symbolically charged environment described in Leino’s poem. By a stroke of strange coincidence, the day on which these shots were fired happened to be the day James Joyce would choose for the setting of Ulysses: 16 June 1904. The events in Helsinki are actually referred to in Joyce’s Ulysses.
The importance of this day as a turning point in Helsinki's history and for the (literary) discourse on the city may well be illustrated by the fact that Kjell Westö puts the opening scene of his acclaimed Helsinki novel Där vi en gång gått (“Where we once walked”; 2006), on the day of the first anniversary of Bobrikov’s murder.

However shocking and symbolic the murder at the Senate may have been, it was no more than a beginning. The tension of the Frost Years, running up to this murder, culminated in events that were to pass during the following years. In 1905, the Russian Empire, Finland included, was struck by revolution and a general strike. The Great Strike and the changes in its wake – universal suffrage, amongst others – would transform Finland’s power structures irreversibly (see Ruutu 1980; Palmgren 1989; Kujala 2003). In Finnish literature and the media, it gave rise to a wave of pamphlets, articles, short stories, poems and novels (see Haapala et al. 2009). The Great Strike made the deep socio-political division in Finnish society and within Helsinki painfully visible. Bourgeois forces and the working classes had different interests at stake and different goals in mind and in the absence of normal law enforcement during these tense days, both sides organized their own civil guards (Laati 1955: 129–137).

In Helsinki, a violent aftershock of the Great Strike was felt in 1906, when the Russian garrison at Helsinki’s fortress islands of Viapori revolted (see Jussila 1979: 112–147; Salomaa 1965). The revolt created a particularly tense and acute situation for the Helsinki citizens. There was the possibility that the Russian rebels would shell the city to force it to join the rebellion, and there was no consensus within the Finnish capital as to what course should be taken. The Red Guard favoured joining the rebellion, while the Civil Guard did not believe in the chances of success. Blood was shed during a confrontation at Hakaniemi, which started when tram traffic was obstructed by supporters of the rebellious fortress; several people were killed in the ensuing gun fight between Red Guards and Russian sailors and the bourgeois Civil Guard (Laati 1955: 135).

The Russian authorities strengthened their grip soon after the Great Strike, and it was as a country firmly within the fold of the Russian Empire that Finland entered the First World War. The Russian military and navy maintained considerable strength in the Finnish capital, where fortification works were carried out. During most of the war, Helsinki remained far removed from the theatres of war. In November 1917, and in part as a consequence of the Russian February and October revolutions and the successive disintegration of the Russian Empire, Finland declared independence. The various parties and movements within Finland were

---

27 In Finnish literature, overt references to Bobrikov’s murder were few and in between in the years that followed, partly due to Russian censorship. A comprehensive study on the history of censorship in Finland is not yet available; for more on Russian censorship in Finland at the turn of the twentieth century, see Leino-Kaukiainen 1984.
Introduction

profoundly at odds as to what direction should be taken, and Civil War broke out in January 1918. Helsinki was rapidly occupied by the Red Guard, while bourgeois (“White”) forces rallying around General (future Marshall) Mannerheim found a stronghold in the north-western coastal area of Ostrobothnia, and a front line north of the city of Tampere came into being. The heaviest urban fighting took place in and around the Red stronghold of Tampere. In comparison, Helsinki suffered relatively lightly when it was taken on 12–13 April by the advancing German army and navy – the Germans had joined the war at the side of the White Army in March 1918. The following day, a Victors’ parade was staged by the German Army in the centre of Helsinki (see Viljanen 1955: 191–206). The Civil War ended on 16 May 1918, but the events had inflicted deep wounds that would affect Finnish society for decades to come. In the Finnish capital, the short-lived reign of the Reds, when masters and servants saw their roles reversed, had instilled the upper classes with bitter resentment: Eino Leino’s non-fiction account of these days documents this resentment with particular vivacity (Leino 1918/1929; see also Koskela 1999a: 226). As elsewhere in the country, “Reds” were imprisoned in inhuman conditions awaiting their trial. In Helsinki, the fortress of Viapori, renamed Suomenlinna, was turned into a provisional prison camp (Klinge & Kolbe 1999: 94–95).

After independence, Helsinki continued its growth and development as an industrial centre. In 1920, Helsinki had numbered more than 150,000 inhabitants; by 1930, the population had grown to 205,000, and in 1939, to 260,000 (City of Helsinki Urban Facts 2012: 6). In fifty years’ time, the population had multiplied five-fold. Helsinki also expanded in terms of geographical size and in built environment: new areas were added to the city, and new building blocks rose in the south of the Helsinki peninsula (Punavuori, Ullanlinna), in the north-west (Töölö), as well as in the expanding working-class districts to the north-east of the historical centre (Vallila, Käpylä) (Kervanto-Nevanlinna 2002: 140). The construction of the city district Töölö, in particular, can be considered as an architectural symbol of a new, independent Finland, and also as representative of a new class (the expanding middle classes), new aesthetics (from the 1930s on, functionalism) and a new urban lifestyle (see Saarikangas 2002: 166–201). In the course of the 1920s and 1930s, the nature of the city centre changed, and the historical centre became more and more an administrative area with an increasing concentration of offices (Kervanto-Nevanlinna 2002: 140). Helsinki in the 1920s was also a capital gearing to new standards of velocity:

28 In the beginning of 2012, Helsinki numbered close to 600,000 inhabitants (City of Helsinki Urban Facts 2012: 5).

29 The architectural innovations visible during the 1920s and 1930s in the district of Töölö, but also in working-class districts such Vallila and Käpylä, were to a considerable degree rooted in the desire to modernize the Finnish home, which was in turn related to the changing role of women in an urbanizing society (see Bell & Hietala 2002: 208; Saarikangas 2002).
the number of private cars almost trebled from 1,120 in 1925 to 3,299 in 1928 (Bell & Hietala 2002: 206).

One way to portray the developments within Helsinki during the decades following independence is to describe these years as a period of increasing homogenization. The ethnic and linguistic diversity that had characterized the city for centuries gradually disappeared, in part because of the continuous influx of Finnish speakers from inner Finland (see Bell & Hietala 2002: 141). In 1880, 12% of Helsinki's inhabitants had been born outside Finland (Tilastollinen päätoimisto 1909: 63); in 1910, the percentage of foreigners living in Helsinki had dropped to 6.5%, and steadily declined throughout the twentieth century. By the early 1990s, only 1% of the Helsinki population was foreign (Rönkkö 1992: 170). Increasing homogenization was also visible in the cultural and literary field during the 1920s and 1930s, years that witnessed a “strong orientation towards nationalism and national culture” (Marioniemi 1992: 135). Only a small minority of Helsinki's population could uphold the attitude (or the pose) cultivated by the literary movement of the Torch Bearers, with their famous call to “open the windows to Europe” (see Chapter 6).

In terms of national politics, the 1920s and 1930s were, as elsewhere in Europe, dominated by radicalization. From the very start, right-wing forces in independent Finland had their doubts about parliamentary democracy, and the Civil War had greatly exacerbated the existing divisions in Finnish society, although measures were taken to address the plight of the poor, crofters, in particular (see Hentilä 1995/1999: 121–125). The fact that many on the political right were oriented towards Germany during these years, and the understandable suspicion with which the political developments in the Soviet Union were eyed in Finland, did little to diffuse socio-political tensions. Towards the end of the 1920s, a radical right-wing faction emerged, the so-called Lapua movement, modelled on German and Italian examples. The radicalization associated with the Lapua movement resulted in a spike in political violence at the turn of the 1930s (Siipi 1962: 334). The year 1930, in particular, saw an increasingly tense political atmosphere in Helsinki when the Lapua movement staged the “Farmers' March” in Helsinki, modelled on the March on Rome that brought Mussolini into power (Lavery 2006: 98).

In terms of the experience of Helsinki’s public space, one of the most significant legislative measures taken during these years was Prohibition. In Finland, Prohibition was inaugurated in 1919 and abolished in 1932. A substantial number of bars and restaurants were closed, and liquor runners and illegal distilleries held the public's imagination and kept the Helsinki police department busy (Peltonen 1992). During these years, the production,

30 During the 1990s and the 2000s, the number of non-Finnish residents increased considerably: in 2011, 8% of the population of Helsinki did not have Finnish nationality (City of Helsinki Urban Facts 2012: 13).
smuggling and consumption of illegal alcohol spiralled out of control, as did occurrences of alcohol-related crime (see Määttä 2007).

The 1930s was a decade of further radicalization, need and poverty, as Finland and its capital were hit by the Great Depression. Politically, however, the situation stabilized somewhat: the political right gained a victory when the Communist party was outlawed in 1930 (Carsten 1967/1982: 162), and not much later, after threatening to destabilize the country once more, the Lapua movement was outlawed without bloodshed (Hentilä 1995/1999: 163). The Great Depression hit Finland hardest in the early years of the 1930s, after which the economy recovered gradually. Helsinki continued building, expanding and modernizing, and an abundance of coffee table books, tourist guides and jubilant films (for Helsinki movies see Heiskanen & Santakari 2004: 11–61) were published to advertise the beauty of the young nation’s capital. In many respects, the 1940s Summer Olympics that were to be hosted by Helsinki were designed to be the crowning ceremony for the Finnish capital. Several elegant venues had been completed by late 1939. It was not to be: on 30 November 1939, the Soviet Union opened hostilities, and Helsinki was subjected to an air raid. The Finnish capital was at war.
2 WAYS OF WRITING AND READING THE CITY

the city as a phenomenon – 
an outrage, a spectacle, 
an emblem of human ingenuity 
that seems frankly superhuman 
(Joyce Carol Oates 1981: 18)

2.1 PERSPECTIVES ON THE CITY IN LITERATURE

Within Western history, the city has been a potent image for as long as written literature has existed. From the very first preserved texts, one can find city images in all their ambiguous complexity: as nodes of creative and destructive energy, as beacons of utopian possibility and of moral warning. As Burton Pike points out, “[w]e unthinkingly consider this phenomenon modern, but it goes back to early epic and mythic thought. We cannot imagine *Gilgamesh*, the Bible, the *Iliad*, or the *Aeneid*, without their cities, which contain so much of their energy and radiate so much of their meaning” (Pike 1981: 3). In the forms of the metropolis and the capital, in particular, the city has become a powerful artefact of the human cultural imagination, endowed with complex powers of representation, and evoking a plethora of images. In the history of the novel, cities have played a particularly crucial role (Bradbury 1976/1986: 99), and the development of literary movements such as realism, naturalism, symbolism and modernism is intimately intertwined with the history of the cities that helped shape them (see Bradbury 1976/1986; Williams 1985; Wilson 1995: 153; Hirsh 2004; Brooks 2005: 131).

In the course of the last half century, a vast body of international research on literary cities has come into being. Volter Klotz’s seminal work *Die Erzählte Stadt* (1969), which starts out with the cities of Alain-René Lesage and Daniel Defoe, and ends with Andrei Bely, John Dos Passos and Alfred Döblin, is but the first in a number of influential diachronic studies tracing the evolution of city representations in Western literature. In *The Image of the City in Modern Literature* (1981), Burton Pike structures the development of city images in terms of a development from static cities to cities in flux, beginning with the city of ancient epic, and ending with “unreal” cities such as Los Angeles in post-war literature. Richard Lehan’s highly influential *The City in Literature* (1998) sketches the well-established and highly canonized evolution of city literature in the Western tradition.
(European and American literature) as marked by a comparable shift from romanticism to realism and naturalism, advancing through symbolism to reach its zenith in the high modernist texts of writers such as James Joyce and Virginia Woolf, and further advancing into postmodern prose. It is a development which is eloquently summed up in the following passage:

The Enlightenment depicted the city as a powerful grid superimposed upon the natural, and the romantics questioned what that grid repressed: the naturalists, who shared the romantics’ doubt, depicted the city as an energy system and an alienating mechanism that inculcated a degenerative process by creating a diseased centre outside of nature. (Lehan 1998: 70)

Bart Keunen’s *De verbeelding van de grootstad* (“Imagining the Metropolis”; 2000) and Robert Alter’s *Imagined Cities* (2005) follow similar linear models, moving from Baudelaire to Döblin and on to the postmodern novel in the case of Keunen, and from Flaubert and Dickens to Bely, Woolf, Joyce and Kafka, in the case of Alter. The periodical typology of highly canonized and hegemonic literary traditions cannot, however, be applied to a peripheral literary tradition such as the Finnish one without some caveats: not all thematic preoccupations, repertoires of stylistic features, or literary motifs from the canonized tradition will have their immediate equivalents in Finnish literature, and some aspects specific to culture, to the country’s socio-political situation in this period, and also to language, will have to be taken into account. This study, then, illustrates the rewards as well as the limitations of a comparative literary studies approach towards city images in a peripheral context.

In addition to diachronic studies, a plethora of studies on city representations in the work of particular authors (such as George Gissing in Goode 1978/1979), cities (Paris in Citron 1961 and Stierle 1993/2001; St. Petersburg in Pesonen 1987; New York in Patell & Waterman 2010) and historical or literary periods (Prendergast 1992; Den Tandt 1998; Nead 2000; Hirsh 2004; Freeman 2007; Philips 2007), or structured around a thematically, periodically or geographically defined selected corpus (see Jaye & Watts 1981; Wirth-Nesher 1996; Rotella 1998; Laplace & Tabuteau 2003) have appeared. Studies such as these add a number of important insights, in particular in relation to peripheral and medium-sized cities, the likes of Barcelona (Resina 2003); Copenhagen (Madsen 2001); Ostend (Sintobin & Rymenants 2007); Stockholm (Borg 2011), that have often been neglected by more teleological and diachronic studies.

In most, if not all, of the studies mentioned above, a strong emphasis on historical periods and literary movements is immediately apparent. The representation of cities in literature has always been closely related to the
genre and period conventions in which any given literary text is conceived: particular historical periods give rise to specific ways of seeing and experiencing the city, and these in turn result in particular literary paradigms. As Cedric Whitman points out, it does not really matter whether Homer ever saw Troy, since he would have had to describe it as he would have any other Bronze Age city, on the basis of the generic conventions available to him (Whitman 1958: 27; see also Pike 1981: 11). Conventions of genre and period will be of considerable importance for the present study: in the period 1890–1940, the realist, naturalist and symbolist movements, in particular, exhibited particular visions of the urban experience that were highly influential on the Finnish literature of Helsinki.

2.1.1 DICHTOMIES

While the overview above might suggest that the development of city images tends to happen linearly, most of the aforementioned comparative and diachronic studies are to a greater or lesser extent structured on the basis of polarizations. Generally speaking, there is a strong tendency to describe evolutions of literary representations of the city as a swinging back and forth, like a pendulum, between dichotomies: alienation and belonging, community and individual, enchantment and disenchantment, euphoria and dysphoria, etc.31 Richard Lehan, in his epilogue to The City in Literature, criticizes earlier studies on the city in literature (by Raymond Williams, Burton Pike, William Sharpe and Hana Wirth-Nesher) for drawing on such polarizations, and for treating “the city as a matter of dichotomy: country versus city, static city versus city of flux, or as private versus public space” (Lehan 1998: 289). But upon close inspection, it is exactly by way of dichotomies that Lehan’s own study is structured, and, one should add, very convincingly so. The City in Literature traces the development of literary representations of the city as a continuous oscillation between the opposing poles of Enlightenment ideas, corroborated by Christianity, linear thinking, and the power of reason, and on the other hand a Dionysian will to power, grounded in mythological and cyclical movements that underlie the city grid (see, for example, Lehan 1998: 289).

31 For the oscillation between enchantment and disenchantment, see Keunen 2011. Overviews of city representations in literature are informed by a whole range of dichotomies: Peter Keating, for example, in his article “The Metropolis in Literature” (1984) structures literary representations of the city with the help of two competing traditions, the one defined by a comprehensive, the other by an internalized view. The comprehensive view, which typically focuses on the masses rather than on the individual, is visible in the work of authors such as Dickens, Zola, Gissing and Wells, while the psychological or internalized view is typical of literature by James, Woolf and Joyce. Keating’s study focuses, as so often, on high modernist London, Paris, New York, Dublin and Berlin, but his distinction between an internalized and comprehensive view allows for a broader and less exclusive taxonomy of urban literature.
In my analysis of Helsinki novels, I avoid putting too much emphasis on strict polarizations, and favour, instead, an understanding of the city as fundamentally ambiguous. Since several of the texts with which this study is concerned are informed by dichotomies, however, these will be addressed in the following in so far as they are relevant for literature of the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries.

In many respects, one of the founding polarizations from which to approach the city has been the dichotomy country-city. It is a binary opposition that is at least as old as Horace, and that has provided the title and subject matter of an early ground-breaking study of the literary city, Raymond Williams’s seminal *The Country and the City* (1973). While a number of insights from Williams’s work have undiminished relevance, in particular in the context of English literary studies, the dichotomy on which this work is based has, as Burton Pike claims, drawn attention away from the “enormous power the image of the city has exercised on the human imagination by itself, independently from that tradition” (Pike 1981: xiii–xiv). It is a dichotomy which has a major place in thinking on the city in Finnish literature (see Laitinen 1973), but with which the present dissertation is not concerned, and which, I believe, again following Pike, belongs more to the tradition of the pastoral than to the study of the literary city proper (ibid.).

More pervasive, and much more relevant for the present study, are the founding opposites of Babylon and Jerusalem. In Western literature, the moral implications of this dichotomy grounded in Biblical references to the city have had a particularly strong resonance (see Sharpe 1990: 1; Pike 1981: 5–8). In this tradition, which can be traced all the way back to Saint Augustine, the image of the city oscillates between views of the city as utopia, and of it as the ultimate spatial embodiment of all evil. It is an image that pervades to some degree all writing on the Western city since Augustine, including the Finnish literary texts in the period discussed here (1889–1941). One example from Finnish literature suffices here, but similar examples can be multiplied at will. When, in Hilda Tihlän’s little-known novel *Leeni* (“Leeni”; 1907), the young eponymous protagonist wishes to move to Helsinki, her grandparents take opposing positions, the grandmother describing the capital as a wolf’s lair and a cesspit of sin, while the
grandfather emphasizes that it is a city with hundreds of priests and tens of churches (Tihlä 1907: 54–55, 87). When Leeni moves to Helsinki, she does eventually succumb to the dangers of the city, following the prevailing genre conventions that will be discussed at length in the analysis of Jaana Rönty (1907) in the chapter “The Fateful Esplanade”.

Biblical images of the city in literature often form a means of expressing the intertwined manifestations of utopian hopes and dystopian anxieties, everyday realities and hoped-for futures which all come together in the complex urban experience. Even in profoundly pessimistic narratives, both world views of this polarizing dichotomy can often be found – one as possibility, the other as fictional reality. Most importantly, the pervasiveness of Biblical images of the city should not obscure the fact that the polarization between Babel and (New) Jerusalem is but one of the potential dichotomies structuring the experience of the city.35 The temple was only one of the three institutions that have been traditionally described as essential to the city, the other two being the market and the fortress (see Lehan 1998: 13), and the city always had a number of other important functions.36 The positive image of the city as a centre of learning, for example, gained strength during the Middle Ages, in part thanks to the founding of universities in important cities, and this was in spite of the pessimistic view of the city which continued to be prominent in this period (Pleij 2009: 128–131). From 1828 until Finnish independence (1917), Helsinki was the location of the only university in the country, and the double image of seat of learning and cesspit of vice appears, in particular, in the literary genre of the student novel (see Chapter 3).

2.1.2 CITY AMBIGUITY

Ultimately, it is not necessary to resolve the tension between city dichotomies or to try to impose on one particular city in literary (or other) representations one of the poles of a spectrum it will necessarily represent as a whole.37 The

35 See also Vartiainen’s critical comments on how this dichotomy structures Preston & Simpson-Housley’s Writing the City. Eden, Babylon and the New Jerusalem (1994; Vartiainen 1996). These critical remarks may in part also be extended to Tinkler-Villani’s Babylon or New Jerusalem? Perceptions of the City in Literature (2005).

36 In his second century AD Guide to Greece, Pausanias gives a short list of institutions that should not be lacking in a city. A temple is not mentioned, which reflects that in antiquity, the presence of a temple would be so self-evident as to be unnecessary to mention (Pausanias 1918; see also Lendering & Bosman 2010: 181). The list features government offices, a market place, but also water facilities, and significantly, sport facilities (a gymnasium) and a theatre.

37 See also Shields on the need to “escape from representations of the urban in the form of one pole of a dualism, whether urban-rural, public-private (Derrida), Official-Unofficial (Benjamin, de Certeau, Bakhtin), or State-Nomad (Deleuze and Guattari)” (Shields 1996: 245).
way in which literary experiences of the city evolve is constructed not so much as a straight line from one side of the spectrum to the other, but rather in the continuous and dialectic movement back and forth, from alienation to belonging, from paralysis to frantic movement, from worldly to godly, with neither of the extremes ever being separated from the equation. In this respect, it is good to bear in mind Saint Augustine’s words – in quite a different context – on the non-separable nature of the two opposing imaginary city communities: that of the city of God and the city of the world, Jerusalem and Babylon:

How can these two cities be distinguished? We cannot separate them from one another, can we? No, they are intermingled, and they continue like that from the very beginning of the human race until the end of the world. (Augustine 2001: 265)

Much of the enduring fascination of the city is directly linked to its very ambiguity and to the often confusing diversity it tends to harbour. This ambiguity, rather than the dichotomies which emanate from it, is arguably the key to understanding how city experiences are rendered in literature. In Burton Pike’s words, it is “the most powerful constant associated with the idea of the ‘city’ [...] , the inability of strong negative and positive impulses towards a totemic object to resolve themselves” (Pike 1981: xii). In urban history, urban studies and urban sociology, in particular, ambiguity and diversity have been seen as the key terms with which to understand the urban experience. Lewis Mumford, in his seminal work *The City in History*, saw ambivalence as a central part of the city’s nature from the very beginning. In his view, it was grounded in the moral, economic, political and also military attributes of the city; the city walls that encapsulated the accumulated wealth of the city’s hinterland also provided the “maximum amount of protection with the greatest incentives to aggression”, and the city offered an unseen degree of freedom in combination with rigid stratification

---

38 With its disorientating abundance of choices, its chance encounters and its sudden shifts in individual and collective fortunes, the city is by definition too complex, fleeting and fragmentary to be fully comprehensible. As a consequence, it forces upon its citizens on a daily basis the urge to make sense of the totalities, to read the city text and to compose their experiences into a readable whole. It may well be the case that it is also this fundamental urban condition, the city’s inherent challenge to comprehensibility, which is the reason why the city has been taken up with such vigour in literature (and other representations). Composing a sense-making story out of the fragments of urban life is indeed what every city dweller is doing on a daily basis, as Hana Wirth-Nesher argues (see Wirth-Nesher 1996: 10).
and control (Mumford 1961: 46–47). This ambivalence was further strengthened by the city’s added symbolic role as “a replica of heaven, a transformer of remote cosmic power into immediate operating institutions” (ibid.). David Harvey, speaking from a distinctly different perspective than either Pike’s or Mumford’s, has evoked the fleeting and seemingly contradictory characteristics of the city as follows:

It is a place of mystery, the site of the unexpected, full of agitations and ferments, of multiple liberties, opportunities, and alienations; of passions and repressions; of cosmopolitanism and extreme parochialisms; of violence, innovation, and reaction. (Harvey 1989b: 229)

But how, to continue with Harvey, are we to “penetrate the mystery, unravel the confusions, and grasp the contradictions?” (Harvey 1989b: 229–230) A critical geographer, Harvey turned repeatedly to metaphors and images, amongst others drawn from literary representations, to “penetrate the mystery” of the city. Similarly, looking for ways to grapple with the complexity of the American city in their article “Symbolic Representation and the Urban Milieu”, the sociologists Anselm Wohl and Richard Strauss turn to representations of the city, insisting that “[t]he complexity of the city calls for symbolic management” (Wohl & Strauss 1958: 523). In literature, as well as in literary studies, sociology, and urban studies, the “symbolic management” carried out to come to terms with the ambiguity and contradictory complexity of the city repeatedly takes the shape of a range of metaphors with which to approach the city. The metaphorizations most relevant for this study are discussed in the next section.

39 From a very different perspective, Henri Lefebvre emphasizes the ambiguous relation between protection and exploitation inherent to the city’s character (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 234).

40 See also James Donald, who points out that the city constitutes “an environment shaped by the interaction of practices, events and relationships so complex that they cannot easily be visualized. That may be why it is an environment imagined in metaphors (the diseased city, the city as machine), animated by myth, and peopled by symbols such as the flâneur, the prostitute, the migrant, the mugger” (1992: 457; see also Bianchini 2006: 15).
2.2 METAPHORIZATIONS OF THE CITY

As James Donald has pointed out, the city is “always already symbolized and metaphorized” (1999: 17; see also Lindner 2006: 36 ff.; Borg 2011: 34 ff.). In what follows, a number of city metaphorizations will be discussed: ways of describing that structure urban experiences of the city in literary representations of the city, but that can also be found in thinking on the city in the fields of urban history, critical sociology and literary studies. Some of these metaphorizations feed back into the more general assumptions on which the research questions in this dissertation are based (the city as text, for example), while others have immediate relevance to the literary city experiences discussed in the analysis chapters (the city as body, for example). What all these metaphorizations have in common is that they are cultural constructs. As Lakoff & Johnson have shown, metaphors are not simply figures of speech, rather, they constitute the very thought patterns we live by (see Lakoff and Johnson 1980: 3–6). In urban planning (see Pakarinen 2010: 52–63) as well as in urban sociology and geography, the city is more often than not described in metaphorical terms that draw extensively on images from literature.

If there is one persistent metaphor used to describe the city, it is that of a living, natural creature or an organic being, with its own life cycle, its birth, growth and death. Cities tend to be thought of as being born, as growing up, and as gradually dying or decaying; of having an organic life cycle, which can end in death. It is often death, and the dying processes of cities, that have exerted the greatest fascination. Lewis Mumford points out that the very first surviving image of the city depicts, in fact, its destruction (Mumford 1961: 51). Apocalyptic perspectives have potently informed the city writings of Dickens, Dostoevsky, and Joyce (see Alter 2005: 66, 81, 122), and particular cities have particular myths concerning their future destruction. Amongst these, the apocalyptic discourse on St. Petersburg is of particular interest for literary images of Helsinki in literature (for the literature of St. Petersburg, see Pike 1981: 90–92; Pesonen 1987, 2003). The end-of-days undercurrents at work in literary representations of the city will be one of the important themes discussed in Chapter 5, which focuses on experiences of the city during the first decades of the twentieth century, a period in which

---

I prefer the term “metaphorization” rather than “metaphor” to stress that what is denoted here is a continuous and unfinished process.

For a highly relevant enumeration of motifs related to the city in Western literature, see Daemmrich & Daemmrich 1987: 64–67. See also Tonsor 1988.

This is one of the most potent metaphors used to experience, describe and study cities, both in literary studies, urban studies, and urban planning. Studies like Jane Jacobs’s *Life and Death of Great American Cities* (1961) or Peter Ackroyd’s *London: The Biography* (2001) bear witness to the continuous appeal of its rhetoric.
accelerating modernization and the volatile socio-political situation result in an image of a city under threat.

In the case of Helsinki, the idea of the city as growing and maturing is most clearly visible in the persistent perception of the Finnish capital as a young, immature city. Rome was already eternal two millennia ago; Helsinki was still under age a century back. In writings on the Finnish capital, its age is repeatedly conceived to be that of an immature youngster. The Finland-Swedish author Runar Schildt (1912), for example, likens the city to a clumsy teenager and to a parvenu, and both V.A. Koskenniemi (1914) and Maila Talvio (1936) describe Helsinki as a Cinderella (see above, introduction). A well-known illustration published on the occasion of Finland’s participation in the Paris Exposition Universelle of 1889 shows Helsinki, in the allegorical figure of a young girl crowned by the St. Nicholas’ Church, arriving in Paris, which is depicted as a matron-like woman of middle age (Smeds 1996: 245). The image of Helsinki as a young girl was consecrated as the official image of Helsinki in the form of the statue Havis Amanda, the daughter of the Baltic, erected in 1908 between the central Market Square and the Esplanade. Helsinki’s image as sprung forth from the Baltic is reminiscent of the genesis of Venus, and like Venus, Helsinki in literature is repeatedly associated with a sea shell: Eino Leino described Helsinki, in his poem “Meren kaupunki” (“City of the Sea”; 1908), as a sea shell, as did Topelius, in the collection of stories Vinterqvällar (“Winter Evenings”; 1881/1882: 17). The image recurs also in Arvi Kivimaa’s novel Hetki ikuisen edessä (“A Moment before Eternity”; 1932: 73).

This identification of the city with a young girl is closely linked to two other central metaphors related to the city: the city as body, and the feminine nature of the city. The body is one of the most potent metaphors with which the city can be conceptualized. Especially from the eighteenth century on,

---

44 The idea of Helsinki as a clumsy teenager, mentioned first (as far as I am aware) by Runar Schildt, is taken up in literature in an explicit discussion concerning Helsinki’s characteristics in Erkki Kivijärvi’s Tiimalaisissa valuu hiekka (“Sand through the Hourglass”; 1935). The character comparing Helsinki to a teenager is called “Poet” (“Runoilija”), and can be identified with Eino Leino. Interestingly, the “Poet” paraphrases Schildt almost literally in Swedish (“nulikkavuosissaan, i slyngelåldern” ["in its teens"; Kivijärvi 1935: 233]).

45 For more on the heated debate surrounding the statute, see Kalha 2008.

46 The metaphor of the city (polis or city-state) as body is, of course, age-old, and was already prominent in antiquity (see Osborne 2011: 104–105). On the city and the body, see, for example, Grosz
when growing scientific knowledge of the body was combined with urban planning, planners began to speak of the city in corporal terms (Sennett 1994: 263). Terms such as “arteries” and “veins”, for example, came to be used when discussing and planning the canalization of urban traffic (ibid.: 264 ff.). In some texts, both literary and historical, the metaphor of the city-body is taken to extremes, attributing to the city a mouth, digesting systems, and intestines. It is a metaphorization which more often than not has economic implications, positing the city as a body feeding on the produce of the surrounding country or colonies. But the metaphor of the body is also used in a sense that equates the city with the body politic, attributing perceived diseases in society to the ailing organic structure of the city. This metaphorization allows for the concept of the city as a diseased body, or as an “excrescence” of the body politic. In Finnish realist and naturalist literature, the image of the city as a diseased and degenerative body feeding on its surroundings has severe consequences for how the urban environment is experienced by newcomers to the capital, as will be analysed in Chapter 3. It is a metaphorization which functions as the vehicle for social critique in turn-of-the-century Finnish novels, and can be used to render a profoundly misanthropic vision of society as a whole, most prominently in Joel Lehtonen’s grim satirical *Rakastunut rampa* (“A Cripple in Love”; 1922) and *Henkien taistelu* (“Battle of the Spirits”; 1933), novels that will be analysed in the final analysis chapter.

While the equation of the city with the body politic reveals some of the profoundly pessimistic world views that were attributed to the urban environment, it is a metaphorization that could also have more positive repercussions. The fascination with the city is tied to its potential to symbolize abstract concepts that lie beyond the city boundaries: the intangible concepts of community, citizenship, or the nation state: in 1992; drawing on Deleuze and Guattari, the city-as-body can also be understood as a “body without organs” (see Shields 1996: 241–244). The renowned Finnish architect, Eliel Saarinen, in his *The City, its Growth, its Decay, its Future*, explicitly uses this metaphorization when discussing city planning. Saarinen states that he wants to “explain the physical order of the urban community much in the same manner as one understands organic order in any living organism” (Saarinen 1943/1949: x).

The idea of the city as an organic body would return to the field of urban planning in the work of Patrick Geddes in the early twentieth century, and again in the so-called systems view of planning, which became dominant in the English-speaking world from the 1960s onwards (Taylor 1998: 62).

See for example Mumford on Rome (1961: 225) and Zola’s *Le Ventre de Paris* (*The Belly of Paris*; 1873). A similar vision of a waste-producing city is also visible in Dickens’s *Our Mutual Friend* (1864–1865) (see Lehan 1998: 45–46).

Both the metaphor of city-as-body in a more literal (often economic) sense and in a moral (social critical) sense have been used to approach the literary city in academic research (see Altnöder 2009).

As Raymond Williams points out, quoting a source dating from 1783, London was, time and again “looked upon to be no better than a wen or excrescence upon the body-politic” (Tucker 1783, as quoted in Williams 1973: 146).
literature in particular, the city “has become metaphor rather than place” (Bradbury 1976/1986: 97). As Kevin Lynch points out in his ground-breaking *The Image of the City* (1960), “[p]otentially, the city is in itself the powerful symbol of a complex society” (Lynch 1960: 5). Lynch echoes earlier thinking which vests the city with the potential to reflect not only itself but much larger and even more complex entities: the community of believers in Augustine’s *City of God* (2007), the Empire and its citizens in the case of Rome, the order of rational reasoning in the baroque city plan or the centralizing nation state emerging during the nineteenth century. The image of the city is also an *imago mundi*, constructing the citizens’ “representation of space as a whole, of the earth, of the world” (see Lefebvre 1974/1991: 243–244). By looking at the metropolis, one might claim to metonymically see the world (or at least a world) in its totality.

The image of the city as a human body is closely related to the image of the city as a fundamentally feminine figure, as mentioned above.\(^{51}\) This metaphor of the female body allows for an enormous variety of specific adaptations in discourses about the city: the city may be described as a motherly figure, but it can as easily be portrayed as a harlot (see for example Prendergast 1992: 136), as a “most delicious of monsters” – the female figure with which Paris is described in Zola’s *Ferragus* (as quoted in Brooks 2005: 133) – or as the Whore of Babylon of the Apocalypse (for Berlin, see Bergius 1986). Equating the city with the feminine body sustains the idea that the city can also be conquered, seduced, or raped; a metaphorization that can be found in fields as diverse as (literary) history and the spatial practice of graffiti.\(^{52}\) The city is from its very beginnings a profoundly gendered symbol, something which will be discussed in relation to the figure of the *flâneur* and *flâneuse*, in Chapter 4.

The city can be seduced and conquered, and it can also, conversely, appear in terms of a seductive figure: the image of a mysterious, alluring female figure, appealing yet disconcerting. Even saints such as Augustine and Jerome confessed to having been “allured and teased by sensuous images of Rome” (Mumford 1961: 246), and for a wide range of authors writing on the city, the city represented “both lure and trap”; the London of Dickens is a case in point (Lehan 1998: 38). The disconcerting, seductive female city is akin to the image of the sphinx, half-animal, half-woman, guarding the secret

\(^{51}\) Lewis Mumford has traced the feminine nature of the city to ancient Greek and Egyptian sources (Mumford 1961: 13), and the conceptualization of the city as feminine has found its way in a number of (Indo-European) languages in which the gender of the word for city is feminine (*die Stadt*, *la ville*). Throughout the centuries, various European cities have acquired feminine names, symbols or attributes.

\(^{52}\) Illustrative examples are respectively the notion of “the rape of Troy”, and the famous 1968 Parisian situationist graffiti “I came in the cobblestones” (see Sadler 1998: 80). See also Parsons, who argues that “[w]oman are rarely present in the city of myth; rather, they are personified as the mythic city itself, a landscape for the hero to explore and conquer” (Parsons 2000: 222).
of the city (see Wilson 1991). By welcoming and challenging the newcomer, the city acts in this metaphorization as an accelerator of the unconscious, and is thought to awaken atavistic instincts and dormant desires. It is an image of the city which will be of particular relevance to Helsinki literature of the turn of the twentieth century, which focuses on arrival in, and early experiences of, the city.

In addition to the sphinx, one other mythical figure is associated with the city: the Minotaur. Half-man, half-bull, a horror-invoking figure lurking in the labyrinth, this is the shape in which the city appears when the city’s accumulative, feeding functions take over: the city as a Moloch, demanding regular sacrifice. From the late nineteenth century onwards, when industrialization begins to radically transform Western cities, the metaphorization of the city as Minotaur and the related image of the city as machine gain ground, especially in writings that examine the city’s social and economic conditions. Little wonder that a Marxist thinker such as Henri Lefebvre claims the city is “in effect a constantly burning blazing furnace” (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 93), evoking a Moloch-like image that is already persistent in turn-of-the-century literature on the industrial city.

The Minotaur’s habitat is the maze or labyrinth, which is yet again a metaphor frequently used for grasping the city (see Prendergast 1992: 212–213; Benjamin 2006: 85). Both the figures of the sphinx and the Minotaur presuppose that the city is a labyrinthine space containing a mystery to be solved – in other words, that it is a text that can be read and decoded. The metaphorization of the city as text, however, is not entirely unproblematic. Henri Lefebvre, in particular, has vigorously contested the presumption that the city functions as a text that can “simply” be read. Lefebvre published The Production of Space in 1974, in the midst of the linguistic and semiotic onslaught, which may in part explain the sharp tone he uses. Lefebvre makes an important point: seeing the city as a semiotic sign may invite a particular

53 The figure of the sphinx has particular relevance to experiences of the city in Finnish literature drawing on symbolist and decadent themes and motifs (Lyytikäinen 1997a).

54 On the city as Moloch in late nineteenth-century city novels, see also Keunen et al. 2006: 250. The city as Moloch and Minotaur comes close to the metaphor of the city as machine or magnet – in Dreiser’s Sister Carrie (1900), for example, the city is “described as a magnet, possessing a compelling attraction that draws people to it with pulsating energy” (Lehan 1998: 199), but it has also “become more and more like a machine” (Lehan 1998: 201). In Swedish literature at the turn of the twentieth century, the image of the “man-eating city” appears in particular in descriptions of American cities (Borg 2011: 205–206). In Finnish literature of this period, one of the most explicit renderings of this concept is “Hell’s Den” (“Hornan luola”), an industrial complex in Irmari Rantamala’s St. Petersburg novel Harhama (1909; see Kurikka 1998: 130; Timonen 2011: 43–44).

55 Although Lehan claims that this is a descriptive strategy which gains greater prominence in relation to the postmodern city rather than to the industrial city (Lehan 1998: 162), Benjamin had already insisted on the reading of Baudelaire’s Paris, the city of the flâneur, as a labyrinth (see Benjamin 2006: 85, 166).
kind of reductionist semiotic reading, which presupposes that the city fabric is something which has been “written” and is thus a finished, stable, and absolute space ready to be interpreted. Lefebvre does not dismiss a semiotic reading of the city as such, but warns for the dangers of such an approach: “[t]hat space signifies is incontestable. But what it signifies is dos and don’ts – and this brings us back to power” (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 142). Moreover, by treating the city as a finished text one discards the production processes involved, which is why Lefebvre argues that “[...] semantic and semiological categories such as message, code, and reading/writing could be applied only to space already produced, and hence could not help us understand the actual production of space” (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 160). The city can be metaphorized as text, but in order to do justice to the way the city text is continuously and socially produced, it should be seen as a text which is, in the words of David Harvey, “complicated, labyrinthine and in any case perpetually shifting”, and which thus “cannot be read unambiguously” (Harvey 1989b: 251).

David Harvey and Henri Lefebvre were concerned, of course, with the actual and everyday city, not primarily with city representations in literature (or other media). Nevertheless, their warning not to read as a “given” has relevance to the city in literature. Literary texts and the worlds they construct (see Introduction) are not stable or unchanging. This pertains, of course, first of all to character and plot developments, which are being constructed as a prose text progresses. More importantly, however, in the fictional as well as in the actual world, the experience of space is not so much about geographical or built, physical environments, but about complex and constantly unfolding dynamics, which include potential power struggles as well as intense feelings of belonging or alienation. Part of these dynamics is constituted by the complex interplay between worlds that could have been (counterfactual elements in the literary world) and the actually lived space in a given novel. But there are other unstable elements in how literary texts construct space: readers and the contexts in which a text is read. The mention, for example, of a particular address in Juhani Aho’s Helsinkiin (“To Helsinki”; 1889, see Chapter 3) would immediately have been related by well-informed late-nineteenth-century Helsinki inhabitants to prostitution, but the same address will be enigmatic at best for the majority of present-day Finnish readers.

56 As a collection of essays like The City and the Sign (1986) shows, semiotic approaches have not been blind to the dangers inherent to treating the city as a sign detached from the social and material world. In the prologue to the collection, Gottdiener and Lagopoulos claim that by neglecting material processes and social dimensions, structural linguistics, structuralism and semiotics have “encourage[d] or integrate[d] themselves into idealism” (Gottdiener & Lagopoulos 1986: 16), and they argue for a socio-semiotics which “seeks to account for the articulation between semiotic and non-semiotic social processes in the ideological production and conception of space” (Gottdiener & Lagopoulos 1986: 14).
Seductive and waiting to be conquered, artificial yet organic; a symbol of
death and of life itself\textsuperscript{57} – no city in literary representations is totally free
from earlier city myths and archetypal city images. The city as a moral
touchstone grounded on Biblical precursors; the city as labyrinthine text,
inhabited by the brooding figures of the Minotaur and the sphinx; the city as
a living being, growing, developing and decaying; the city as a seductive
figure, awakening desires and yet putting them to sleep; the city as
disorientating, alienating yet stimulating – all these metaphorizations will
have to be taken into account when looking at a particular city in literature.

The dichotomies, ambiguity and metaphorizations outlined above will all
be instrumental in guiding the analysis of experiences of Helsinki in the
course of my analysis chapters. As a theoretical guideline, however, this
approach would be incomplete without taking into account the profound
paradigm shifts that have taken place during the last three decades in a wide
variety of academic disciplines. These changes and the consequences they
have for the study of city representations in literature will be the subject of
the next section. This complementary theoretical framework will allow for a
better understanding not so much of the image of the city, but of the
experience of the city.

2.3 FROM ABSTRACT SPACE TO LIVED PLACE

We live in spacious times
(Ford Madox Ford 1905: 59)

A considerable number of literary studies of the city have taken as their overt
aim the study of images of the city, metaphorizations such as those discussed
in the previous chapter. In recent decades, however, there has also been a
growing interest in studying experiences of the city – the sensations that
arise from a personally and subjectively lived urban place. This dissertation
falls into the latter category: it analyses the kinds of relationships which
literary characters construct with regards to Helsinki, and the terms in which
their experience of the city is rendered. The growing interest in experiences
(personally lived as well as shared experiences) of space on which this study
draws is in part inspired by developments within geography, and humanistic
geography in particular. In the decades following the end of the Second
World War, and in the 1970s in particular, thinkers within the field of

\textsuperscript{57} The city is frequently compared in literature with a tomb or with a graveyard. See Mumford
1961: 6–7 for the importance of the necropolis as forerunner of the city; for one amongst a plethora of
examples of this metaphorization in literature, see the “whited sepulchre” (also, of course, a symbol of
hypocrisy) invoked by Brussels in Conrad’s Heart of Darkness (1900/1994) (see also Lehan 1998: 5).
The city as a metaphor of life itself follows Samuel Johnson’s famous saying “when a man is tired of
London he is tired of life” (quoted in Wall 2011: 117; see also Pike 1981: 7).
geography had been advancing a return of human relations and experiences to the centre of a field of study that had become increasingly preoccupied with positivism, facts, figures, maps and statistics (see Brosseau 1994: 334). The result was the development of humanistic geography, as a field of enquiry marked by interest in personally lived “place”, rather than absolute “space”. Pioneering works in this field were Yi-Fi Tuan’s *Topophilia* (1974) and *Space and Place* (1977). Of course, this focus on experienced and lived place in the 1970s did not appear in an academic void; it could and did draw on the work of geographers from the French Annales School and Paul Vidal de la Blache, as well as on that of the Chicago School (see Soja 1989: 38). The innovative approaches of these humanistic geographers are of particular relevance in the light of the impact on literature studies of what has become known as the “spatial turn”, since they were amongst the first to try to consciously use interdisciplinary approaches to geography and literature.

The advent of a humanistic geography, with its focus on lived “place”, meant that geographers became more interested in new material such as diaries, travel stories, memoires, and literature. From the 1970s onwards, literary texts became gradually accepted as objects of study for humanistic geographers (see Tuan 1978; Brosseau 1994; Hubbard et al. 2002: 129), and a number of essay collections appeared to give voice to this humanistic-geographical interest in literary material (see Pocock 1981).58 Interestingly, literature was often used to study regional geographies, in particular in relation to landscapes (Mallory & Simpson-Housley 1987; Porteous 1990).

The use of literary texts in urban history and urban sociology has a long tradition. Lewis Mumford’s *The City in History* (1961), for example, draws extensively on literary texts, especially in its analysis of the city in Antiquity.59 The American sociologist Richard Sennett has equally drawn convincingly on a wide range of literary sources, and he has called for a heightened appraisal of “narrative spaces” as valuable resources to understand and plan cities (Sennett 1990/1992).60 In critical geography, David Harvey has persuasively used literary texts as part of his broader analysis of the urban condition (Harvey 1989b; 2003), admitting that his thinking “on the urban process has been as much influenced by Dickens, Zola, Balzac, Gissing, Dreiser, Pynchon, and a host of others as it has been by urban historians” (Harvey 1989b: 14). The way in which humanistic geographers have made use of literary sources has been somewhat different:

58 A useful overview of geographers’ more recent interest in representations of the city is provided by Hubbard 2006: 59–94.
59 Lewis Mumford considered that many cities had reached their very climax in fictional representations (Mumford 1961: 117).
60 Particularly interesting are Sennett’s readings of literary texts such as *Howards End in Flesh and Stone* (1994) and Baudelaire’s poems in *The Conscience of the Eye* (1990/1992). A more recent example of a sociologist turning to literature is provided by David Frisby’s reading of late nineteenth-century urban literature in *Cityscapes of Modernity* (Frisby 2001: 52–99).
literary sources tended to constitute a conscious and explicit reaction to the lifeless figures and statistics that had dominated geography, but also a means of grasping the more subjective experiences of place that remained out of sight when using more traditional data.

In the Finnish context, humanistic geographers have made considerable contributions to the understanding of space in literature. This is the case, in particular, of Pauli Tapani Karjalainen’s writings on literary space from a humanistic geographer’s perspective (Karjalainen 1995; Karjalainen & Paasi 1994), as well as research conducted by geographers and literary scholars inspired by the new approaches to the study of a more subjective sense of place (see Koho 2008). A notable contribution to the analysis of Helsinki images from a humanistic geography perspective is Sirpa Tani’s work on Helsinki representations in Finnish films (Tani 1995, 2008).

The use of literary texts for geographical purposes or, conversely, the appropriation of geographical concepts to be used in the humanities has been far from unproblematic. In literary studies, the efforts (or incursions, depending on the point of view) of humanistic geographers are sometimes simply ignored. Within geography, although literary texts as source material have not been abandoned, heated debate has reigned as to how this material should be approached. One of the most important points of critique has been that humanistic geographers tend to use literature to illustrate their point, rather than to treat the text as a genuine research object with its own inherent complexities, and informed by a specific social, historical and cultural context (see Jackson 1989: 22; Brosseau 1994; Haarni et al. 1997: 19). In a worst-case scenario, this could lead to readings of literary texts that not only neglect the text’s own voice and complexity, but also the profound social and political constellations of which texts form part (see Hubbard et al. 2002: 129–134).

Other problems may arise when, conversely, concepts from geography are bluntly transposed to the domains of cultural and literary studies. Geographers such as Neil Smith and Cindi Katz (1993) have stressed the fact that the practice of taking spatial metaphors from the field of geography to use them in a new scholarly context requires “urgent critical scrutiny” (Smith & Katz 1993: 67; see also Smith 1993: 97). Drawing, amongst others, on the work of Katz and Smith, literary scholar Isabel Gil points out how important it is to be aware that “geographical tools […] come with baggage” (Gil 2011: 61)

61 Several Finnish scholars looking at space in literature have been particularly interested in the Finland-Swedish author Bo Carpelan; see Karjalainen 1995; Hollsten 2004; Hellgren 2009.

62 Henri Lefebvre issues a stark warning against drawing conclusions too easily from literary texts: “When codes worked up from literary texts are applied to spaces – to urban spaces, say – we remain, as may easily be shown, on the purely descriptive level. Any attempt to use such codes as a means of deciphering social space must surely reduce that space itself to the status of message, and the inhabiting of it to the status of reading. This is to evade both history and practice.” (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 7)
It is crucial to bear in mind that transferring concepts from geography to the field of cultural studies, and the application of “travelling concepts” (Bal 2002) or “travelling theory” (Said 1983; see Frank 2009) is only feasible if proper attention is paid to the fundamental characteristics of space as it has become understood in the last half century or so, and in particular to the realization that space is not stable, but constantly socially produced.

2.3.1 THE PRODUCTION OF SPACE

The idea that space is socially produced is one of the central thoughts of The Production of Space (1974/1991), the seminal work of the French Marxist thinker Henri Lefebvre, who can be considered “the primary source for [...] the reassertion of space in critical social theory” (Soja 1989: 41), and whose thinking on space forms one of the central inspirations for my research. More or less contemporary with humanistic geographers, Lefebvre and other scholars within Marxist thought and critical social studies worked to reassert the importance of space as a fundamental category to be studied in its own right. Their innovative contribution rested in part on a reappraisal of the nature of space as something relative rather than absolute – a view that runs parallel to the increased focus on “place” over “space” in humanistic geography. In Lefebvre’s view, space is not something that simply “is”, either absolute or a priori. Space, on the contrary, is always experienced and perceived, always dependent on a subject and thus, on a body (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 162).

Similarly to humanistic geographers, who displayed a keen interest in products of the imagination and in representations of space, Henri Lefebvre and (Marxist) scholars inspired by him were interested in the way in which imagined spaces were intertwined with the production of everyday space. This is visible in Lefebvre’s famous threefold taxonomy of space, which distinguishes between spatial practices, representations of space, and representational spaces (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 33, 38–39). Most interesting for the study of space in literature is Lefebvre’s category of representational spaces, which includes elements in the built environment with symbolic functions (such as the belfry in the medieval village; ibid.: 42, 45), but that also encompasses images of space in literary and other representations (ibid.: 63).

This fundamental characteristic of space is particularly relevant in the context of city space, and within the city, in particular for urban public space. As the American geographer Don Mitchell points out, this is the key point of Lefebvre’s The Production of Space: the “argument that the city is an oeuvre – a work in which all its citizens participate” (Mitchell 2003: 17). If space is understood as fundamentally a social product, it follows that space (and urban public space in particular) is always subject to domination and appropriation, and is continuously contested (ibid.: 8). See also Lefebvre’s essay “The Right to the City” (Lefebvre 1996).
38–39). In a review of recent studies in urbanism and literature, John M. Ganim has called Lefebvre's spatial triad “famously difficult”, but he concedes that it enables one to speak of factual cities “in a dialectical relation to ideas and literary representations” (Ganim 2002: 372–373). From a literary studies perspective, one of Lefebvre's major contributions is that he has drawn symbolic representations of space into the larger framework of the processes involved in the production of space, giving city representations and their study a potentially crucial position within the overall study of space. In addition, Lefebvre's tripartite taxonomy provides a model that avoids the problems inherent in a binary approach of the “real” city and its representations, with its sketchy understanding of the constant interplay of symbolic places in, and representations of, the city, with everyday activities and planning concepts. In a sense, Lefebvre's triad can be considered to be akin to the conceptual framework provided by Nelson Goodman and Paul Ricoeur, discussed in the introduction (section 1.4. above) in the way it provides a dynamic model of the interaction between the city in literature and the context(s) within which it is constructed.

Henri Lefebvre and several of the thinkers (within social studies and urban studies as well as within geography) inspired by his writings primarily deal with the experience of the city in real life, but their understanding of space as continuously being produced is also relevant for the study of space in literature, in particular with respect to what kinds of relations in literary texts can be considered crucial for an understanding of how the city is produced. The study of space in literature has often been concerned primarily with referential passages depicting the architectural and built environment. An analysis of such elements tells little about the way the city is experienced, used and produced. The framework provided by (critical) geography and humanistic geography does not provide a ready-made toolbox with which the analysis of a literary corpus can be carried out. The insights drawn from these fields of studies will, however, be of help in selecting the crucial passages from my extensive literary corpus, and in gaining an understanding of what kinds of experiences of the city are of particular interest for a closer analysis. David Harvey's extensive adaptation of Lefebvre's triad, which provides an overview of the complexities involved in spatial practices, gives some indication of which processes deserve most attention when analysing the experiences of the city in literature:

64 Representational space can be understood as the emanation (for example in buildings or in art work) of representations (or conceptions) of space and spatial practices – the two other categories in Lefebvre's triad.

65 See also Harvey's definition of the taxonomy in The Condition of Postmodernity, in which he defines spaces of representation as "mental inventions (codes, signs, 'spatial discourses,' utopian plans, imaginary landscapes, and even material constructs such as symbolic spaces, particular built environments, paintings, museums and the like) that imagine new meanings or possibilities for spatial practices." (Harvey 1989a: 218–219).
David Harvey’s taxonomy illustrates and tentatively classifies the enormous diversity involved in experiences and practices of (public) urban space. Most importantly, it provides insights into the potential political and social strategies behind spatial experiences, as well as instruments with which to analyse these, even if one does not wish to subscribe in full to the Marxist world view in which Harvey’s thinking is grounded. The spatial practices in Harvey’s grid offer a valuable tool with which to identify the most important ways in which city experience appears in the literary representations that constitute the corpus of this dissertation. Going through Harvey’s diagram from the top to the bottom, the following links can be drawn. Literary representations of Helsinki feature, first of all, experiences that are grouped under the “material spatial practices” at the top of Harvey’s diagram:

66 Harvey added three further categories to Lefebvre’s triad: accessibility and distanciation, appropriation and use of space, and domination & control of space. The diagram rendered here is slightly simplified as compared to the original in Harvey 1989b: 262.

In a dissertation on Paul Auster’s spatiality, Steffen Sielaff has made extensive use of the spatial grid proposed by Harvey, with particular attention given to the second level of spatial practices (“representations of space”) (Sielaff 2004: 24 ff.).
everyday walks and routines, carried out according to the built structure of the city and in relation to the socially defined boundaries of the urban texture (the divide between middle-class and working-class districts, for example). Some of the material spatial practices performed by literary characters can also be related to efforts to control space, if only on the basic level of buying, renting or building a physical home in the city.

The urban experiences of Helsinki in literary texts are also in dialogue, directly and indirectly, with prevailing conceptions of urban planning and spatial ordering: the representations that are situated at the second level of the taxonomy (“map-making”, “spatial hierarchies”, “forbidden spaces”). This is a dimension of spatial practices that receives relatively little explicit attention in my corpus: there is surprisingly little discussion, either on the part of the narrator or in the dialogues between literary characters, that touches directly upon the urban concepts and map-making at work in the rapidly changing Helsinki cityscape (exceptions are, amongst others, some of the works by Mika Waltari and Helvi Hämäläinen). Although there are few characters who overtly acknowledge the spatial hierarchies and mental maps that guide their movements through the city, unwritten rules related to the use of public space are of considerable importance for the way in which Helsinki in the selected prose texts is experienced. Misunderstandings based on specific social and/or gendered spatial hierarchies will be discussed in sections 4.3. and 7.3., amongst others.

Most importantly, the prose texts thematizing Helsinki display the full range of the third and final category in Harvey’s grid, called “spaces of representation”. Spaces of representation entail, first of all, instances in which the urban experience is related to the symbolic space of other literary texts or representations. A typical example is the disappointment felt by the protagonist in Joel Lehtonen’s *Henkien taistelu* (“Battle of the Spirits”; 1933) when arriving in Paris, a city which appears grey and boring when compared to the enthralling city he knows from literary descriptions. Secondly, spaces of representations encompass the relation of characters vis-à-vis monumental buildings and urban layouts that reflect the authorities’ effort to dominate space (“monumentality and constructed spaces of ritual”). The literature of this period is rife with representations of highly symbolic demonstrations and riots disrupting the experience of public space – the Great Strike (1905) and the Viapori Rebellion (1906), in particular (“street demonstrations, riots”). Organized spectacles such as the victorious White Army’s parade through Helsinki (1918), or the Farmers’ March of the right-

---

67 Adding to the terminological confusion, what Harvey calls “spaces of representation” is what Lefebvre (in the English translation of his work) calls “representational spaces”.

wing Lapua movement in 1930 can equally be seen as endeavours to control space. The way in which such dominating spatial practices are experienced in literary representations will be discussed in a number of analysis chapters, most prominently in section 4.4., which analyses experiences of space during the years of Russian oppression; in section 5.4., which explores the apocalyptic upheavals in the early twentieth century, and in section 7.4., which examines, amongst others, the 1930s Farmers’ March.

2.4 TOWARDS A POETICS OF MOVEMENT

Humanistic geography engendered a growing interest in personally and subjectively experienced space, and critical, Marxist thinkers such as Henri Lefebvre and David Harvey have provided valuable taxonomies of the relationships at work in the production of space. Many of the innovative insights of both fields of study have spilled over into other disciplines, resulting in “a veritable flood of spatial discourses proliferating across the disciplines” from the 1990s onwards (Friedman 2005: 192).69 Literary studies, too, has witnessed a (renewed) interest in spatial subjects, a development that can also be related to the new literary geographies explored by postcolonialist and feminist literary scholars.

In literary studies, questions of space have until fairly recently been marginalized (see Friedman 2005: 192–197; Phelan 2007: 106–107; Bal 2009: 134; Finch 2011: 30–33). In part, this is due to the subsuming, in classical narratology, of space under the category of description (see Buchholz & Jahn 2005: 555) – a category which in itself occupied a marginal position (see Bal 2006).70 Space in narrative, however, is much more complex than the description of spatial environments (Zoran 1984: 313). What kinds of theoretical concepts should be brought to bear on the study of space in narrative fiction to account for the experience of urban space as a

69 The “spatial turn” (one amongst many closely-related “turns”, see Gunn 2001), is a “turn” which has been long in the making, as is evident when considering that some of the most pivotal works such as Henri Lefebvre’s *The Production of Space* (1974), Yi-Fu Tuan’s *Topophilia* (1974) and Edward Relph’s *Place and Placelessness* (1976), were already written in the 1970s. As early as 1967, the French philosopher, Michel Foucault, in a talk given to architects, had famously proclaimed that “[t]he present epoch will perhaps be above all the epoch of space” (Foucault 1986: 22). The appearance of a number of seminal works in 1989, David Harvey’s *The Urban Experience*, Edward Soja’s *Postmodern Geographies*, and Peter Jackson’s *Maps of Meaning*, amongst others, can be taken as particularly pivotal.

70 This is not to say that there was not a long tradition of interest in spatial matters well before the spatial turn, an interest that is linked to the names of Ernst Cassirer, Juri Lotman and Mikhail Bakhtin, and that looks for models for the study of an aesthetics of space (see Hallet & Neumann 2009: 16–18; Nünning 2009).
study object that is in flux, and that is characterized by its production and constant becoming (Lefebvre 1974/1991; de Certeau 1984; Harvey 1989b)? The German comparative literary scholar Otmar Ette has strongly argued that there is no immediate need for more spatial concepts per se, but rather for a vocabulary with which to analyse movement and mobility. Echoing Lefebvre’s call for a study of rhythms in space (Lefebvre 2003: 190–198, see also Lefebvre 1974/1991: 87), Ette calls for “a poetics of movement” (Ette 2005: 18–19). Other literary scholars, too, have stressed the fact that any study of space in literature will necessarily amount to the study of space and movement in literature (Zoran 1984: 313–314; Hallet & Neumann 2009: 20–21; Nünning 2009: 47).

2.4.1 TRAJECTORIES THROUGH SPACE AND NARRATIVE

One way to carry out a study of mobility in literature is to start out from the trajectories of literary characters. In the Atlas of the European Novel (1998) and Graphs, Maps, Trees (2005), Franco Moretti has convincingly shown the range of innovative research conclusions that can be drawn from such an analysis. Spatiality, as Moretti points out, is not a matter of narrative embellishment, but functions as “an active force that pervades the literary field and shapes it” (Moretti 1998: 3 ff.). The spatial movements of literary protagonists have a singular importance in shaping the history of the novel, as well as the experiences of literary characters in particular novels (ibid.). Trajectories through space can be tied, for instance, to the advent of a particular genre (the Bildungsroman) as well as to phenomena related to specific historical periods (for example the nineteenth-century era of nation building) (Moretti 1998: 11–74). Both of these implications of spatial trajectories in literature will be of relevance in my analysis of characters’ movements to and through the Finnish capital. The importance of trajectories through space as guiding narrative devices that propel the action and the protagonist forward in the narration is particularly relevant for the third chapter of this dissertation, entitled “The Shock of Arrival”, in which protagonists’ moves to the capital are traced. The importance of such lines
of flight in literature, not only as descriptions of journeys of the protagonists on a spatial plane, but also as means to tear through layers of time, as indicators of ambition, and as reflecting much broader categories (the construction of the nation state, social and moral trajectories), has been demonstrated not only by Franco Moretti, but also in the work of Hans Ulrich Gumbrecht (2006), Hilary Dannenberg (2007, 2008), and Teresa Bridgeman (2007), amongst others.

A focus on trajectories will involve tracing the country-wide mobility from countryside to capital, but will equally entail a study of characters’ movements on a more modest scale, on the level of everyday wanderings through the city. Such an analysis will have to go beyond the mere tracing of lines on an imaginary map, and take into account aspects of rhythm and mode of transport. It is of considerable importance for a novel’s rendering of urban space, for example, whether a protagonist takes an aimless stroll, or whether his or her walks take the form of a highly programmed bourgeois ritual, as is the case in a number of crucial literary extracts discussed in the fourth chapter, “The Fateful Esplanade”. Finnish prose texts from the turn of the twentieth century tend to centre on a small range of highly symbolic, and often centrally located environments. In prose texts from the 1920s and 1930s, by contrast, trajectories through urban space reveal important changes in how Helsinki public space is conceptualized. During these years, the narrated events cover an ever growing geographical portion of the expanding capital, but they also reveal a plethora of diverging paths, moving away from the centre. These findings are at the core of the seventh and final chapter, entitled “Towards the Margins”.

In specific genres and periods, particular modes of mobility gain prominence: the journey by train to the capital, for example, has a noted impact on the spatial experience in the genre of the student novel and in narratives of the “Young Man/Women of the Provinces” (see Chanda 1981; Chapter 3). In the literature of modernity, in particular, the description of movement and mobility has been related to the appearance of formal and stylistic innovations (see Borg 2011: 30). Certain kinds of trajectories within the city invite a distinctive set of stylistic features relevant to the novel’s overall aesthetics, and have a considerable importance for the resulting literary techniques with which the urban environment is rendered. The experience of the tram, for example, has given rise to an almost syncopated expression of the modern urban experience (see Thacker 2003/2009: 7–8; Alter 2005: 127–128). The tram moving through the city constitutes an enclosed environment which impedes the protagonist’s free mobility; restrictions of sight and hearing, as well as an aspect of sensorial confusion are all typical of depictions of such a journey by railed transport. The narration of such a travel experience is defined by what Michel de Certeau narrating can be analysed as path), and describes the spatialialization of characters (and their movement) in fiction.
calls, in relation to train transport, “travelling incarceration”, a paradoxical moving immobility that is disrupted by the windowpane (de Certeau 1984: 111). A prototypical example from Finnish literature of how such a mode of movement has its effect on the style of narration is the Parisian tram journey in Juhani Aho’s Yksin (“Alone”; 1890/2003; see Nummi 2002: 185 ff.), but examples of the resulting “impressionist” style can be found in the work of later authors, too, in particular in relation to the motif of the car speeding through the city at night, which becomes prominent in the late 1920s, as will be analysed in detail in Chapter 6, “Aesthetizing the city”.

2.4.2 FOCALIZATION AND THE PANORAMIC PERSPECTIVE

A heightened interest in spatial trajectories in literary texts should not obscure the importance of who is experiencing and who is focalizing the experience of mobility. In order to examine mobility and/in literary space, it will be necessary to pay special attention to the individualized perspective of the spatial experience – in other words, the focalization of the narration (cf. Nünning 2009: 39–44). This is, incidentally, also an aspect of narration which is frequently marginalized by scholars outside of literary studies who make use of literary texts. Paying particular attention to shifts in focalization and to the way in which the focalized perspective is framed can shed light on aspects of the spatial experience that would otherwise remain out of sight, such as the engendered dimension of space and questions of power, surveillance, and the right to public space. These are questions that are addressed for the most part in the chapter “The Fateful Esplanade” in relation to the concept of the gaze.

One particular way of framing a view of the city is the panorama, be it from the narrator’s or from the protagonist’s perspective. The panoramic viewpoint, as de Certeau argues, constitutes a totalizing perspective of the city as a “planned and readable city”; a perspective that corresponds with the view of town planners and theorists (de Certeau 1984: 93). Informed by nineteenth-century developments in painted topographical reproductions, the panorama in prose is typically “geared to the comprehensive, totalizing overview” of the city (Prendergast 1992: 46 ff., 52). It has, moreover, an added aesthetic mission: the panorama arguably displays the desire to “hold the city within a secure and unifying frame of vision” (ibid.: 59 ff.). In the realist tradition, city panoramas are amongst the central literary devices that construct the kind of sweeping vision of the city expressive of the narrator’s

73 Travel by car, tram, train, or other public transport typically entails the combination of the three central spatial concepts identified by Hilary Dannenberg: that of paths/trajectories, containers, and portals. The presence of what Dannenberg calls a portal (2007, 2008) – in the case of the moving car or train this will be a window – adds to the fragmentary sensorial experience, since all impressions coming from the outside world are filtered through the limited frame of the moving window.
moral judgment and profound understanding of the city’s workings. Panoramic vistas are also informative of the complex relationship between protagonist and city, for example in the prototypical panoramic scenes at the end of Balzac’s *Le Père Goriot* (*Father Goriot*; 1835), or at the beginning of Strindberg’s *Röda rumnet* (*The Red Room*; 1879/1979: 7–9; see Westerståhl Stenport 2002: 499; Borg 2011: 189–191). The panorama and its implications for describing the city will be discussed in more depth in Chapter 5 (“Experiences of a Metropolis in Motion”), and to some extent, in Chapter 7 (“Towards the Margins”).

A crucial view of the city, which complements the bird’s eye panorama, is the ground-level perspective of the city walker. This constitutes one of the founding visions of the emerging cities of (early) modernity. The theoretical apparatus that has come into being during the last century and a half or so around the figure of the *flâneur* constitutes one of the most well-established “poetics of movement” in relation to the literary city. From the beginning, the solitary city walker is intimately bound up with emerging experiences of the modern city (Williams 1973: 233). In the texts of Charles Baudelaire ( *Les Fleurs du mal* [*The Flowers of Evil*; 1857/1998], *Le Spleen de Paris* [1869/1989] and the essay *Le Peintre de la vie moderne* [*The Painter of Modern life*; 1863/1964]), and of Edgar Allan Poe (the short story “The Man of the Crowd” [1840/1912], in particular), the city walker as a *flâneur*, the detached observer who goes looking for fleeting impressions on the spur of the moment, and who listens to the incessant pulse of the city and the city crowd, has become synonymous with modernity and with the new modes of literature it inspired. Especially in response to Walter Benjamin’s influential reading of Baudelaire’s texts (Benjamin 2006), the *flâneur* has become a crucial concept for understanding the cities of modernity and their literature (see Keunen 2000: 185–189; Frisby 2001: 27–51).

Essential to the perspective of the *flâneur* is the experience of shock, of suddenly appearing impressions and fleeting impulses that arise from the urban crowd which becomes, in Benjamin’s famous words, the “veil through which the familiar city beckons to the *flâneur* as phantasmagoria” (Benjamin 2006: 40). Benjamin’s view of the *flâneur’s* experiences can be related to Georg Simmel’s writings on the condition of life in the Metropolis. In Simmel’s analysis, the city dweller, besieged by accelerating nerve impulses, is unable to react emotionally to the urban spectacle and the city crowd, but is swept along by it (Simmel 1909/1969: 59; see also Alter 2005: 25).74 Such early theories of urban sociology were not unknown in turn-of-the-twentieth-century Finland. An interesting newspaper article from 1903, for example, discusses theories put forward recently by the Berlin nerve doctor Albert Moll, with special reference to the dangers of the urban condition to the

74 Simmel argues that nowhere does one feel as alone or lost as in the city crowd; the city does not allow for extreme individualism, but rather exemplifies “the atrophy of subjective culture through the hypertrophy of objective culture” (Simmel 1903/1969: 59).
nervous system: “the regular move from one apartment to another [...], the rumble of trams and other vehicles, the cautious attitude with which streets have to be crossed, the increased speed while moving across greater distances, even the need to have to wait for a tram”, all strain the nerves of the city dweller (Anon. 1903a; see also Anon. 1903b). The author concludes that in the future, cities might have to ordain specific legislation to protect the nerves of their inhabitants (ibid.). To mention but one additional example, in a 1909 article describing the Helsinki Esplanade and published in a popular magazine, the author argues that the urban crowd forces the modern stroller to keep a keen outward gaze, if only because otherwise he would be knocked over by hurrying passers-by. The urban noise “engendered by all-day long terrible banging, pounding, and bellowing greatly directs the attention outwards”, and movement in the metropolis becomes, by consequence, “a kind of struggle for life” (Alkio 1909: 265).

In this study, nevertheless, the concept of the flâneur will be relegated to a secondary role, although it will serve as a valuable theoretical boundary marker and point of reference for discussing modes of urban movement. The first reason not to use the flâneur as a key concept is methodological: since the flâneur is traditionally a male (and arguably middle class) figure, it is a concept which has been argued to marginalize or even ignore the experiences of the working class, of women and of minority groups. The last decades have seen a heated debate concerning feminist and gendered interpretations of the flâneur, initiated by Janet Wolff (1985) and Griselda Pollock (1988), and further developed by Leonore Davidoff (2003), D’Souza & McDonough (2008), and others. One of the founding arguments, made in Janet Wolff’s seminal article “The Invisible Flâneuse” (1985), is that the symbol of the flâneur, an exclusively male figure, ignores the gendered separation of private and public spheres, and hence also the exclusion of women from the latter. In Wolff’s vision, the female walker in the streets is obscured from sight by the prevalence of the figure of the flâneur (Wolff 1985). Wolff’s and others’ contributions to understanding the gendered implications of the figure of the flâneur have not, however, conclusively diminished the impact of this protean symbol (see Leslie 2006). Elizabeth Wilson, in a reaction to Janet Wolff and Griselda Pollock, even questions the whole separation of spheres, and in her vision, the flâneur is rather a symbol of male anxiety in the face of increasingly blurred boundaries between the public and private realms (Wilson 1992: 106–110). Exactly by virtue of its problematic complexities, the concept of the city wanderer provides, in fact, a valuable concept with which to approach class and gender perspectives in the city (Borg 2011: 69). I will return to the discussion concerning the flâneuse in section 4.3., which deals with the gaze and the stratification of public space in early twentieth-century Finnish prose.

75 The flâneur is in many respects a figure outside of class and outside of the production processes, but he is clearly not a member of the working class (Wilson 1992: 95).
Most crucially, the flâneur, in the limited definition of Baudelaire and Benjamin, is largely absent from Finnish-written literature in the period 1890–1940. The defining characteristic of the flâneur, that he goes “looking for that quality which you must allow me to call ‘modernity’; for I know of no better word to express the idea I have in mind”, as Baudelaire put it (Baudelaire 1863/1964: 12), is profoundly at odds with the way patterns of walking and mobility are played out in Finnish literature of this period, as will be explicated at more depth in section 4.6. A more detailed discussion of the relevance, for literary experiences of Helsinki, of Benjamin’s aesthetics of shock, and of images of flânerie, respectively, will be given in the conclusion to Chapter 3, and in section 4.6.

2.4.3 WALKING AS ENUNCIAITION

A more inclusive and less contested (though hardly less opaque) theory of city walking is provided by Michel de Certeau in his highly influential essay “Walking in the City”, which provides a useful alternative (or corrective addition) to the older conceptual framework built up around the flâneur (de Certeau 1984: 91–110; see also Prendergast 1992: 209–210). De Certeau begins his essay with a panoramic view of New York as seen from the top of the World Trade Center, and contrasts this comprehensive and totalizing bird-view perspective with the very different urban texture that comes into view when one descends to ground level. Here, one is confronted with an infinite “chorus of idle footsteps” performed by everyday activities (de Certeau 1984: 97); an invisible urban “text” which is constantly written by city walkers, but which eludes direct legibility.76

An innovative aspect of de Certeau’s approach is his way of understanding movement through space as a form of communication, and as enunciation. Drawing on John R. Searle’s (1969) thoughts on the speech act, de Certeau argues that walking can be analysed by means of speech act theory as an act of enunciation similar to that of producing an utterance: the “act of walking is to the urban system what the speech act is to language or to the statements uttered” (de Certeau 1984: 97). Walking, similar to any given movement through the city, exhibits the three basic functions of the speech act: it appropriates a city’s topography, it acts out a place (turns it into a lived space), and implies relations with other actors (ibid.: 97–98).77 Movement

---

76 De Certeau is not primarily interested with literary (or other) representations of the city, but it is worth noting here that literary texts can be considered privileged repositories of otherwise transitory spatial practices at street level, and of this “metaphorical city” that remains largely invisible when one concentrates on architectural or pictorial evidence of a particular city in history.

77 Note that in humanistic geography, the conceptual pair place-space is used in a very different way: humanistic geographers use place to denote personally lived and experienced place, as opposed to more abstract and impersonal space. To add to the conceptual confusion, the pair place-space is used
through urban space, in de Certeau’s understanding, is a dialogic enunciation, a view which resonates with Barthes’s idea that “the city is a discourse and this discourse is truly a language: the city speaks to its inhabitants, we speak our city, the city where we are, simply by living in it, by wandering through it, by looking it” (Barthes 1986/1997: 167; see also Harvey 1989a: 67).78

De Certeau’s understanding of walking as enunciation implies that walks – everyday strolls, accidental wanderings, as well as more deliberate and planned excursions – become imbued with a new kind of meaning that takes its cue from the dialogue between different users and from the ways they appropriate the topography and its inherent (social and gendered) power structures. In this understanding, walking is carried out according to a set of possibilities which it can comply with, which it can change or bend, turn to proper or improper use; with a given walk, one can copy the enunciations of others, conform, appropriate, surrender or revolt. Walking can entail the walker mimicking a particular kind of high-status enunciation, but it can also amount to an act of resistance, in the case of unexpected or unwanted behaviour in public space. The implications of such a vision of movement through the city will be further developed in the chapter, “The Fateful Esplanade”, which analyses literary representations of walking along the Helsinki Esplanade. I will briefly return to this concept in the final chapter, “Towards the Margins”.

One of the characteristics of walking in de Certeau’s understanding is that it has epistemological underpinnings (see also Borg 2011: 117–124). Walking is much more than a mere way of transporting oneself on foot – it can be a fundamentally sense-making operation, a way of getting to know one’s environment. In this sense, walking is a way of ordering a complex totality, something which was also argued by Kevin Lynch (1960: 96; see also Sielaff 2004: 69 ff.). In literature, descriptions of a particular character’s high mobility can be indicative of a profound knowledge of the urban space through which he/she is moving; the frantic movement, for example, of some of the characters in Finnish literature of the 1920s and 1930s, can be understood as directly linked to their readiness to go looking for knowledge of the urban geography, and the success with which such endeavours are carried out (see Chapter 6). Conversely, a sense of impeded mobility can stem from a character’s limited understanding of the city. The uncertain first strolls taken by a newcomer to the metropolis, and the difficulties a literary character experiences when moving through his or her new environment can be understood as resulting from the ungainly epistemological process that is differently also by some narratologists. Mieke Bal explicitly differentiates her own use of place-space from that of other uses, defining place as “location” in narrative, and space as the specific use that is made of that location (Bal 2009: 178).

78 See also de Certeau 1984: 219, note 12.
being carried out. Such disorientating first experiences of city space will be analysed in the third chapter.

Heightened mobility does not, however, necessarily equal a heightened awareness of place, or vice versa. The relatively extensive mobility provided by movement by horse-drawn carriage, for example, typical of Finnish literature around the turn of the century, is far from being concomitant with an intimate knowledge of the space through which the character is moving. Walking (and, more generally, moving) through space does not only have an epistemological dimension, but also an ontological one. Applying the thinking of de Certeau on walking as enunciation, urban movement is also a means of expression of the self. Impeded mobility, for example in the case of characters in several prose texts of the 1920s and 1930s, goes hand in hand with an intimate and accurate (if often highly local) knowledge of the city. The cumbersome ways in which the characters move about, then, is not indicative of an epistemological shortcoming, but rather of the socially marginalized status of these characters in the story worlds in question (see Chapter 7).

2.4.4 ALIENATION AND BELONGING

As an enunciation with ontological underpinnings, movement through the city is also a means of expressing one’s sense of alienation or belonging in relation to the surrounding space. As mentioned above, in section 2.2., the axis alienation–belonging is one of the founding dichotomies in city literature. Saint Augustine already argued that the citizen of the city of God is a stranger, a life-long pilgrim journeying through the alien cities of the world (Augustine 2007: 20).

Towards the end of the nineteenth century, in particular, movement through the industrializing city came to be experienced negatively in terms of alienation, and representations of the city exhibited “an overt linking of the city with cultural and personal anxiety, a growing despair over the increasing difficulty of achieving a balanced relationship between the individual person and his social environment” (Pike 1981: xiii). In literature of this period, the city is increasingly “experienced in terms of a series of ‘spatial phobias’ such as claustrophobia, agoraphobia and neurasthenia” (Thacker 2003/2009: 169; see also Donald 1997: 193–194). These negative experiences are related to a whole range of early theories of urban sociology according to which the human condition in the metropolis was defined by a lack of individuality and an overstimulation of the nerves, which lead to a numbing of the senses (see Simmel 1903/1969: 48; also Park 1928/1969: 126). This view of the urban condition was intertwined with Marxist thought on the city: the alienation of the city dweller was in many respects related to the far-reaching division of labour and the resulting separation of producer and product. As a result, the
modern metropolis in literature of this period often “seems to earn a triple-A rating for angst, alienation, and anomie” (Alter 2005: 103).

The city, however, can also act as the site for positive experiences of belonging. The behaviourist geographer Edward Relph has developed a number of concepts that give added depth to the dichotomy alienation-belonging. In his seminal work *Place and Placelessness* (1976), Relph distinguishes the notions of “insideness” and “outsideness” in relation to everyday space, and develops a number of sub-classifications.79 He also draws attention to the fact that people might exhibit an unselfconscious sense of place as well as a self-conscious sense of place, and that both sentiments can be the result of an insider, as well as that of an outsider experience (Relph 1976: 65 ff.). One of the most interesting conclusions he draws from his investigation of people’s sense of place is that the kinds of dystopian cityscapes most reviled by social critics or authors are not necessarily experienced as “placelessness” by the inhabitants of such environments (ibid.: 80; see also Alter 2005: 103–104). At least as interesting as an analysis of the numerous instances of anomie, alienation, and anxiety in city literature, are the instances when literary characters are in the process of creating a home in the city, or when they evoke powerful experiences of what Relph has called “insideness” or “a sense of place”. Such experiences will be explored in more depth in the sections 5.5. and 7.5.

79 Interestingly, like many geographers from the 1970s onwards, Relph draws on the work of literary authors, among them Rainer Maria Rilke, Marcel Proust and Henry Miller, to illustrate his point (see Relph 1976: 51).
3 THE SHOCK OF ARRIVAL.
EXPECTATIONS AND FIRST
IMPRESSIONS OF THE CITY

The first and most defining experience of Helsinki in Finnish literature at the turn of the twentieth century is that of arrival. In the period between 1889 and 1919, several novels and short stories describe the travel to, and arrival in, the Finnish capital. Significantly, by the year 1911, five stories had appeared that were entitled “To Helsinki” (“Helsinkiin”) (Liuttu 1950: 35, 47).80 Almost all the protagonists of Finnish prose texts in this period are strangers to the capital. In a very concrete way, Helsinki in the period was, as the nineteenth-century national-romantic author Zacharias Topelius had claimed, “alien to the country it had to represent” (Topelius 1885/1986: 21; see also Veivo 1997: 28): until the late nineteenth century, the Finnish capital was mostly a Swedish-speaking city, and most of the Finnish-speakers in the city belonged to the uneducated lower classes.81 This situation began to change gradually towards the end of the century, when growing numbers of Finnish-speaking labourers, as well as students, civil servants and their families, moved to the capital. The experiences of these young men and women of the provinces, who constitute the first Finnish-speaking generation in the capital, form the raw material of a considerable number of the Helsinki novels and short stories that appeared in this period.

The description of the journey to the capital – be it on foot or by boat, or, most typically, by train – and the first hours and days in the capital are essential for understanding the kind of relationship literary characters are about to form with the city. In the pivotal experiences of arrival, many of the future tribulations of literary newcomers to the city can be found in embryonic form: high expectations, intoxicating excitement, alienation and disorientation, and the discrepancy between the dizzying experience of the

80 Two stories by Juhani Aho (1889, 1892), as well as stories by Maila Talvio (1896), Ilmari Kianto (1911), and Hilda Tihlä (1911), all carried the same title “To Helsinki” (“Helsinkiin”).

Juhani Aho’s second short story entitled “Helsinkiin” describes a provincial character’s longing for the country’s capital, described by way of his desire to see the renovated restaurant of Kappeli (Aho 1892).

81 In the middle of the nineteenth century, Helsinki was still mostly a Swedish-speaking town; by 1900, Finnish-speakers comprised half of the population (see Suolahti 1949: 270–272). The experience of Helsinki as an alien environment for Finns from inner Finland is poignantly summed up in Juhani Aho’s short story “Maan sydämmeen” (“Into the Heartland”; 1891b), in which the Finnish capital instills someone from inner Finland with a sense of insecurity, “as if one were not really at home, as if one was surrounded more by strange people than by people of one’s own race” (Aho 18891b: 90) (“[…] niinkuin ei olisi oikein kotonaan, niinkuin olisi ympärillä enemmän vierasta vääkeä kuin omaa sukulaista rotua.”)
modern city, with its tempting worldly pleasures, and the demanding tasks set out to be accomplished by the protagonist. The journey to the capital is often described in other than merely geographical terms: it is depicted as a social trajectory with moral implications. As the climax of a journey that is directed towards social and/or educational mobility, the arrival in the city’s strange and new environment typically has unforeseen implications for the characters’ mobility, something which is expressed in an acute sense of disorientation or physical paralysis. The overpowering feeling of arrival is that of being swept along by a violent maelstrom – the vertiginous experience of the modern city.

This chapter analyses experiences of arrival in the city in Finnish literature in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries and explores how such experiences are informed by, and often juxtaposed with, earlier expectations. In the descriptions of the journey to, and the arrival in the city, the newcomers’ confrontation with the urban world becomes visible in a condensed form. I will concentrate first on a reading of Juhani Aho’s novella, *Helsinkiin* (“To Helsinki”; 1889), which will be complemented by a comparison with other turn-of-the-century Finnish prose texts featuring the arrival of a provincial protagonist in the capital. The most important other literary works discussed in this chapter are Arvid Järnefelt’s novels *Veljekset* (“Brothers”; 1900), *Veneh’ojalaiset* (“The Family Veneh’oja”; 1909) and *Nuoruuteni muistelmia* (“Memories from my Youth”; 1909); Eino Leino’s *Jaana Rönty* (“Jaana Rönty”; 1907) and *Olli Suurpää* (“Olli Suurpää”; 1908); Kyösti Wilkuna’s *Vaikea tie* (“The Difficult Road”; 1915). Other novels will be mentioned in passing, amongst others Maila Talvio’s *Tähtien alla* (“Under the Stars”; 1910) and *Kultainen lyyra* (“The Golden Lyre”; 1916).

In the course of the analysis, an outline of the main characteristics of arrival in the city around the turn of the century will be sketched. The experiences of confrontation with the city will be contextualized with the help of frameworks offered by genre and character typology, in particular the genres of the student novel and the Man/Woman of the Provinces novel. Conventions of particular literary currents, naturalism and decadence in particular, will loom large in the background of these first experiences of the city.

3.1 ARRIVAL IN THE CITY IN JUHANI AHO’S *Helsinkiin* (1889)

The arrival of an outside individual in the city has been seen as one of the most potent *topoi* used in literature in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries (see Keunen 1999: 359, 2001: 427). It is a movement that Peter Brooks sees as one of the main instigators of what he calls the realist impulse, “the need, to describe, to account for, to perform a kind of immediate phenomenology of one’s new surroundings” (Brooks 2005: 131). Throughout
the nineteenth and into the twentieth century, an impressive cavalcade of European literary characters can be seen travelling from the countryside and from provincial towns to the capital, to be immersed in a strange and often estranging urban environment – from Dickens’s Victorian London to Zola’s Paris of the Second Empire, to the St. Petersburg of the Russian novel. Amongst the trajectories analysed in Franco Moretti’s *The Atlas of the European Novel* (1998), the journey to the capital takes on particular importance. Moretti argues that in the historical novels of newly emerging nation states, the spatial theatre had consisted of the frontiers, whereas in the *Bildungsroman*, the seemingly aimless wanderings of earlier novels of adventure or historical novels turned into movement to the metropolis (Moretti 1998: 13–73). It is an evolution which is also present in many Finnish novels at the turn of the twentieth century and beyond, which (sometimes literally) trace the road to Helsinki.

The first and in many respects still the most compelling literary description of the journey to and the arrival in the capital in Finnish literature is Juhani Aho’s *Helsinkiin*. *Helsinkiin* belongs to a literary genre which, in Finland at least, bears special relevance to the confrontation between the individual and the city in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries: the student novel. This genre in Finnish literary history is characterized by the arrival of a provincial character in the metropolis to pursue his/her studies, and the subsequent rise (and often fall) of the hero.

82 See also Diane Wolf Levy, who notes that the “prototypical *Bildungsroman* or novel of experience traces the protagonist’s progress from innocence to comprehension in a parallel movement from country to city” (Levy 1978: 66). Peter Brooks saw this evolution as a move from the picaro’s “scheming to stay alive” towards the very different ambition to get ahead in society as a central trait of the nineteenth-century novel, and as a “dominant dynamic of plot” (Brooks 1984/1992: 39).

83 Apart from the title of Juhani Aho’s *Helsinkiin*, we can find the image of the road to the capital in Matti Kurjensaari’s *Tie Helsinkiin* (“The Road to Helsinki”; 1937) and Toivo Tarvas’s *Vaikea tie* (“The Difficult Road”; 1915). In all these novels (as, indeed, in most student novels), and most explicitly in *Vaikea tie*, the advancement to the capital is seen as a road towards fulfilment in society, in the service of the fatherland. The link between a patriotic programme and the personal development in the student novel is explicitly developed in Järnefelt’s classic *Isänmaa* (“The Fatherland”; 1893).

84 Juhani Aho (1861–1921) was the first professional Finnish-writing writer, and one of the first Finnish writers to gain considerable attention in Europe through swift translations (amongst others in German, Swedish and Dutch). Today, he is probably best remembered for his classical novels *Rautatie* (*The Railroad*; 1884) and *Juha* (*Juha*; 1911); the latter was made into two operas and three movies, including an acclaimed black-and-white mute adaptation by Aki Kaurismäki. Juhani Aho is considered a ground-breaking writer of short prose, of which the collections of *Lastuja* (“Chips from the Block”; 1891, 1892, 1896) bears proof. Much of his work is still in print and receives considerable academic and popular attention up to this date (see a.o. Nummi 2002; Nummi et al. 2011). *Helsinkiin* was adapted into an opera as recently as 2005.

85 For an early study of the Finnish student novel, see Söderhjelm (1916/1920); for an exhaustive overview of the student novel in Finland, see Molarius (1991, 1993, 1996a, b). Claes Ahlund has
The Shock of Arrival. Expectations and First Impressions of the City

Originally, the Northern European student novel, a subgenre of the Bildungsroman, had presented student life in a positive, euphoric light. In the mid-1870s, however, a shift can be seen away from romantic ideals, towards more critical and pessimistic descriptions; a shift which was marked in Sweden by the appearance of Strindberg’s seminal short-story collection entitled Från Fjärdingen och Svartbäcken (“From Fjärdingen and Svartbäcken”; 1877) and in Norway by Arne Garborg’s novel Bondestudenter (“Peasant students”; 1883). In Finland-Swedish literature, a similar shift can be noticed with the publication of K.A. Tavaststjerna’s novel Barndomsvänner (“Childhood Friends”; 1886) (Söderhjelm 1916/1920: 118–120).86 The change in the descriptions of student life in the city coincides with the growing influence of French naturalism, with its emphasis on degeneration and its interest in sexuality and prostitution (see Lyytikäinen 1997b: x–xi). Helsinkiin can be seen as one of the literary examples of Finnish naturalism (Saarenheimo 1924: 166; Alhoniami 1972: 89; Rossi 2007: 49). When the student novel appears in the prose literature written in Finnish near the last quarter of the nineteenth century, this paradigm shift was well underway, and many of the descriptions of student life in the city are consequently infused with a pessimistic vision of the city and what was seen as its dangerous, degenerating influence.87

Helsinkiin recounts the story of young Antti Ljungberg, a Finn of Swedish-speaking background from the provincial town Kuopio, who travels to Helsinki by steam boat and train in order to pursue his studies at the Helsinki University – the only university of the semi-autonomous Grand Duchy of Finland. Upon arrival at the railway station in Helsinki, he is driven to the restaurant Kappeli, from where, at the end of the story, he is taken along, completely intoxicated, to an ill-reputed part of the city. What makes Aho’s student novella particularly interesting is the fact that it was originally conceived by the author as a full-scale novel, but was eventually published as a condensed novella (Kopponen 1980; Lyytikäinen 1997b: ix; Rossi 2007: 48–49). The text at hand presents the reader with a student novel in

provided a detailed study of the Scandinavian student novel (excluding, however, Finnish literature) in his dissertation Den skandinaviska universitetsromanen 1877–1890 (1990).

86 The shift in the Finnish student novel has been seen as reflecting a change in the Finnish national-romantic project, the “Fennoman” movement. When this movement entered into a crisis, the student, initially a positive figure reflecting the hopes of Finnish national-romantics, became increasingly a subject of satire and irony (see Lappalainen 1999a: 51–53). It should be noted that Finnish student novels differed in a number of respects considerably from their Scandinavian counterparts, if only because the role of the students in Finland differed politically and socially from that in other Northern European countries (see Nummi 2003b: 100).

87 Arvid Järnefelt’s Isänmaa (“The Fatherland”; 1893) illustrates that Finnish novels of this period contain both pessimistic and optimistic traits when describing a protagonist’s development in the capital. In the novel, the pessimism in student circles is overcome by a turn to the ideals of Tolstoyism (see Saariluoma 1982).
miniature form, with premonitions of the future developments of the protagonist, which lie outside of the horizon of the novella itself.

Aho’s novella offers not just one possible vision of a young student’s development vis-à-vis the city: the protagonist Antti is surrounded by a whole range of students, presenting the reader with a number of differing social and moral trajectories for a provincial student in the city. Amongst Antti’s fellow students, Pekka is Antti’s positive double: a diligent and serious student, whose example Antti is unlikely to follow. Kalle and eternal student Nieminen are Antti’s negative doubles, foreshadowing Antti’s possible future course, and his probable turn towards becoming a pleasure-loving, debt-amassing student (Kalle), and showing the consequent threat of becoming a physically, mentally and financially ruined elder student (Nieminen).88 The representation of a variety of possible student fates in the city is typical of the student novel, recurring in most if not all student novels at the turn of the century. Student doubles are symbolic of the guidance the protagonist needs when initiated into the modern world, and of the importance of sharing the disorientating experiences of modern urbanity. Student doubles and their differing trajectories also constitute the core of Tavaststjerna’s novel *Barndomsvänner*, whose title, “childhood friends”, hints at the dichotomy between the fates of main character Ben and his unreliable childhood friend, Syberg.89

As mentioned above, *Helsinkiin* was written after the Nordic student novel had made a turn towards more critical descriptions of student life, in a literary climate influenced by the negative connotations linked to the city in the realist and naturalist literature of the late nineteenth century. Pessimistic undertones are strongly visible in the description of the journey, which takes up the largest part of the novella’s pages. Such negative premonitions are, however, juxtaposed with positive expectations towards Helsinki in Antti’s daydreams of future success, and in the vision of Helsinki as a merry city of light and (sensuous) delight: Antti thinks of the capital as “that dizzying, dazzling Helsinki, which had been said to grow year by year grander and merrier” (Aho 1889/1997: 56).90 But the optimistic visions are almost immediately offset by hints at the city’s degenerative influence. The journey to Helsinki in Aho’s novella is for the most part described as a slow descent into a dangerous hotbed of vice and sin. It should be noted that the

88 It can be argued that Antti’s Swedish-speaking background would have ensured for him a position as a civil servant regardless of all negative premonitions that can be found in the novella.

89 For a comparison between Aho and Tavaststjerna and their similar roles as innovators in Finnish literature, see Nummi 2007. The theme of doubles can be traced to examples from (amongst others) French novels of disillusionment, such as Gustave Flaubert’s *L’Éducation sentimentale* (Sentimental Education; 1869) and *Illusions perdues* (Lost Illusions; 1837–1843); see Rossi 2007: 123–133 for a comparison between Tavaststjerna’s *Barndomsvänner* and *Illusions perdues*.

90 “...tuohon huimaavaan, hupaisaan Helsinkiin, joka vuosi vuodelta kuului tulevan yhä suuremmoisemmaksi, yhä iloisemmaksi.”
description of this downward trajectory, tragic in itself, is for the most part infused with irony from the part of the narrator, and contains several highly comic elements.91

As Antti approaches Helsinki, he gradually falls prey to the three main dangers that infest the late nineteenth-century literary city, and that threaten the male outsider: wine, debt, and women. The latter danger carries special meanings in the genre of the student novel, since it is linked both to the thematics of coming-of-age, and to one of the most central themes in the Finnish student novel: that of the problematic relation between lower class women and the student (see Molarius 1996b; Rojola 2009: 19–21; Melkas 2009: 123–129). In literary texts drawing on naturalism and decadence, the city embodies, more than anything else, an atmosphere of immorality and seductive sexuality. This aestheticization of the moral and physical depths of the city can be traced to Baudelaire, and is typically related to the female body. In Helsinkiin, female figures feature prominently in the way Antti imagines his journey to Helsinki as a heroic quest rooted in medieval romance. Such figures include the idealized Alma, who does not reciprocate his love, as well as the more obliging waitresses on the boat – in Helsinkiin as well as in a whole range of prose texts in this period waitresses are repeatedly described as receptive to the advances of enthusiastic students. There is also the figure of Helsinki herself, which is described in relation to Antti’s earlier visit to the city, in terms of a female figure with arms wide spread for an embrace (Aho 1889/1997: 17).92 The thought of the capital, then, carries strong sexual undercurrents, and the journey to Helsinki is filled with anticipation. In Antti’s conversations with fellow student and man-of-the-world Kalle, there is exciting talk of the famous café Kappeli and indirect mention of Helsinki’s brothels and prostitutes (ibid.: 62–63).

The sensual undertones attached to the city in Aho’s Helsinkiin reach a climax in the passage quoted below, in which young Antti imagines the capital he is hastening to. Spurred on by the alcohol-drenched talk of his more experienced companions, an exciting mirage of Helsinki starts to appear in his imagination:

Helsinki began to loom in front of him like a dark red room decorated with velvet sofas, diffusing an enchanting perfume and with loosely clad creatures roaming about in the secretive semidarkness, moving ever closer to him, sitting down on his knee, wrapping one arm around

91 In his 1884 short story “Kello” (“The Watch”), Juhani Aho had already juxtaposed a naïve provincial and the dangers of the capital in profoundly ironic terms. In this short story, an inexperienced countryside boy is relieved of his brand-new watch at the Esplanade (Aho 1884/1914; see also Anttila 1956: 641).

92 See also the discussion of the metaphorization of the city as female figure in section 2.1. In Aho’s novella Yksin (“Alone”; 1890/2003), the metaphorization of the city – in this case Paris – as woman is much more explicit (see Rojola 1993: 170).
his neck while with the other, they played piano and sang that light, fiery tune – the same tune that Kalle was humming: “frallallalla, natten ä’ bra!” [...] 

His [Antti’s] face had gone white, and when he took his glass, his hand was shaking noticeably. (Aho 1889/1997: 63)

Helsinki is conjured up before Antti like a sensuous brothel, suggestively set in clair-obscur ("dark red room" […] “semidarkness"), containing soft fabrics (“velvet sofas”) and intoxicating all the senses. It is an enchanting environment pregnant with expectation, and the vision, in conjunction with the alcohol Antti has been consuming, has an immediate numbing effect on the protagonist, who has grown pale and whose hand is shaking. Both elements can be considered to be indications of the turn for the worse Antti’s fate is gradually taking. Similar ill-bearing premonitions can be found throughout the novella, multiplying as Antti draws closer to the city. When stirring his “rum toddy”, Antti is satisfied to notice he does it so skilfully that it almost seems he has a “predisposition” for it; the italicization is the narrator’s, and one of the many ironic asides present in this story (ibid.: 54).

After a night of heavy drinking on the ship to Helsinki, the sight of Lake Saimaa and the healthy beauty of nature contrast unfavourably with Antti’s hangover and his dirty clothes, and he fears degeneration has already set in (ibid.: 72–73). When his hangover is washed away by the first schnapps, Antti’s cheeks start to glow like someone suffering from consumption (ibid.: 74). All these references can be seen as portentous omens. The journey to the city has a gradual corrupting and immobilizing effect on the young student protagonist.

3.2 MOBILITY AND THE DEGENERATING CITY

During most of the events described in Helsinkiin, the protagonist is on the move, and much of his sensations of mobility can be linked to his expectations of life in the city, to his hopes for a future social and academic rise, and to his implicit, subsequent fall. In Aho’s novella, symbols of mobility and speed take on important roles. Aho has been considered as the “painter...
of modernization *par excellence*” in Finnish literature (Lappalainen 1998b: 80), and in much of his work, he uses vehicles of mobility, such as trains and trams, as multi-layered literary motifs (for example in *Rautatie* [*The Railroad*; 1884]; *Yksin* [*“Alone”*; 1890/2003]) to express the altered sense of time and space that resulted from the accelerating processes of urbanization and modernization. In *Helsinkiin*, the pace of the journey has a direct effect on the way the narration is constructed: the rhythm of the journey to Helsinki, which starts off at a rather leisurely pace on the boat from Kuopio, seems to gradually move towards an almost sexual climax when Antti and his fellow students board the train at Lappeenranta. Sensuous adventures seem to be promised by every whistle of the locomotive:

> And this promise [of future adventures] could already be felt in every passionate whistle of the locomotive, and in the raging motion of the train in all those stations rapidly moving away behind them – all those things which meant that the journey becomes shorter every moment and their destination Helsinki is coming closer and closer. Helsinki! towards which they are racing with the speed of an ever accelerating stream, and which awaits like a quiet pool, boiling with bubbles, ever more greedily swallowing up the stream. (Aho 1889/1997: 76–77)

The acceleration felt by Antti as he approaches Helsinki is reflected in the narration by ever denser sentences, which seem to be running almost out of breath (“in every passionate […] and in the raging motion […] and in all those stations […] all those things”), and which come to a climax with the triumphal mention of Helsinki. The effect of the narration is further enhanced by a change to the present tense (“Helsinki is coming closer”; “towards which they are racing” [my emphasis]). The capital is described here as the nexus of Antti’s mobility, the goal, “boiling with bubbles”, of the mighty stream which transports the masses of the people. The metaphor of

---

94 A comprehensive analysis of the changing experience of time and space in the period 1880–1918 is provided by Stephen Kern in *The Culture of Time and Space, 1880–1918* (1983) and, for the specific case of the railway, by Wolfgang Schivelbusch in *The Railway Journey* (1979/1986).

95 “Ja lupaus siitä oli jo jokaisessa veturin kiihkeässä vihellyksessä ja junan kivavaassa kulussa ja nopeasti jäelle jäivissä asemissa, joka kaikki tiedi sen, että matka lyhenee joka hetki ja sen määrää Helsinki lähennemistään lähenee. Helsinki! johon kiihdytään yhä kiihtyvän virran vauhdilla ja joka odottaa kuin kuplia kiehua suvanto ja aina vaan ahnaamin itseään kohti nielee.”

The use of the Finnish word “suvanto” in the original is enigmatic, not to say oxymoronic, in the context of the full passage. The word, here translated as “quiet pool” (based on the translation offered by Herbert Lomas; see Aho 1889/2000: 74), denotes the part of a river immediately following or preceding rapids, and thus, while suggesting immobility, it presupposes the idea of a violent stream of water.
the city as a vibrant centre, while the countryside consists of still and forgotten waters, is developed further when the narrator describes the provincial town of Savonlinna and some of its inhabitants, students of old, who are described as having stepped outside of the “flow of people streaming down to the big world” and who are left aside in a small and silent bay beside the stream (ibid.: 55).

Antti’s emotions change from the one extreme to the other as he approaches the city. When he hears somebody mention Helsinki, the name has a menacing sound, and he is frightened (ibid.: 78); but the first view of Helsinki is that of dancing people at the Alppila restaurant (ibid.: 80), and when the train arrives at Töölö Bay, the lights of Helsinki become visible, illuminating the sky ahead so that it is “blazing red like a fire” (ibid.: 80). At this point another restaurant becomes visible, Kaisaniemi restaurant, and Antti is again seized by a chilling anxiety. The appearance of restaurants in quick succession, while entirely plausible when taking into account the actual train trajectory referred to, can be seen as symptomatic of the protagonist’s view of the city as well as of his possible future.

The views of Alppila and Töölö Bay offer the first glimpses of the actual city, which had loomed large in the background of Antti’s thoughts during the whole journey south. Particularly telling is the sudden opening of the cityscape when the train enters the area of Töölö Bay, presenting a near-panoramic view of the capital. This view presented the first sight of the metropolis to generations of people moving to the capital, and in the first decades of writing on Helsinki, it was much more prominent than the view now considered to be the quintessential one of arrival in Helsinki, namely, the skyline viewed from the sea. The view of the city, with its menacing, near-apocalyptic sky with lights as of fire, combined with the sensation of the speeding train and glimpses of dancing couples observed from the coach window, give the whole scene a grim ambiguity, reminiscent of the skeleton dances of late medieval imagery. It conveys an impression of a city of both leisure and light, but also of fiery fire, consuming newcomers, the idea of the city as a “blazing furnace” (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 93), which will return, in particular, in the writings of L. Onerva (see Chapter 5).

96 In his translation of excerpts of *Helsinkiin*, Herbert Lomas translates this as “aglow as if from a bonfire” (Aho 1889/2000: 74), which substitutes a sense of festivity for the clear menacing undertones present in the original.

97 Karjalainen & Paasi, in their article on representations of Helsinki in literature, open with this image of Helsinki approached by the sea, and quote the author Bo Carpelan: “Helsinki must be approached from the sea [...]: this is the classic image of Helsinki, dear both to travellers and to the people of the city” (Karjalainen & Paasi 1994: 59–60). The more traditional panoramic view from the Töölö Bay area, as seen from the bridge at Linnunlaulu (“Bird Song”) is present, amongst others, in Maila Talvio’s *Tähtien alla* (“Under the Stars”; 1910) and much more recently in the culminating scene of Mikko Rimminen’s ground-breaking Helsinki novel *Pussikaljaromaani* (“The Six-pack novel”; 2004).
When Antti arrives in the capital, the predominant sensation related to his arrival is not that of independent movement, but of being taken along. In bouts and fits, Antti has grown increasingly paralyzed during the journey, and upon arrival at the Helsinki railway station, his sense of frightened expectation culminates in complete immobility when the train comes to a standstill:

When the train came to a stop under the glass roof and he had to emerge from the carriage, he felt he couldn’t move. His knee-joints were like jelly, and they didn’t want to carry him. (Aho 1889/1997: 80)

The confusing sense of arrival in a large city’s railway station is a central convention of the city novel, “a founding scene of urbanization” as Arne Toftegaard Pedersen calls it in his discussion of an arrival scene at the Helsinki railway station in a poem by Tavaststjerna (Pedersen 2007: 84–85). Hana Wirth-Nesher points out that in such scenes, the train station “conventionally signifies change, movement, promise, or escape, and it offers an intensified form of the city street”; it constitutes “the city’s seam, a place of crossing over, mingling, romance, adventure and intrigue” (Wirth-Nesher 1996: 39–40). Even as an everyday experience, a railway station can be considered, in the words of de Certeau, as a “threshold, composed of momentary bewilderments” (de Certeau 1984: 114). Peter Brooks argues that the first confrontation with the city constitutes “perhaps first of all a semiotic crisis: the discovery that there is a whole new sign-system that needs to be deciphered, and that it points to a social code yet to be learned” (Brooks 2005: 132). For Antti Ljungberg in Helsinkiin, the experience of arrival is both climactic and paralyzing, and an important step towards the unmasking of his idealist illusions of future success. He becomes completely dependent on others for movement, is swept along by the stream of passengers, after which he is dragged along and forcefully taken to the Kappeli restaurant, which is announced from afar by the loud music of its orchestra, playing on the bandstand in front of the restaurant (Aho 1889/1997: 81–83).

In a long paragraph, the dazzling spectacle of Helsinki’s most famous restaurant is described. It is as if Antti has arrived, at last, in the brothel of his earlier imagination, or in the “quiet pool” (“suvanto”) of the earlier simile, although the effect is very different and much more disconcerting:
In a daze, as if swept down a foaming waterfall, Antti found himself seated after a moment on a soft sofa in a green room with a many-splendoured cut-glass chandelier, paintings on the walls and a huge mirror. It was as if he'd fallen into a quietly hissing pool, but not a restful one, a frothing maelstrom that a moment later would hurl him down another waterfall, still lower, with no end in sight. He felt he was being whirled round and round, his head spinning, with the blood going to his brain and flushing all sense of direction from his eyes. For a moment Antti had no idea where he had come from and where he was going. (ibid.: 84)

The move to the city is described as a river gathering force, flowing downward; a symbol of the debasing turn Antti's life has taken when moving to the city. Helsinki appears as a series of violent rapids and waterfalls, hurling Antti lower and lower, “with no end in sight”. Like the brothel of his earlier imagination, Kappeli is a space that combines gentle textures (“a soft

99 The translation follows that by Lomas (Aho 1889/2000: 77). Note that the Finnish word “pyörre” can be translated by a number of words, including “maelstrom”; other words are, amongst others, “whirl”, “whirlpool”, “vortex” (Wuolle 1979/1981: 288). Herbert Lomas has translated “pyörre” in this fragment as “whirlpool” (Aho 1889/2000: 74).

“Huomakuisissaan kuin kosken kuohusta alas tullut istui Antti hetken päästä pehmosella sohvalla, vihreässä huoneessa, jonka katossa paloi monivaloinen kristallikruunu ja jonka seinillä oli maalauksia ja suuri peili. Se oli kuin sihisevä suvanto, johon hän oli seisottunut. Mutta ei levon suvanto, vaan vaahtoisen pyörteen, joka hetken päästä heittää uuteen kosken, yhä alemmaksi, eikä tietoaakaan pysähtymisestä. Se tuntui pyörrettävän ja sen tuntui pyöryttävän, se nosti veren päähän ja haihdutti silmistä oikean suunnan. Eikä Antti muutamaan hetken oikein käsittänyt, mistä oli tuollut ja minne oli menevää.”

Turn-of-the-century Finnish prose repeatedly uses the word maelstrom (“pyörre”/“pyörteet”) to describe the experience of the city. In Maila Talvio’s novel Tähtien alla (“Under the Stars”; 1910), Helsinki life is described as a maelstrom experienced by the newly arrived girl Hilja (Talvio 1910: 71). Several reviews of Talvio’s novel Niniven lapset (“Children of Nineveh”; 1915), describe the protagonists’ move to the capital as a descent into the city's maelstrom (Saarenheimo 1915; H. S-M 1915). In a review of Eino Leino’s Jaana Rönty (1907), the Finnish capital's degenerating nature is described similarly as “Helsinki’s maelstrom” (lrv 1908: 282). In his 1899 report of his journey to Russia to meet Tolstoy, Arvid Järnefelt describes the whirl of people in the streets of the Russian capital with the word “a maelstrom of people” (“ihmispyörre”) (as quoted in Karkama 2010: 219). In Eino Leino’s Pankkiherroja (“Bank Lords”; 1914), Helsinki nightlife is described as “a world of decay, an endless abyss and maelstrom of filthy passions” into which the protagonist throws himself (“Tähän mädätyksen maailmaan, tähän saastaisten intohimojen pohjattomaan kuiluun ja pyörteeseen syöksyi Antti nyt […]”) (Leino 1914: 106). In Toivo Tarvas’s novel Eri tosoltta (“On Different Levels”; 1916a), young provincial students are described as people who, without a home, end up in “the drowning maelstrom of the city so rich in pleasures” (Tarvas 1916: 210) (“He olivat kodittomia ja joutuivat huvitukista rikkaan kaupungin hukuttaviin pyörteisiin”).

In early twentieth century Swedish fiction, one Stockholm novel carried the title “The Maelstrom” (Maria Sandel’s Virveln [1913], see Borg 2011: 241)
sofa”) with disorientating light effects (the “many-splendoured cut-glass chandelier”, the “huge mirror”). Most strikingly, it is a space in movement, as if the accelerating journey to the capital has never really stopped, but continues at an even faster pace, even though physically speaking, Antti has come to a standstill. The resulting disorientation is taken to a point where the protagonist is not only incapable of reading his environment, but utterly unable to remember “where he had come from and where he was going”. The protagonist’s characterization as passive driftwood in the maelstrom of the modern world, rather than as an energetic actor, is one of the traits that link Helsinkiin to the poetics of naturalist fiction.

The figurative language used by Juhani Aho to describe the experience of Helsinki is remarkably similar to how Marshall Berman and others have described the experience of the city in modernity. The image of the maelstrom, in particular, is used on numerous occasions in Berman’s All That Is Solid Melts Into Air, and Berman claims that to “be modern […] is to experience personal and social life as a maelstrom” (Berman 1982/1989: 345–346). Berman wants to describe the actual experience of modernity, but repeatedly turns to literary texts for his dissection of modern experiences. His analysis of Rousseau’s Julie, ou la nouvelle Héloïse (Julie, or the New Heloise; 1761), recounts a sense of shock similar to the one felt by Antti in Aho’s Helsinkiin and described above:

This atmosphere – of agitation and turbulence, physic dizziness and drunkenness, expansion of experiential possibilities and destruction of moral boundaries and personal bonds, self-enlargement and self-derangement, phantoms in the street and in the soul – is the atmosphere in which modern sensibility is born. (Berman 1982/1989: 18)

Like Rousseau’s Julie, ou la nouvelle Héloïse, and like so many novels featuring young protagonists from the countryside moving to the capital, Aho’s Helsinkiin is bound up with a distinctly new kind of experience – the experience of modernity, grounded in the ever-more accelerating life in expanding cities. This is one way in which Antti’s experience of shock can

100 The description of Antti’s experience of Kappeli, in particular, resembles Marshall Berman’s description of the way in which Karl Marx evokes modern life in the manifesto: “Marx [in the manifesto] is not only describing but evoking and enacting the desperate pace and frantic rhythm that capitalism imparts to every facet of modern life. He makes us feel that we are part of the action, drawn into the stream, hurtled along, out of control, at once dazzled and menaced by the onward rush.” (Berman 1982/1989: 91)

101 See also Bart Keunen, who notices that the image of arrival in the capital ”functioned as the strategy of choice to give shape to the big parade of modernity”, especially in “works that can be categorized as realist, naturalist, or realistically oriented modernist” (Keunen 1999: 359).
be understood: a sense of profound disorientation that stems from the violent confrontation with the agitating rush of modernity, embodied here in the city; what Pertti Karkama, in his study of modernity in Finnish literature has called the “modern crisis experience” (Karkama 1994: 192–208).102

The scene in Kappeli is not the final stage of Antti’s downward trajectory. After recovering for a moment with the help of some drinks and sociable chatter, he becomes tired and sleepy, blinded by the dazzling light of the chandelier (Aho 1889/1997: 88–89). By now almost completely numbed, Antti lends some money (which he had received from his mother as precious extra pocket money) to one of his new friends, and is taken along outside. Horse-drawn carriages are ordered, and when trying to board one of the carriages, Antti at first falls. He succeeds a second time; and the last thing the reader sees of Antti is his white student cap, which disappears in the Helsinki night (ibid.: 90).103 The address which is given to the driver – Tarkk’ampujankatu 15 – does not seem to carry any implicit meanings for Antti, but for the surrounding students, and certainly for the contemporary reader, there was no doubt where Antti was heading at the very end of the story: to a brothel in Helsinki’s seedy district Punavuori.104

3.3 AN OUTLINE OF ARRIVAL

On the basis of Juhani Aho’s novella, a tentative blueprint of experiences and expectations linked to travel to Helsinki can be drawn up. During the journey to the capital, Antti has a distinct set of expectations related to the capital: the central locations will be the Esplanade and Kappeli; the city features the threat of alcohol and debt, but also the possibilities for sexual prowess and educational successes at the university. The metaphors and similes with which the city is rendered revolve around an exotic room that resembles a brothel, as well as feminine figures, but also around water metaphors that see Helsinki as a quiet, menacing pool of water immediately preceding or following violent rapids.

Upon arrival in the city, Antti does indeed find himself in the expected central locations (the Esplanade and Kappeli); the negative expectations are

102 As noticed earlier (see Introduction), Karkama was not, however, interested particularly in the links between modernity and urbanity.

103 The white student hat is a re-appearing symbol of education, aspirations and class in Finnish literature. The golden lyre symbol in the coat of arms of the hat has inspired the title for Maila Talvio’s student novel Kultainen lyyra (“The Golden Lyre”; 1916), in which a female student degenerates and becomes mad after she takes up studies in Helsinki (see also Söderhjelm 1916/1920). The novel, like several of Talvio’s texts, contrasts the healthy Finnish countryside with the degenerating influence of the capital (see Särenheimo 1916b).

104 For the presence of brothels at Tarkk’ampujankatu, see Häkkinen 1995: 38–42.
enhanced (at the end of the novella Antti has given away his money and has almost passed out), and the positive expectations are reversed. The prospect of a feminine, exotic Helsinki is mirrored in the way Antti experiences the actual city, although the water imagery (the “quiet pool” preceding the rapids) recurs as something much more menacing upon arrival. Helsinki is not experienced as a still pond, but as a foaming whirlpool, blotting out Antti’s memory. Summarizing the journey to the city and the experiences upon arrival, the following scheme can be proposed:

Table 2. Travel to, and first experiences of, the city

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Travel to the city</th>
<th>First experiences in the city</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>mode of transport</td>
<td>mode of transport</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>boat, train</td>
<td>horse-drawn carriage</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>experience</td>
<td>experiences</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>disorientating</td>
<td>overwhelming / disorientating</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>effect</td>
<td>effect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>paralyzing</td>
<td>paralyzing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>first view of urban space</td>
<td>movement in the city</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>panoramic view (Töölö Bay)</td>
<td>guided by others</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dancing people at restaurants</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The disorientation suffered by the protagonist, which is enhanced by heavy drinking, results upon arrival in mental numbness and physical incapacity. This state of affairs is initiated during the journey itself, and comes to a first climax upon arrival, and to a next climax at the very end of the story, a few hours after arrival. During his travel by boat and by train, the freedom of movement of the main character is logically restricted, but this continues when, arriving in the city, Antti is constantly guided by others. The dominant sensation experienced by Antti upon arrival is that of a paralyzing shock, which impedes his capacity for mobility – a disconcerting reminder of the direction his moral and social trajectory is bound to take if he continues on the road taken.

By applying the conceptual pair of the trajectory and the container (see Bridgeman 2007; Dannenberg 2008) to the experiences described in *Helsinkiin*, it becomes even more evident to what extent Antti’s journey is pervaded by a sense of immobility. In Aho’s novella, the descent by boat and train to the capital takes the form of a trajectory which, like a straight arrow, is aimed at the centre of the country’s capital, and which thus points directly...
at the metonymic symbol of the protagonist's educational and social aspirations. But throughout the journey, descriptions of the surrounding spatial environment are provided increasingly from the perspective of an enclosed container. In the middle of the journey, Antti can still move around freely and independently between boat and land, and from his enclosed boat cabin to the open deck or the semi-public space of the boat restaurant. As Helsinki draws near, Antti’s view becomes confined to a limited, enclosed perspective, from which he is unable to extract himself independently: the window of the railway cabin, then the horse-drawn carriage carrying him to Kappeli, the enclosed space of Kappeli, and finally, the carriage transporting him to yet another (en)closed and only semi-public space, that of the brothel.

An attempt to visualize the plot development, in combination with movement through space and the narrated time might take the following form:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Plot development</th>
<th>space</th>
<th>narrated time</th>
<th>figurative language</th>
<th>development</th>
<th>(urban) vices</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>provincial town - boat - train - railway station – horse carriage - Kappeli - horse carriage</td>
<td>slowing down of the narration / speeding up of impressions</td>
<td>increasing density of similes</td>
<td>expectations / excitement &gt;&gt; shock of arrival &gt;&gt; paralyzing climax &gt;&gt; [degeneration]</td>
<td>alcohol</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 3. Space and narrated time

Only a very small part of Aho’s novella is set in Helsinki; of 87 pages in the authoritative Finnish Literary Society edition (1889/1997), not more than 10 pages describe experiences set in the capital. Helsinkiin can thus be considered first of all as a travel description (see Leino 1910: 68), but the way

---

105 The plausible course of future events (which can be deduced or anticipated) is added between square brackets.
the narration is structured puts the heaviest weight at the end of the novella, and all elements of the narration work up to the climax which is constituted by the arrival in the capital. While the slow journey by boat is described leisurely, and covers considerable geographical distances (and time) in the course of a few pages, detailed descriptions of Antti’s impressions multiply as Helsinki draws nearer, and the narrator devotes a growing number of lines and pages to describing the smaller, final stages of the journey. The gradually slowing description of the last stretch to Helsinki – the journey from Riihimäki to Helsinki – receives almost six times more narrated space/kilometre than the preceding lap of the journey, from Lappeenranta to Riihimäki (Aho 1889/1997: 75–82).

Towards the end of the novella, the stylistic features of the narration change, and the style becomes predominantly impressionistic (see Rojola 1993: 164–165; Lyytikäinen 1997b: xv). As Helsinki draws nearer, the acceleration felt by Antti is accompanied by an increased use of figurative language, in particular similes (especially Aho 1889/1997: 77–80, in the description of the last stretch of railway from Riihimäki to Helsinki). This serves as a clear indication that a frontier is being crossed, and that the focalizer is at pains to describe environments and events he is unacquainted with. The description mentions how the train is like “a thunder cloud” and the train carriages like “unruly swallows”; the engine huffs and puffs “like a giant”, and the sparks from the engine fly into the forest “like thunder bolts”; the train is “like an unguided, frenzied horse running downward” to Helsinki, whose sky is “blazing red like a fire” (ibid.: 77–78, 80).

The changes in the stylistic features of the narration, combined with the slowing down of the narration and the sense of acceleration which is felt in sentences almost running out of breath (see above), are instrumental in conveying the growing sense of expectation as the capital draws near. The paralysis experienced by Antti in the climactic arrival, as well as the hints at future degeneration in a brothel scene beyond the horizon of the narration, all accentuate the sense of abysmal polarity between the dynamics into which Antti is thrown, and the resulting disorientating passivity.

106 Juhani Aho would further develop this style for rendering urban experiences in his Paris novella Yksin (“Alone”; 1890/2003), see Nummi 2003a: xiv–xviii.
107 On border-crossing and the denser occurrence of figures of speech, see Moretti 1998: 40–47.
108 “[...] Helsinki! johon kiidetään yhä kiihtyvän virran vauhdilla ja joka odottaa kuin kuplia kiehuva suvanto”; “[...] vallattomat pääskyyset [...]”; “kuin jättäläinen”; “kuin ukkosen salamat”; “kuin ohjaton, hurjistunut hevonen alamäkeitä”; “loimotti taivas punaisena kuin tulipalossa”.
109 As Teresa Bridgeman has pointed out in her discussion of time and space in narrative, “the treatment of duration is an important way of foregrounding certain events” (Bridgeman 2007: 58–59).
3.4 THE YOUNG MAN/WOMAN FROM THE PROVINCES

In the decades following the appearance of *Helsinkiin*, dozens of subsequent novels and short stories describing the arrival of provincial newcomers to the Finnish capital appeared, drawing on the prototypical features of arrival present in Juhani Aho’s novella, and adding new elements. An analysis of a selection of prose works written in the period 1889–1919 will serve to complement the outline provided above. Most of the protagonists travelling to the capital in literary works of the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries share some characteristic traits with Antti Ljungberg, but many of their experiences of the city are put in further perspective by a profound sense of uprootedness, and by descriptions of the specific climatic conditions accompanying arrival. Similarly to *Helsinkiin*, the first experiences and expectations of the city in subsequent short stories and novels can be directly related to images of mobility, both in the sense of geographical mobility and in the sense of social and moral trajectories.

Several of the novels discussed below are, like *Helsinkiin*, student novels, but the generic framework of the student novel alone does not provide a sufficient analytical tool with which to attempt a comprehensive view of the confrontation with the city in Finnish turn-of-the-century literature.110 This is due first of all to the fact that it fails to offer a typology that could connect the experience of Helsinki in Finnish literature with the relevant urban imagery in other literary traditions in this period. Moreover, by concentrating on the experiences of only one particular group in society, it excludes a considerable number of urban experiences in Finnish prose. Juhani Aho’s Antti Ljungberg and the other students featuring so prominently in Finnish prose of the late nineteenth century are by far not the only group in society whose move from the provinces to the capital is depicted in literature. At the end of the nineteenth century, Helsinki was one of Europe’s fastest-growing capitals, attracting people from all social classes. For all these people, the city constituted the nexus of their expectations, the hub of the wheel upon which their fortunes were made or broken.

110 The following Finnish novels discussed here, and published in the period 1889–1920, can be considered as student novels: Juhani Aho’s *Helsinkiin* (“To Helsinki”; 1889); Santeri Ivalo’s *Hellaassa* (“In Hellas”; 1890) and *Aikansa lapsipuoli* (“Stepchild of his Time”; 1895); Arvid Järnefelt’s *Isänmaa* (“The Fatherland”; 1893) and *Väljekset* (“Brothers”; 1900); Maila Talvio’s *Tähtien alla* (“Under the Stars”; 1910) and *Kultainen lyyra* (“The Golden Lyre”; 1916); Toivo Tarvas’s *Eri tasoiila* (“On Different Levels”; 1916a); Kyösti Wilkuna’s *Vaikka tie* (“The Difficult Road”; 1915). Several novels, such as Maila Talvio’s *Aili* (“Aili”; 1897) and *Niniven lapset* (“Children of Nineveh”; 1915) bear traces of the student novel. In the period 1920–1940, a number of novels appeared that continue the tradition of the student novel: Unto Karri’s *Sodoma* (“Sodom”; 1929); Arvi Kivimaan’s *Saari tuuliten sylissä* (“Island in the Winds”; 1938); Matti Kurjensaari’s *Tie Helsinkiin* (“The Road to Helsinki”; 1937); Iris Uurto’s *Kypsyminen* (“Maturing”; 1935); Mika Waltari’s *Sielu ja liekki* (“The Soul and the Flame”; 1934); Erkki Kivijärvi’s *Tiimalasissa valu hiekka* (“Sand through the Hourglass”; 1935).
One larger and more inclusive typology is provided by that of the “Young Man from the Provinces”, which was first introduced by Lionel Trilling in his foreword to the novel *The Princess Casamassima* (1948) by Henry James, and explored in detail by A.K. Chanda (1981). In his article, “The Young Man from the Provinces”, Chanda attempts to define an ideal type of the literary character of the Young Man, drawing from a range of British, American and French novels, mostly from the nineteenth century, but with references to earlier literature (such as picaresque novels) and to twentieth-century examples. Novels analysed by Chanda include Stendahl’s *Le Rouge et le Noir* (*The Red and the Black*; 1830), Balzac’s *Illusions perdues* (*Lost Illusions*; 1837–43), Thackeray’s *Vanity Fair* (1847–48), Dickens’s *Great Expectations* (1861), Dreiser’s *Sister Carrie* (1900), and Fitzgerald’s *Great Gatsby* (1925). Summarizing some of the most important features, Chanda’s Young Man is a provincial person moving to the city, a “romantic social climber” who rejects his pastoral past and who “possesses innate aristocratic refinement” (Chanda 1981: 339). The Young Man’s meteoric rise in society, which is reversely connected to his moral development, is followed by his “irreversible tragic fall” (ibid.). Although Chanda consistently speaks about the Young Man from the provinces, female heroes are also included in his typology.  

---

111 In the following, I use the capitalized Young Man and Young Man from the Provinces as referring to the character typology proposed here. A close relative of the Young Man is the “overdetermined individual”, a term used to describe the young protagonist “typical of the naturalist-realist novel” (Keunen 2001: 426).

112 Chanda does not make any major distinctions between the male and the female heroes from the provinces. In this chapter, I will focus on the similarities between the Young Men and Women from the Provinces in the Finnish literature of the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, rather than on their differences, which are, however, very substantial. The Finnish Young Men and Women share many of the same traits: their provincial background, their move to the city, their particular sensitivity, their upward social drive and their eventual fall from grace. But their starting point in society – and hence the course of their development – is generally very different: in Finnish turn-of-the-century literature featuring provincials in Helsinki, there are virtually no male protagonists from a proletarian background, and there are conversely very few female protagonists with a (upper) middle class background. Many of the exceptions (women from [upper] middle class backgrounds), are to be found in the works of one (female) author: the novels and shorts stories written by Maila Talvio. In her study of the *Bildungsroman* in Finnish fiction by female authors, Minna Aalto has analysed some of the substantial differences between male and female characters in Finnish turn-of-the-century novels of development (Aalto 2000). Whereas Young Men of the Provinces typically return home broken and disillusioned, many of the Young Women of the Provinces return to realize an important task (Aalto 2000: 98; see also Lappalainen 1999a: 53).

A remark here should be added to what is understood by the word “middle class” in the Finnish context. The young students of turn-of-the-century Finnish literature stem from a diverse background: they are typically the sons of rich independent farmers, civil servants, or (village) parsons – quite a
In order to apply Chanda's typology to the Finnish context, a number of reservations will have to be made. In Finland before independence, social rise for speakers of Finnish was defined and obstructed by three central factors: Russian oppression, the unceasing, although gradually diminishing, concentration of political and cultural power in the hands of the Finland-Swedish elite, and the historical absence of a large Finnish-speaking urban middle class. These factors have far-reaching consequences for the social, political and geographical mobility of young Finnish men and women trying to make their mark on history, and on the representations in literature of their endeavours. Due to these restraining factors, a number of Chanda's features that are characteristic for the Young Man from the Provinces are absent or appear in a modified form in Finnish prose. In particular, this is the case for the hero's spectacular rise in society, to the heights of the high nobility. In the Finnish context, the magical stroke of luck, brought about by some powerful benefactor, and the subsequent meteoric rise, are quite out of the question. Another feature which Chanda deems essential for the Young Man is his "innate refinement, the charm and personal beauty which enable him to adapt himself to, and be adapted to, high society" (Chanda 1981: 328), features which are hard to find in descriptions of the Finnish Young Man from the Provinces.

different kind of middle class than the gentry or (small) nobility populating many of the similar literature in French or English prose.

For Finnish women, the comparison with continental European Young Women from the Provinces is more complex. On the one hand, Finnish women were restricted in their social rise by the same three factors constraining the rise of Finnish Young Men, and they were, moreover, obstructed by gender-related social, judicial and moral codes quite similar to those applied in much of contemporary Western Europe. On the other hand, compared to the rest of Europe, Finnish women were granted relatively early entry to the University, and general suffrage was instated in Finland as early as 1906.

Another feature which is largely absent is the importance of national myths of (personal) success in the trajectory of the Young Man from the Provinces. This may be due to the fact that in Finland, a politically subjected, largely agrarian country, without Rockefellers or Napoleons, national myths of success were still in the making at the turn of the twentieth century.

If such grand-scale upheavals and sudden reversals of fortune are depicted in Finnish turn-of-the-century literature, such as in Eino Leino's novel *Pankkiherroja* ("Bank Lords"; 1914), they were criticized for being unrealistic in the Finnish context (see Saarenheimo 1916a: 202). In defence of Eino Leino, it might be good to repeat here David Harvey's shrewd observation that money and the world of financial manipulation have never constituted "promising raw material for grand literature" (Harvey 1989b: 166–167).

This absence of aristocratic features in the male heroes from the Finnish-speaking classes can be related to the problematic image of the common people and the racial prejudice prevalent in Finland at the end of the nineteenth century. The idea that Finns belonged to a race that was physically and mentally inferior to the Germanic Swedish speakers living along the coastline of Finland was widespread at the end of the nineteenth century (see Molarius 1998a). Juhani Aho's Helsinkiin is a telling example of how attitudes cultivated at a particular time towards certain groups in society may
Although the Finnish Young Man from the Provinces lacks innate aristocratic features and generally does not experience a meteoric rise in society, he is not merely a parvenu. According to Chanda, what sets the Young Man apart from the parvenu is a “certain fineness of spirit, a yearning for the rich possibilities of life, which raises him above mediocrity” (ibid.: 329). This is certainly true for a number of Finnish young provincials moving to the capital: sensitive heroes eager to embrace the opportunities offered by the city can be seen in characters such as Eljas (Ivalo's *Hellaassa* ["In Hellas"]; 1890), Juuso (Ivalo’s *Aikansa lapsipuoli* [“Stepchild of his Time”]; 1895), Henrik (Järnefelt’s *Veljekset* [“Brothers”]; 1900), Markus (Wilkuna’s *Vaika tie* [“The Difficult Road”]; 1915), and Hilja – one of the few female provincials moving to the capital in Finnish prose of this period (Talvio’s *Tähtien alla* ["Under the Stars"]; 1910).

For the protagonists mentioned above (Eljas, Juuso, Henrik, Markus and Hilja), sensitivity lies close to sensibility: they are romantic dreamers, to the point almost of becoming sentimental heroes. In Juhani Aho’s *Helsinkiin*, moreover, the journey of young Antti attains almost Don Quichotean dimensions. Antti ironically resembles a knightly hero, in whose quest all conventions of late medieval romance are turned upside down. *Helsinkiin* can in fact be read as a reversed “novel of ordeal”, a genre which in Bakhtin’s words is “constructed as a series of tests of the main heroes, tests of their fidelity, valour, bravery, virtue, nobility, sanctity, and so on” (Bakhtin 1986/2004: 12). Antti’s virtue, fidelity and valour are continuously tested, and in every test he fails.

In their confrontation with the city, the immature sensitivity of the Finnish Young Men is juxtaposed with the merciless modern world of the city, with which it is utterly out of tune – typical in this respect is the story of Juuso, the eponymous “Stepchild of his Time” of Ivalo’s *Aikansa lapsipuoli*.

---

find their reflection in literature. It is only logical that protagonist Antti, from Swedish-speaking, upper middle-class background, is described in negative terms by Aho, who was a strong advocate of the Finnish cause (see Lyytikäinen 1997b: x–xi). But in Helsinkiin, all students are presented in a more or less ironic light, not only Antti. The Finnish-speaking students in this novella, who are treated with contempt by Antti, are clearly depicted in a more positive light than Antti, but they are nevertheless described as being clumsy and far from attractive. This categorization will recur in the next few decades and is found in many of the descriptions of commoners moving to the city.

117 Chanda stresses the fact that the Young Man from the Provinces is a romantic social dreamer, but in his typology, an over-sensitive and passive character would probably disqualify these Finnish heroes as Young Men, since Chanda considers the Young Man typically a vigorous rather than a passive or pondering character.

118 Note that Trilling had situated the roots of the Young Man from the Provinces in folklore and in medieval romance (Trilling 1948: xi; Chanda 1981: 321)

119 *Helsinkiin* is not the only text by Aho which carries undertones of medieval romance; Nummi has analysed one of the short prose extracts by Aho, “Kosteikko” (“Wetlands”; 1890), as a story which can be read from the perspective of the mythical search for the Grail (Nummi 2002: 119–121).
Juuso arrives to the city with high hopes, both personally and politically, but all his idealistic endeavours end in failure. Divorced by his wife and completely disappointed with life, he ends up in a mental institute after an unsuccessful attempt to kill his cynical nemesis Heikki. Apart from the satirized residue of medieval romance mentioned above, three important features of the Young Man (as defined by Chanda) can be singled out for their relevance to how the confrontation with the city is given form in Finnish prose texts around the turn of the twentieth century. These are the rejection of the Young Man’s provincial and often impoverished roots, the fact that the Young Man is a social achiever who rises and who, in most cases, also falls, and finally, that in his rise, he is accompanied by a Doppelgänger. We have seen how in Helsinkiin, Antti is surrounded by a whole range of student doubles, and in Finnish late nineteenth- and early twentieth-century novels featuring provincials in the city, doubles abound. Examples of such doubles can be found in a number of contemporary novels featuring arrival in the city, such as Järnefelt’s Veneh’ojalaiset (Hannes and Hinkki) and Nuoruteni muistelmia (“Memories from my Youth”; 1919; the female doubles Hilja and Sanna), Ivalo’s Aikansa lapsipuoli (Juuso and Heikki), Talvio’s Kultainen lyyra (“The Golden Lyre”; 1916; the female doubles Helmi and Martta).

3.5 EXPECTATIONS AND FIRST EXPERIENCES OF HELSINKI

3.5.1 COMPETING VISIONS

What kinds of expectations and first experiences related to arrival in Helsinki can be found in the prose texts featuring Young Men and Women from the Provinces in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries? One striking feature is, first of all, the fact that the experience of the capital is often

120 Aikansa lapsipuoli can be considered as one of the most harrowing descriptions of the ruinous state into which earlier patriotic ideals had descended at the end of the nineteenth century (see Alhoniemi 1972: 146).

121 Just as the Man from the Provinces has a male double to put his rise and fall in perspective, the choice in life (between ambition and family) of the Young Man is embodied in two types of women: the upper class/city girl, and the lower class/provincial woman (Chanda 1981: 354–355). In the case of Helsinkiin, this is covertly present in the juxtaposition between the pure, but unattainable Alma, who stays behind in Kuopio, and the rather more attainable girls at the ship buffet. Such doubles as the object of romantic feelings occur frequently in novels of this period: in Järnefelt’s Isänmaa (Liisa and Fanny) and Veneh’ojalaiset (Kerttu and the daughters of the colonel), Leino’s Jaana Rönty (Heikki and the secret policeman), and Ivalo’s Hellaassa (Anni and Sylvia).
initiated by juxtaposing positive and negative expectations of the city. In the case of Aho’s Helsinkiin, such polarizing expectations had been mostly filtered through the thoughts of the main character. In a number of later texts, conflicting opinions on the city are typically voiced by characters surrounding the protagonist. In Hilda Tihlää’s story Leeni (1907), for example, the female protagonist Leeni is given a distinctly pessimistic image of the city as a cesspool of vice by her grandmother, while her grandfather gives a more positive appreciation of the city as a place with tens of churches and hundreds of priests (see section 2.1.).

A similar dichotomy between two conflicting visions of Helsinki, those of a city of worldly pleasures and a city of godliness, respectively, is present in Maila Talvio’s short story Helsinkiin (“To Helsinki”; 1896), in which the young maid Anna-Kaisa is given the opportunity to work in the Finnish capital. The woman who offers Anna-Kaisa the job evokes conflicting images of the city; to Anna-Kaisa, she recounts how she “will become a perfect beauty when she dresses up in the right clothes, and that everybody is going to like her; she will take part in the dances and the fun of the capital, as much as she ever wishes to” (Talvio 1896: 174). On the other hand, Anna-Kaisa’s worried family and fiancé are assured that “there are beautiful churches in Helsinki, in which every day of the week Mass is said, and there are such good priests” (ibid.).

In both examples, the expectations of the city are structured as alternative versions of the protagonist’s future development, in a way that resembles Antti Ljungberg’s student doubles in Juhani Aho’s Helsinkiin. Presenting such alternative futures constitutes what Hilary Dannenberg has called “temporal orchestration”: a narrative strategy that creates suspense in the way it invites the reader to speculate about the coming events on the basis of conflicting or alternative futures (see Dannenberg 2008: 42, 45–52). I would add that temporal orchestration also potentially activates the readers’ awareness of genre and period conventions, since the competing versions will be perceived as more or less plausible depending on the presence of conventional motifs or themes. In Maila Talvio’s Helsinkiin, for example, the fact that Anna-Kaisa has lent such a receptive ear to the talk of nice clothes and great fun in the city does not bode well for her future social and moral trajectory, and the reader will be inclined to believe that once in the capital, she will be looking more for the nearest party than for the nearest church. However, in the case of this particular story, a third, implicit possible future would seem to be even more probable. The interest of a young working-class

122 Helsinki is also referred to as a city of churches in Tarvas’s novel Kohtalon tuulissa (Tarvas 1916b: 74).

123 “[…] että Anna-Kaisa tulee olemassa täydellinen kaunotar, kun hän saa oikeat vaatteet päälleen, että kaikki tulevat hänestä pitämään, hän pääsee pääkaupungin tansseihin ja huvemihin, niin paljon kuin hän ikinä haluaisi […]”

124 “[…] Helsingissä löytyy kauniita kirkkoja, joissa jokikin päivä on jumalanpalvelus ja niin hyviä pappeja…”
woman for worldly pleasures and beautiful clothes is a common generic premonition in Young Woman of the Provinces -novels, which tends to come to degenerating fruition in the form of a descent into prostitution. In the case of Maila Talvio’s Helsinkiin, possible futures are all the information the reader is left with: the short story ends when Anna-Kaisa leaves her home village, and she is told to be already “on the verge of taking the first steps into its [Helsinki’s] enchanting circle” (Talvio 1896: 180).125

Similar contrasting versions of the future grounded in Biblical images of the city (as well as in genre- and period-related conventions), are also present in Santeri Ivalo’s prototypical student novel Hellaassa (“In Hellas”; 1890), which opens with a description of the protagonist’s sense of frightened expectation as he ponders the impending move to the capital:

His old mother had already been grieving over him for going so young to that Babylon – as she put it – where so many good boys had come to grief. – Hm... There were always dangers, of course, especially for weak characters, who threw themselves unthinkingly into the stream. It was said that the atmosphere that reigned there was bad, too – an air of decay. (Ivalo 1890: 2)126

To young Eljas, the protagonist of Hellaassa, the city represents a morally dangerous place, characterized by an air of decay. He also implicitly thinks, however, that the city is particularly dangerous for “feeble characters”, thus implying contrasting alternative futures for his own development vis-à-vis the capital. Since he is endowed with a healthy self-esteem, Eljas retains high hopes of success in the city. His ambitions, however, are very different from those of Antti in Helsinkiin, whose ideas of self-advancement and sexual adventures are in stark contrast to Eljas’s naïve conception of self-sacrifice in the service of a Fennoman programme he will find to be obsolete. The Biblical connotations of the confrontation with the city can also be linked to the name of the protagonist: Eljas as a Finnish rewriting of the prophet Eliah, who fought the false prophets of Babylon.127

125 “[...] oli nyt astuamsaillaan sen lumottuun piiriin.”

Quite similarly, the young girl Aili, in Maila Talvio’s novel Aili (1897), feels as if she has entered “the circle of wondrous fairy tale events” when she arrives in Helsinki (Talvio 1897: 143) (“Hän oli siirtynyt ikäänkuin satumaailman ihmeelementen tapahtumien piiriin.”)

126 “Äitimuori sitä jo oli suareskellut hänen näin nuorena lähtöä tuohon Babeliin, kuten sanoi, jossa jo niin monta kunnon poikaa oli pilalle mennynt. – Hm... Ainahan niitä vaaroja, varsinkin löyhille luonteille, jotka heittäytvät arvelemaattaa virtaan. Pahempikin se henki on, joka siellä kuuluu vallitsevan, mädännytten henki.”

127 Several of the Young Men in turn-of-the-century Finnish prose carry names with Biblical or Christian connotations. In Eino Leino’s short story “Päiviä Helsingissä” (“A Day in Helsinki”; 1905) the main character Teofilius Malakias Tavela carries his Biblical name Malakias (quite fittingly a second-
In the quote above, there is a second juxtaposition, in addition to the implicit dichotomy success-failure: the opposition between quiet countryside-waters and the violent stream of the capital, which is couched in figurative language similar to the one used in Aho’s Helsinkiin. Significantly, while Eljas ponders the danger of letting himself be swept along by the stream of the capital, he is surrounded by the still waters of an inland swamp (Ivalo 1890: 1–2). This juxtaposition of still countryside waters and the violent downhill stream of the city is further accentuated in the opening scene of the fourth chapter, which is set one third into the novel. This chapter, set immediately after a time lapse during which Eljas has settled down in Helsinki, is introduced by a long metaphor of down-pouring snowy water, streaming unrelentingly down the eaves into the “black, deep, dark sewers”, portraying the degenerating and paralyzing effect the city has had on the idealistic protagonist (ibid.: 54). As in the case of Helsinkiin, the city is symbolized by raging waters, and its centrifugal power will have a disorientating and degenerating effect.

In Hellaassa, Eljas’s arrival in the city is not narrated; the narration shifts directly from the quiet countryside environment to a lively bar scene in Helsinki. To a certain extent, however, this environment presents a shock similar to the one found in Aho’s Helsinkiin; the frantic scene at the bar conveys a testing ground that will give a first indication of which of the earlier alternative futures Eljas will be most likely to take. The bar scene also reveals the meaning of the enigmatic novel title “In Hellas”, which a reader might first have thought to relate to Eljas’s optimistic ideas of future rate prophet) with pride when he arrives in Helsinki with the ambition to settle the internecine party strife in the capital. Markus, the protagonist in Wilkuna’s Vaikea tie (1915) carries the Finnish name for the evangelist Mark, while Henrik, in Järnefelt’s Veljokset (1900), is named after the catholic bishop who, according to legend, christened Finland.

In later decades, too, several protagonists in Helsinki novels have Biblical names. The protagonist of Mika Waltari’s Mies ja haave (“A Man and his Dream”; 1933) is Eljas, and his son, Toivo-Johannes, is the protagonist in the sequel Sielu ja lieikki (“The Soul and the Flame”; 1934). In Joel Lehtonen’s 1933 novel Henkien taistelu (“The Battle of the Spirits”; see Chapter 7), the protagonist’s name Kleophas Leanteri Sampila refers, amongst other, to a minor character in the Bible: Kleophas was one of the two disciples who met Jesus on the road to Emmaus.

128 “[…] mustaan, syvään, pimeään lokaviemäriin.”

The motif of the city as a sewer or cesspool, into which the young people of the nation are gathered, was widespread in the late nineteenth century. In Conan Doyle’s A Study in Scarlet (1887), London is described as the “great cesspool into which all the loungers and idlers of the Empire are irresistibly drained” (as quoted in Lehan 1998: 86). See also the earlier description of anticipation of Helsinki in Aho’s Helsinkiin, in which the capital appeared as “a quiet pool, boiling with bubbles, ever more greedily swallowing up the waters” (Aho 1889/1997: 76–77).

In Santeri Ivalo’s subsequent student novel Aikansa lapsipuoli (“Stepchild of His Time”; 1895), the degenerating development of the protagonist, the provincial student Juuso, is described repeatedly in terms of sinking and drowning.
educational success. “Hellas”, however, is not the cradle of learning embodied in Helsinki’s University, but the name of a derelict bar at the outskirts of the capital, where Eljas’s dreams will turn out to be illusions. It should be added that these dreams are related not so much to projected high social status, love, fame, or financial gains, as in many of the international Young Man/Woman novels discussed by Chanda, but must be seen in the context of the Finnish national-romantic ideals of the provincial student’s task in the nation’s history. In a number of crucial scenes placed in the bar Hellas, it becomes clear that Eljas, too, is one of the “feeble characters” he contemptuously derided at the outset of the novel, and that his high ideals are utterly out of tune with the cynical reality in the city.

3.5.2 RESTLESSNESS AND ROOTLESSNESS

In Ivalo's *Hellaassa*, Talvio's *Helsinki*, and Tihlä's *Leeni*, the actual experience of arrival is glossed over. A shocking sense of arrival in the city is narrated more explicitly, in terms that bring to mind Juhani Aho’s prototypical rendering, in a number of other turn-of-the-century prose texts. The shock of arrival is not always linked to the very first time a character arrives in the city; Antti Ljungberg, too, had been to Helsinki once before the momentous journey described in *Helsinki*. Even to literary characters who know the capital, a return to the city could incur a profound shock. At the outset of Kyösti Wilkuna’s student novel *Vaikea tie* (“The Difficult Road”; 1915), young Markus Kaarlela arrives in Helsinki to continue his studies. The opening lines of the novel describe his contradictory and anxious sentiments upon arrival:

The hands of the tower clock approached two in the afternoon, when student Markus Kaarlela, walking down Nikolainkatu, arrived at the House of Estates. When he noticed that one of the benches in the small park was unoccupied and sheltered from the blazing sun, he walked to the bench and sat down puffing and panting. [...] He sensed a vague restlessness and strange excitement in his nerves, similar to what everyone feels who has just arrived from the quiet country life to the noise and the disparate bustle of the capital. The rattle of the carts, the shrill shouts of the newspaper sellers and the foul squealing of the trams turning a corner unpleasantly preyed on his nerves, while the blunt angularity of the stone buildings rising up everywhere around him, and the stylized beauty of the cramped little parks oppressed his
mind, which was accustomed to nature’s freer forms. (Wilkuna 1915: 5–6)129

The stimuli that are experienced as most disturbing to Markus are related to elements that emphasize the difference between the feverish city and the quiet countryside; elements that can be considered as symptomatic of the time-space compression typical of the modernizing city (see Harvey 1989a: 260–283, 2003: 37; Massey 1994/2008; Thacker 2003/2009: 38–40; Warf 2008), such as the (daily) newspapers and the tram.130 Significantly, the very first word of the novel refers to the hands of the clock tower that set the urban day apart from the more cyclical time of the countryside. The architectural formality of the environment, as well as the limited natural space of cramped and stylized parks, has a further unpleasant effect upon the young student. The result is, not, however, entirely negative, but instead, Markus feels a “vague restlessness” and a “strange excitement” – the Finnish original of the latter word (“kiihottuneisuus”), in particular, bears strong sensuous connotations.

The most pressing reason for Markus sense of restlessness and insecurity is the physical lack of a home in the city. It was a condition in which he was not alone: it was common for students to return to the country for the summer months and to search for new quarters upon return to the city at the beginning of the academy year (see Kervanto-Nevanlinna 2003a: 353). While Markus searches for a student room, guided through the city by announcements in a newspaper, his earlier time in Helsinki is recounted in a flash-back. Markus had originally arrived in the city full of good intentions, but things have not gone as planned: like so many Finnish students, “immersed in the life of the capital, he had been like a tree wrenched from its roots, without any certainty to turn to, and susceptible to every gust of wind” (ibid.: 6).131 The University, too, has given him an alienating impression, not


[...] Hän tunsi hermoissaan epämääräistä levottomuutta ja outoja kiihottuneisuutta kuten ainakin se, joka maaelämän rauhasta juuri on joutunut keskelle pääkaupungin melua ja kirjavata hyörinää. Kuormarattaiden räminä, sanomalehtipoikien kimeät huudot ja raitiovaunujen ilkeästi vihlova vonkuna katukäänteisissä vaivasi hermoja epämiehuisi, samalla kuin kaikkialla eteen kohoa kivinen suorasärmäisyys ja ahtaiden puistojen tyylitellyt kauneus painostivat lvonnon vapaisiin muotoihin tottunutta mieltä.”

130 In Finland, too, the increasing “disappearance of distance and time” around the turn of the century constituted a fascinating phenomenon, as an article of that title, based on Die Woche and published in the magazine Helsingin kaiku (“The Echo of Helsinki”) in 1909 illustrates (Anon. 1909).

131 “Pääkaupungin elämään jouduttaan oli hän ollut kuin juuriltaan temmattu puu, vailla varmaa tukikohtaa ja alttiina jokaiselle tuulenpuuskalle.”
in the least because the dominant language there is still Swedish. All in all, the contact with the city has had a paralyzing effect on Markus: “with some of his closest friends, he had led an apathetic and vegetative life” and especially during the cold and rainy autumn nights, he had spent as much of his time as possible in bars and restaurants “where alcohol and music muffled his paralyzed mind like fluffy feathers” (ibid.: 7).

The dreary autumn weather mentioned on the first pages of Vaikea tie can be found in many other Finnish novels of the time, correlating intensely with the gloomy emotions of the protagonist arriving in the capital. The connection in literature between arrival in the city and gloomy weather is not wholly coincidental: for many urban classes, city life naturally started or resumed at the end of the summer. The first extensive impressions of the city, then, are often infused with the dreary September and October weather unfortunately still typical for Helsinki. But this “true-to-life” depiction also serves a clear stylistic purpose: like the Natureingang in early German

Similar metaphors can be found in other student novels. In Ivalo’s Aikansa lapsipuoli, the protagonist Juuso, after an extended and unhappy stay in Helsinki, feels as if he is a young fir tree, half-broken off and struggling on hopelessly; or like some kind of tumor, which has to be cut away (Ivalo 1895: 234, 276).

132 “Parin lähimmän toverin seurassa oli hän viettänyt apaattista ja vegeeteraavaa elämää.”
“[…] missä alkoholi ja musiikki ympäröivät lamautuneen mielen kuin pehmeillä untuvilla.”

133 The autumn weather does not always lead to despondent sentiments in Helsinki novels. Maila Talvio’s Tähtien alla (“Under the Stars”; 1910) gives a vivid impression of the rain-drenched Helsinki streets in the beginning of October, again with repeated references to violently downpouring waters. But the description continues more cheerfully: “People got used to life without the sun, the moon or the high stars. They filled the bars, theatres, restaurants and conference rooms […] and dedicated themselves completely to those activities and distractions, which Helsinki has so amply in store for the autumn.” (Talvio 1910: 5)

(“Ihmiset tottuivat elämään ilman aurinkoa, kuuta ja korkeita tähtiä. He täyttivät kahvilat, teatterit, ravintolat ja kokoushuoneet [...] ja heittäytyivät koko siellään niihin töihin ja huvituksiin, joita Helsinki niin runsaasti varaa syksyn osalle.”)

Talvio’s impression of Helsinki in the autumn appears to have been true-to-life: contemporary critic Werner Söderhjelm, otherwise rather negatively inclined towards Talvio’s prose, praises her “excellent descriptions of the bleak and rainy Helsinki streets” (see Söderhjelm 1916/1920: 124–125).

In later decades, arrival in Helsinki and autumn weather continue to coincide, but with different connotations; rather than reflecting the downhearted state of mind of the protagonist, the weather becomes connected with his or her disappointment with the city, as is the case in Arvid Kivimaa’s novel Saari tuulent sylissä (“Islands in the Wins”; 1938), in which the student Leo is deeply disappointed by his first impressions of – again – a rainy, dreary Helsinki: “So this rainy and grey town was Helsinki, where the train had this very evening brought young people to start a new stage in their lives – Helsinki, the long-yearned-for goal of his dreams” (Kivimaa 1938: 320, as quoted in Korsberg 2008: 62; translation by Aili Kämäräinen). (”Tämä sateinen ja harmaa kaupunki oli siis Helsinki, minne juna täänkin ittana olisi tuonut nuoria ihmisiiä alkamaan heidän elämänsä uutta vaihetta – Helsinki, jota hänenkin haaveensa oli kauan tavoitelleet.”)
Minnesang, seasonal change acts as a catalyst and interpreter for the emotional state of the main character. The description of autumnal nature carries a particular meaning within the decadent and naturalist frame of reference, accentuating notions of decline and degeneration. Gloomy weather conditions accompany the protagonist’s return to Helsinki at the end of the summer in Arvid Järnefelt’s panoramic novel Veljekset (“Brothers”; 1900), in which the main character, Henrik, goes through events remarkably similar to those befalling Markus in Vaikea tie. Henrik’s return is set at the beginning of the third and final part of the novel, after more than 400 pages of travelling through different parts and cities of Finland. The protagonist’s unhappy feelings upon return to the capital are reflected in the gloomy weather conditions: “[...] the weather had become very grim. Cold, fierce autumn winds gusted through the streets, raising dust clouds in the air and causing the yellowish linden leaves on the sidewalks to whirl about” (Järnefelt 1900: 411). One typical urban sound – now long forgotten – adds to the depressing atmosphere: that of the telephone network, whimpering above the city. The people of Helsinki are described in terms that recur frequently in literature of this period, and that are still commonly used today: “hastily going to and fro on business of their own, without paying attention to anybody else” (ibid.). The most depressing and urgent matter, however, is the lack of a physical home in the city, which gives Henrik a feverish sense of forlornness when he returns to his hotel room after a useless search:

Nothing was left now of the grandeur with which he had arrived in the city. His new mood was forgotten and all of a sudden, amidst this tiring, restless fever, he again became the insecure Henrik of old. He was unable to think of anything else, all he could do was to agonize over this lodging business” (ibid.: 413–414).

In Henrik’s case, as in the examples mentioned earlier, the high expectations entertained by the main character are crushed by the realities encountered in the city. The effect is disorientating to first-comers, but even to people who know their way in Helsinki, arrival in the city in turn-of-the-century Finnish prose texts embodies an immediate, disconcerting and paralyzing shock, which impairs the characters’ senses and their mental facilities.

134 “[...] olivat ilmat jo muuttuneet hyvin kolkoiksi. Kylmät ankarat syystuulet puuskuivat pitkin katuja, nostattivat pölypilviä ilmaan ja tanssittivat kellastuneita lehmuksenlehtiä käytävillä.”
135 “[...] ihmiset rientelivät kehenkään katsahtamatta sinne tänne asioillaan [...]”
136 “Ei ollut enää kysymystäkään siitä mahtavuudesta, jolla varustettuna hän oli tullut kaupunkiin. Kaikki uudet mielilat unohtuivat ja kesken raukasevaa, levotonta kuumetta hän yhtäkkä oli taas entinen turvaton Henrik. Ei hän voinut mitään muuta ajatella, kuin vaan tuskalla kortteeriasioitaan.”
An all-pervading sense of homelessness in the city is common to many of the Young Men and Women of the Provinces arriving in the city. It is a homelessness that is typically related to the uprootedness of the paternal home in the countryside, which either precedes the arrival of the Young Man in the capital, or occurs not long after his arrival. In Järnefelt’s *Veljekset* and equally in *Veneh’ojalaiset* (“The Family Veneh’oja”; 1909; see Chapter 5), the violent disappearance of the elderly home or home lands acts as one of the prime movers of the narrated action, and a wish to re-create the lost home constantly and feverishly spurs on the main characters.\(^{137}\) In Eino Leino’s *Olli Suurpää* (“Olli Suurpää”; 1908) the imaginary loss of the fatherly mansion looms large in the subconscious of Olli, while in Leino’s *Jaana Rönty* (“Jaana Rönty; 1907), rootlessness is what defines the background of the protagonist Jaana and her family (see Molarius 1998c).\(^ {138}\) Maila Talvio’s *Tähtien alla* (1910) features an auctioning of the furniture of the elderly home similar to the one described in Arvid Järnefelt’s *Veljekset*.\(^ {139}\) In Talvio’s earlier novel *Aili* (“Aili”; 1897), the death of the father of the protagonist immediately precedes Aili’s move to Helsinki, while in both Arvid Järnefelt’s *Isänmaa* (“The Fatherland”; 1893), Santeri Ivalo’s *Aikansa lapsipuoli* and Kyösti Wilkuna’s *Vaikea tie*, the death of the father completes the protagonist’s sense of rootlessness that had accumulated during his years in the capital.\(^ {140}\)

\(^{137}\) Arguably the only prose character in the texts discussed who is not defined by inherent homelessness (apart from Antti in Juhani Aho’s *Helsinkiin*, whose future we are not informed about) is Markus in *Vaikea tie*, and Markus is significantly the only protagonist who is able to create a stable and happy home in Helsinki.

\(^{138}\) For Olli Suurpää’s rather bizarre dreams of a lost imaginary home, see Kunnas 1972: 66; Ameel 2006: 42–74.

\(^{139}\) The topos recurs in later Helsinki novels. In Mika Waltari’s novel *Mies ja haave* (“A Man and his Dream”; 1933), the first part of the trilogy *Isästä poikaan* (1933, 1934, 1935), soon after the protagonist Elias moves from the countryside to the city, news arrives of the death of his father, and of the fact that the paternal house, land and belongings have been sold. In Waltari’s earlier Helsinki novel *Appelsiininsiemen* (1931), the roots of the protagonist’s family are described as set in the countryside and centred on a vicarage. The vicarage is burnt down during the Civil War, and although a new house is built, the younger generation is unable to take root there (Waltari 1931: 88).

\(^{140}\) While the sense of rootlessness and the lack of a home in the country is almost universal amongst the Finnish Young Men/Women from the Provinces, they come from various backgrounds. Important in this respect is that very few of the protagonists in prose from this period (starting from 1889) come from the kind of idyllic, idealized countryside environment that was still typical of the national-romantic literature of the national poet Runeberg. In Järnefelt’s *Isänmaa*, for example, the countryside around the protagonist’s homestead becomes gradually corrupted by an ironworks factory (“ruukki”). In Juhani Aho’s *Helsinkiin*, the protagonist sets out from the small provincial town Kuopio, which was a centre of Finnish culture of national importance. In *Hellaassa*, the provincial town in which the protagonist went to school is described as being already affected by the lethal venom of the era, and in *Jaana Rönty*, the countryside is described as profoundly degenerate.
The Shock of Arrival. Expectations and First Impressions of the City

The examples above also clearly illustrate that the experiences of Helsinki in Finnish prose literature of this time are exclusively those of an outsider to the city. Until the appearance of Arvid Järnefelt’s Veneh’ojalaiset, there are no clear examples of literary characters that can be considered as natives to Helsinki in Finnish-written literature. All protagonists are strangers to the capital, as were the authors of the first Helsinki novels and short stories.¹⁴¹ It is a generation of in-between people: the first generation of Finnish-speakers aiming at a university education, the first generation of countryside labourers moving into the industrializing centres, the first generation to make the move from physical to spiritual work (see Melkas et al. 2009).¹⁴²

The sense of shock inherent to crossing the perceived divide between a backward, slow-moving Finnish-speaking countryside and mesmerizing, cultivated, active and originally Swedish-speaking capital is further informed by the context of turn-of-the-century literary movements such as naturalism and decadence, which have particular relevance to many of the short stories and novels discussed here. Drawing on new insights from the natural sciences and inspired by Darwinist thinking, fin-de-siècle literary and cultural movements had an outspoken interest in entropy, decline and degeneration (see Baguley 1990: 204–223; Mokarius 1998a, 2003; Lyytikäinen 1998; Rossi 2003, 2007: 92–117).¹⁴³ In the struggle for life in the

¹⁴¹ The first significant Finnish-writing author who was born in Helsinki is Toivo Tarvas, and it is in his works from the 1910s that we find the first representatives of native Helsinkiers in Finnish-written literature after Arvid’s Veneh’ojalaiset (see Chapter 5). Toivo Tarvas may be considered significant for the number of works he has written that are set in Helsinki, but his work was of uneven quality, and he has been almost completely forgotten.

¹⁴² The fact that these generations were deemed, according to Fennoman thinking, to constitute the nation’s future, and were up to a certain degree expected to replace the earlier, “foreign” (Swedish-speaking) elite, explains many of the tensions in literature which are so typical of Finnish literature of this period, and which differ profoundly from the tensions in a number of contemporary Western European literary traditions, in which authors could distance themselves more easily from the threatening working-class masses moving to the expanding cities (see, amongst others, Kemperink 2001: 109–146).

¹⁴³ As Kemperink points out in her study of Dutch literature of the turn of the century, Darwin’s original texts displayed a more optimistic view on evolution, but his ideas, in particular the notion of atavism, were developed by subsequent thinkers into a negative view of societal development; notable exponents of this widespread pessimistic social Darwinism were the French doctor B.A. Morel, the American psychologist G. Beard and Gustave Le Bon (Kemperink 2001: 11–76). Richard Lehan argues that naturalism was not entirely pessimistic, since it posited individual failures side by side with the upward evolution of the species as a whole (Lehan 1998: 53). Exemplary of such a naturalist optimism is Albert Hagen’s words, in Toivo Tarvas’s Eri tasoilta (“On Different Levels”; 1916a), concerning the great amount of first generation students who fail: “I believe that it [our nation] has a great future indeed, even though in building its future, several construction accidents will happen, which will demand human sacrifice…” (Tarvas 1916a: 246) (“Uskon, että sillä [kansallamme] on suurikin
modern city, it was thought that one and the same generation could not jump social classes; the move from the working class living in the countryside to the educated class living in the city had to be performed over a period spanning many generations, and if an individual wanted to enjoy the fruits of future generations too early, this carried an almost inevitable danger. For a member of the Finnish “race”, with its non-urban background and its specific nature-bound racial features, a move too quickly upward in society was thought to lead to degeneration. Not surprisingly, in this context, we find the protagonist of Hellaassa, an idealist-turned-cynic, sometime after his arrival in Helsinki reading Max Nordau, one of the most famous exponents of the Darwinist-inspired theories of decline and degeneration.144

In a number of stories of the 1910s, this social Darwinist dimension of the shock of arrival, which was visible in earlier writings, becomes explicitly spelled-out. In Maila Talvio’s Kultainen lyyra (“The Golden Lyre”; 1916), the two competing positions concerning the protagonist’s, Helmi’s, imminent move to Helsinki are voiced by stereotypical characters given opposing speeches at the protagonist’s graduation party. While the local agronomist attacks the city and its degenerating influence, a young female native of Helsinki defends the importance of the capital for the nation. The speech criticizing the city accuses Helsinki of bleeding the countryside dry, and warns that moving to the city is not without its dangers:

[...]

144 Since Hellaassa appeared two years before the appearance of Nordau’s influential Entartung (Degeneration; 1892), the work meant here is probably Die konventionellen Lügen der Kulturmenschheit (The Conventional Lies of Our Civilization; 1884), which was translated into Swedish and well-known in Finland (see Lappalainen 2000: 21).
displacement, and that new soil – not all saplings are able to endure that. (Talvio 1916: 38)\textsuperscript{145}

In reaction to this speech, the city girl Pirsta (Birgitta) accuses provincials of considering the city as an abscess that has to be operated from a healthy body; in her opinion, the city constitutes the brains to the body, made up of the countryside (Talvio 1916: 39).\textsuperscript{146} The terms in which Pirsta defends the city make use of the metaphorization of the city as body, a metaphorization which is frequently used to couch criticism of the city (see 2.1.), and appropriated by the young city woman in defence of the capital. In \textit{Kultainen lyyra}, competing views of the city inform the narrative from the beginning to the end. Eventually, Helmi, utterly fatigued by her exertions in the city, returns home to die at the farmstead of her parents, the same house that had been the setting for the graduation party. In a delirium, she imagines how at her funeral, the agronomist reiterates his earlier warnings: “Do you see it now; she could not stand the displacement. Even trees need a schooling time before they can adapt. She couldn’t stand it.” (Talvio 1916: 181)\textsuperscript{147}

The shocking and debilitating experience of arrival in turn-of-the-century Finnish literature is thus closely related to prevailing thoughts grounded on social Darwinism, and voiced in naturalist and decadent paradigms on which these novels and short stories draw. The idea of the Young Man or Woman

\textsuperscript{145} “[…] tuo siirto ruumiillista työtä tekevästä luokasta henkisen työn luokkaan ei suinkaan aina asianomaisille itselleenkään ole mitään leikintekoa. Se voi olla suorastaan vaarallista sekä sielulle että ruumiille. Se siirto, se siirto ja se uusi maaperä – kaikki taimet eivät sitä kestä.”

\textsuperscript{146} In the much earlier novel \textit{Aili}, a similar positive image of Helsinki as bodily part of the country is voiced, when young Aili, recently arrived in the capital, ponders that Helsinki is “after all the heart, whose beats feed life into the whole country, the focal point, where everything that was grand and beautiful in Finland came together” (Talvio 1897: 128). (“Helsinki oli sittenkin sydän, jonka lyönnistä eli koko maa, polttopiste, johon yhtyi kaikki mitä oli suurta, kauniista Suomessa.”)

\textsuperscript{147} “Katsokaa nyt, hän ei kestänyt siirtoa. Puutkin käyvät läpi koulun, ennen kuin tottuvat. Hän ei kestänyt.”

A similar gloomy image is given in Toivo Tarvas’s novel \textit{Kohtalon tuulissa} (“The Winds of Fate”), which appeared in the same year as Talvio’s \textit{Kultainen lyyra}, 1916. In Tarvas’s novel, one of the characters ponders the losses suffered by displacing people from physical to mental work:

“Of course, there were also abundant numbers of tough and strong characters amongst the youngsters of the countryside and the poor of the cities, people who were able to bear with success the displacement from practising physical work to practising mental work, but the sacrifices that were made felt out of proportion.” (Tarvas 1916b: 45).

(“Olihan maaseudun nuorisoissa ja kaupunkien varattomissa äärettömät määrät kunnollisia, hujia luonteita, jotka menestyksellä kestävät siirron ruumiillisen työn tekijöistä henkisen työn tekijöihin, mutta tappiot olivat sittenkin liian tuntuvat.”)

In L. Onerva’s collection of short stories \textit{Nousukkaita} (“Parvenus”; 1911) some of the characters explicitly state that the first parvenu generation is lost, and that only the second will be able to take up the challenges (and reap the fruits) of modern society.
from the Provinces as a young sapling displaced violently from its native (and Finnish-speaking) soil, into an alien ground, and of the necessary shock this transplantation must have for the individuals in question, is found repeatedly in Finnish prose stories as well as in poetry in the early twentieth century (see Molarius 1998a: 103–106). The recourse to metaphors or similes from nature to describe this urban experience (“saplings” and “soil”) further adds to the sense of displacement from a natural environment, as in the excerpt from Vaikea tie quoted earlier, in which the protagonist, Markus, is described as “a tree wrenched from its roots, without any certainty to turn to, and susceptible to every gust of wind” (1915: 6).

3.5.3 ARRIVAL AND THE PARALYZING CITY

In Aho’s Helsinkiin, the disorientation and immobilisation of the main character had been initiated during the railway journey to Helsinki. The description of the first confrontation with the Finnish capital in terms of an immobilising experience recurs in several Finnish prose texts from the turn of the twentieth century. One notable example is provided by Arvid Järnefelt’s Nuoruuteni muistelmia (“Memories of my Youth”; 1919), a novel written under the pseudonym of Hilja Kahila. Nuoruuteni muistelmia is a work of popular fiction, which recycled a number of earlier motifs from the Young Man/Woman from the Provinces repertoire. In this novel, the young protagonist Hilja travels by train to Helsinki in search of work, and in search of the boy she secretly loves. As in a number of other Finnish Young Man/Woman from the Provinces novels, the arrival in the city comes quite late, some 100 pages into the novel. In Hilja’s imagination, which is fed by the stories of her more experienced friend Sanna, Helsinki appears as an exciting, fairy-tale like world, constituted by contradictory elements: a “magic mixture of winter and summer, of night and day, of the sun and of white lamps” (Järnefelt 1919: 78). The train journey to the capital constitutes Hilja’s initiation into the big unknown, and the disorientating effect is immediate and drastic. The swiftness of the movement, the strange sounds and the unknown future ahead all combine into an overwhelming feeling of alienation, unrest and disorientation:

148 The characters most clearly and explicitly described as tragic first generation students are arguably Urho Koskula, in Toivo Tarvas Eri tasoilta (“On Different Levels”; 1916a; see, in particular, Tarvas 1916a: 89-90), and Pentti Korjus in L. Onerva’s Nousukkaita (“Parvenus”; 1911).

149 For more on the authorship question concerning Hilja Kahila, see Oja 2007 (and, more generally, Karkama 2010: 516). While the first novel written by Järnefelt under this pseudonym was a commercial success, believed to be written by a woman, the real identity of the author was widely known by the time of Nuoruuteni muistelmia (Oja 2007: 123–124).

150 “[…] taikamainen sekoitus tulvasta ja kesästä, yöstä ja päivästä, auringosta ja valkoisista lampuista […]”
It was the first time I travelled by train. The strange rattle and the frightful bustle I could see through the window were about to make my mind go mad, when everything was already completely topsy-turvy in my head: the unknown future, my receding home, the spectre of the city drawing near [...]. Eventually I couldn’t understand anything anymore, couldn’t remember where I was taken; I was unable to grasp the terrible rattle below and above and around me, and was incapable of thinking at all. (Järnefelt 1919: 99)¹⁵¹

The all-encompassing strangeness of the events, concertedly made up of sounds, movement and visual impressions, renders even thinking and trying to make sense of the received impulses impossible.

One concept with which to describe the loss of agency of the protagonist during the journey visible in the citation from Nuoruuteni muistelmia is that of the “agent road”, a concept proposed by Hans Ulrich Gumbrecht in connection to Zola’s Rougon-Macquart series (Gumbrecht 2006). Following Gumbrecht, the concept of the “agent road” can be defined as a road which takes on the character of a narrative function, defining the protagonists’ movements as well as providing them with a sense of purpose or direction (Gumbrecht 2006: 641). A loss of agency from the part of the protagonists is involved in this process of mobility: the road, as it where, takes over the initiative, and the protagonists are assigned a passive role; the agent road itself dominates the direction in which the narration moves. Gumbrecht uses the examples of feverishly onwards marching insurgents, and of the train engine let loose at the end of La Bête humaine (The Beast in Man; 1890).

There are numerous examples of agent roads connected to Helsinki in Finnish turn of the century prose texts, and the railway to the capital features most prominently amongst these. The railway taking Antti Ljungberg to Helsinki, in Juhani Aho’s Helsinkiin, takes on aspects of agency and leaves the protagonist bereft of initiative or any sense of directions, and the same can be said of the road taken by Hilja in the extract above. Perhaps the clearest example of the railway leading to Helsinki as an agent road is found in Arvid Järnefelt’s student novel Isänmaa (1893/1997), in which the protagonist, Heikki, returns to Helsinki in the middle of the novel, full of a sense of doubt and foreboding. Until the last moment before boarding the train, he is unsure whether he should, in fact, leave his home behind, but the urgency of the waiting train leaves him no free choice: “The train decided in

¹⁵¹ “Junamatkalla olin ensikertaa elämässäni. Outo kolina ja hirmuinen vilinä ikkunoisissa oli saattaa aivoni sekaisin, kun päissäni jo ennestään olivat kaikki asiat mullin mallin: tuntematon tulevaisuus, etevenä koti, lähestyvä kaupungin kummitus. [...] Lopulta en ymmärtänyt enää mitään, en muistanut minne minua viettiin, en käsitännyt hurjaa kolinaa allani, ylläni ja sivuillani, enkä osannut ajatella mitään.”
his stead” (Järnefelt 1893/1997: 14). Heikki boards the train to fulfil his destiny in the capital.

Significantly, in a number of novels, the loss of agency is not only set in motion when the protagonist sets out for the capital, but continues upon and after arrival. Further restrictions on free movement and independent decisions await the protagonist in the city, where his or her future course is set out by pre-determined factors. When Hilja, in Järnefelt’s *Nuoruuteni muistelmia*, arrives in Helsinki, her self-confidence is not decisively shaken by the disorientating impressions endured during the train trip. On the contrary, she feels excitement when, together with her friend Sanna, she walks to the large door opening towards the “murmuring city” (Järnefelt 1919: 103). The two young women are not able to freely discover the city, however: Hilja and Sanna are awaited by some men in whom the reader can easily discern police constables come to arrest them for the thefts Sanna has committed during the journey. Hilja does not realize what is going on when they are taken to the police gaol, even when she eventually gets locked up. Her inability to read the environment during the train trip continues and is taken to a next, potentially more dangerous level, and although Hilja is soon released without much further ado, the episode bodes ill for her future developments in the novel. During Hilja’s first days in Helsinki, she follows her mistress, Mrs. Johansson, around town, and her feelings of disorientation continue unabated. Her impressions of the city are described as if she were numbed or sleep-walking (ibid.: 110–111), and the effect of these sentiments of disorientation and alienation is a hatred of the urban spectacle, and an acute homesickness (ibid.: 117).

In Eino Leino’s novel *Jaana Rönty* (1907), which will be discussed in more detail in the next chapter, the arrival of the protagonist Jaana also culminates in an introduction into disorientating urban space. Like Hilja (and like Maila Talvio’s *Helsinkin*’s Anna-Kaisa, or Hilda Tihlä’s Leeni), Jaana is a poor girl from the countryside. Jaana comes to Helsinki alone, without concrete knowledge of where she is going to find work or lodging. For a long day, she wanders through the strange city. Amidst an unknown urban environment, Jaana is like a child taking its first steps, and her feeling of being unable to relate to this new environment is increased by the fact that people in Helsinki speak a language she does not understand (Leino 1907/1998: 189–192). Her first experiences in the big city are crushing: in a few days, “her self-confidence had disappeared completely” (ibid.: 192). Through a chance meeting, she is offered a job, and Jaana is excited and delighted at the prospect that her insecurity has come to an end. To the reader, however, it soon becomes clear that she has been sent to a brothel.

---

152 “Juna päätty hänen puolestaan.”
153 “[…] humisevan kaupungin suurta ovea kohden.”
154 “Hänen itseluottamuksensa oli kokonaan mennyt.”
transformation she has to undergo: as if she is prepared for the role of sacrifice – a role which she will eventually be forced to take on – she has to change clothes and her name is transformed into a more fitting “Hildur” (ibid.: 197–198, 209). Jaana is saved, before anything tragic can happen by an elderly gentleman, Baron Manfelt, who will play a considerable role throughout the novel, during strikingly similar, but much more eventful crises. The profoundly gendered and socially defined characteristics of Helsinki’s urban public space, and the challenges this offered for the literary characters that gradually become acquainted with the city in the novels written during the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, will be the focus of the next chapter.

3.6 AN EXPERIENCE OF SHOCK: CONCLUSION

In the course of the journey to the capital, various distances are crossed: there is, of course, the geographical distance between countryside (or provincial town) and the capital, the social divide between the family’s and the individual’s world, and the temporal distance between the past and the future. There is also the distance between two visions of the fatherland: the idea of service to the fatherland through education and work in the capital, and on the other hand the idea of service to the fatherland on what literally is the “father’s land”, the farmland awaiting the return home of the master’s son (see Järnefelt’s Isänmaa; 1893). In the experience of arrival, such juxtaposing visions of the protagonists’ future development are put to the test, and most commonly, ill-bearing premonitions appear. A number of factors conspire to construct a profoundly negative experience of arrival in most of the Finnish prose texts in this period: arrival in Helsinki is often related to gloomy autumn weather conditions, and the sense of alienation and disorientation felt by Finnish-speaking newcomers is further augmented by the added effect of hearing foreign languages spoken in the capital. The insecurity felt by so many of the protagonists in these texts is partly due to a very physical insecurity: the lack of a home in the city, a condition that was enhanced by the loss of the parental home in the countryside. Moreover, the disorientation and alienation felt by the protagonists can be seen on a

155 In later literature, too, the countryside appears as both literally the father’s land and the fatherland; see Arvi Kivimaa’s Hetki ikuisen edessä (“A Moment before Eternity”; 1932: 181).

156 The language disorientation is logically absent in Aho’s Helsinkiin, where the protagonist, Antti Ljungberg, is a fluent speaker of Swedish, using Swedish rather than Finnish at home, similarly to Henrik in Järnefelt’s Veljekset. To the protagonist in Vaikea tie, the predominance of Swedish at the Helsinki University must be read in the context of the disappointment of a Fennoman idealist at being reminded of the continuing hegemonic position of the Swedish language in the capital’s educated circles. Apart from Swedish, also Russian could be seen and heard in the Finnish capital.
broader level: their in-betweenness in the capital was that of a whole new emerging class in society.

While there are clear pessimistic undertones in the description of arrival in Helsinki in Juhani Aho’s Helsinkiin and later Finnish prose texts, more positive images of the city as an essentially dynamic and energizing environment are simultaneously visible. This complex dualist character of the urban experience relates the literature of Helsinki to contemporary international ways of writing the city. In naturalist literature written in German, for example, Berlin appears not only as the focal point of social criticism, but also as the dynamic and vitalist centrum of the modern world, the centre of life itself. This ambiguous dynamism attached to the image of the city finds its expression, in naturalist descriptions of the German capital, in recurring sudden light effects and harsh colours (see Martens 1971: 80–81). Similarly, in Helsinkiin, the contradictory experiences related to arrival in the Finnish capital are accompanied by images of sudden and highly stylized light effects (the horizon of Helsinki, “blazing red like a fire” [Aho 1889/1997: 80]; the clair-obsure effects in descriptions of Kappeli, amongst others). Such instances demonstrate the extent to which specific urban experiences invite a particular kind of aestheticization of the city in literature.

The prose texts analysed in this chapter vividly illustrate how the first experiences of the city are defined by a sense of shock, resulting in inability to move independently or freely, and even in a sense of paralysis. In Helsinkiin, Antti Ljungberg feels he is unable to move and his knee-joints feel like jelly when he arrives in the capital (Aho 1889/1997: 80); in Vaikea tie, Markus descends into apathy after returning to Helsinki, and he leads a “vegetative life”, muffling “his paralyzed mind like fluffy feathers” with alcohol and music (Wilkuna 1915: 7); Hilja, in Nuoruuteni muistelmia, is so overwhelmed by the train journey to Helsinki that she becomes “incapable of thinking at all” (Järnefelt 1919: 99). The disorientating effect of the city is all the more striking given the fact that a sense of mobility is what defines the Young Men and Women that arrive in Helsinki around the turn of the century. They are brought to the capital and transported within it by the new mobility offered by the railway network and trams, and it is the dreams of an upward social mobility that spur them on. In many of the crucial Finnish texts thematizing the experience of the city in this period, modes of transport and images of mobility acquire more than mere symbolic status. They are central to the development of the provincial protagonists in the city – a development which is a journey both socially and geographically. Franco Moretti has aptly stated that what differentiates the city – and in consequence, also urban literature – from other forms of human residence and their literary representations, is “that its spatial structure [...] is functional to the intensification of mobility: spatial mobility, naturally enough, but mainly social mobility” (Moretti 1983/2005: 111). Although the
journey to the city is often experienced as exciting and encouraging by the protagonist, potentially foreshadowing the social rise he or she hopes for, the images of speed and mobility are also connected to the protagonist’s future downfall – to his or her alienation and degeneration.

The idea that the experience of the modern city is essentially an experience of shock can be considered as a classical assumption in writing on urbanity, going back to Walter Benjamin’s writing (Benjamin 2006), which in turn were partly inspired by Georg Simmel (1903/1969). In their writings, an experience of shock amounts to the quintessential condition of urban life: Simmel, in particular, famously claims that the “psychological basis of the metropolitain type of individuality consists in the intensification of nervous stimulation which results from the swift and uninterrupted change of outer and inner stimuli” (Simmel 1903/1969: 48; original emphasis; see also Alter 2005: 25).157 Walter Benjamin’s further development of what has been called a “theory of shock” (Jennings 2006: 14–15) and even an “aesthetics of shock” (Alter 2005: 25; Borg 2011: 46–50) to define the modern urban experience has become widely influential for the way the city in literature is read, to the extent that it has been called by Franco Moretti the “sancta sanctorum of literary criticism” (Moretti 1983/2005: 109).

For Benjamin, Simmel and theorists writing in their wake, the shock of urbanity is something which is part of the everyday experience of the city – something city dwellers are used to encounter on an almost daily basis, an experience which they could even rejoice in.158 The shock inherent to the urban experience was for Benjamin related to the experience of the flâneur: an experience that was fundamentally related to free urban mobility, of aimless and leisurely trajectories through the city performed while “botanizing on the asphalt” (Benjamin 2006: 68).159 Such an essentially mundane urban experience can be considered the exact opposite of the shock experienced by Young Men and Women arriving in the capital. The shock felt most profoundly by the literary protagonists in these novels and prose texts is not the shock related to the everyday experience of the modern city, grounded in the mobility of the flâneur who is able to rejoice in it. It is a shock felt by characters crossing the threshold into modernity, the dizzying

157 Simmel was writing not of the literary city, but of the condition of living in a contemporary metropolis, while Benjamin was writing both about literary representations of the city and about the actual experience of the city in Baudelaire’s time. Benjamin’s writing on the Paris of the Second Empire can, of course, also be read as a commentary on contemporary, 1920s and 1930s city life (see Jennings 2006: 24–25).

158 Moretti has sharply criticized such an idea of urban everyday reality in his article “Homo Palpitans” (1983/2005), and his critique resounds also in the work of later scholars of the literary city (see Wirth-Nesher 1996: 7).

159 “His [Baudelaire’s] experience of the crowd bore the traces of the ‘heartache and the thousand natural shocks’ which a pedestrian suffers in the bustle of a city and which keeps his self-awareness all the more alert.” (Benjamin 2006: 91)
experience of the metropolis’ violent maelstrom. As such, it has a tremendous impact on their mobility, and on their ability to orientate themselves: arrived in the middle of the disconcerting modern urban spectacle, earlier directions and guidelines lose their meaning, and new bearings have to be taken.

The descriptions of arrival in the Finnish capital found in Juhani Aho’s *Helsinkiin* and in prose of the turn of the century are further developed in the prose of the 1920s and 1930s. Scenes of disorientating arrival in the capital appear, for example, in Arvi Kivimaa’s *Hetki ikuisen edessä* (“A Moment before Eternity”; 1932: 25), and several of Mika Waltari’s Helsinki novels feature an incapacitating shock of arrival in the Finnish capital. The most extensively described example is the arrival, in *Surun ja ilon kaupunki* (“City of Sorrow and Joy”; 1936), of an unnamed provincial at the Helsinki railway station:

And now he walks along the platform, one person amongst the busy chaos of a few hundred other arrivals. The shadow of the canopy disheartens him, in a flash he feels inconsolably the meaninglessness of all his endeavours, his strength abandons him, he blackens out and he slumps as he follows the crowd of travellers to the broad granite stairs. The square opens up in front of him, he stops at the foot of a giant pillar, the sun shines into his eyes like a blinding fire, he is lost and timid. [...] 

There are a quarter of a million people around the unknown man, within a range of a few kilometres, as he leans against the granite pillar of the railway station, exhausted, abandoned by his strength, and without hope. (Waltari 1936: 18–19)

The image of arrival in the utterly disorientating and paralyzing capital has remained influential throughout the twentieth century and into the present one, both in renderings of Helsinki in literature, as well as in movies and popular literature. Many of the later descriptions of paralyzing arrival can be considered at least partly as conscious pastiches of the *topoi* that had come into being at the turn of the twentieth century. One of the more recent examples is the opening scene of Mikko Rimminen’s 2007 novel *Pölkky*

---

160 “Nyt hän kävelee asemasilttaa pitkin yhtenä parinsadan muun tulijan kiireisessä sekasorrossa. Katoksen varjo lannistaa häntä, silmänräpäyksen ajan hän tuntee lohduttomasti kaiken ponnistuksensa tarkoituksottomuuden, voima hylkää hänet, hän sammuu ja lyhistyy seuraten matkustajajoukkoa leveille granittiportaille. Tori leviää hänen eteensä, hän pysähtyy jättäisypylväään juurelle, aurinko paistaa hänen silmiinsä sokaisevana tulena, hän on neuvoton ja arka. [...] 

Neljännesmiljoona ihmistä on tuntemattoman miehen ympärillä muutaman kilometrin piirissä hänen nojatessaan aseman granittiypylvääseen sammuneena, voimansa hylkäämänä ja toivottomana.”

The Shock of Arrival. Expectations and First Impressions of the City

(“Woodblock”), which is structured as a page-long description of a (supposedly provincial) character’s arrival at the Helsinki railway station, and his utter inability to conform to the urban texture he is confronted with.
Both of us are falling, like two ripened apples, from the Finnish family tree. And where do we fall? World culture! That is where we belong, not the asphalt of the Esplanade. (Leino 1960: 42)\textsuperscript{162}

When Eino Leino\textsuperscript{163} wrote these lines in 1908 in a private letter to fellow author (and beloved) L. Onerva, the figure of speech he used in the last sentence was a well-established one. In the letter, the asphalt of the Esplanade is used to refer to the whole of the Helsinki Esplanade, which in turn refers to Helsinki itself. It was a figure of speech that could be used to various effects: in this particular case, the Esplanade refers not only to Helsinki, but more generally to the provincial literary and cultural circles in Finland, as opposed to the international cultural movements to which Leino and Onerva felt attracted. In all of the manifold uses that will be discussed in this chapter, the metonymical relationship remains the same: Helsinki is repeatedly identified with what amounts to its most prominent public space – the centrally located Esplanade.

Physically and geographically speaking, the elegant Northern and Southern Esplanades, and the park running between them, are situated at the heart of the city’s centre, parallel to one of the main streets (Aleksanterinkatu).\textsuperscript{164} Located immediately at the eastern edge of the Esplanade is the Market Square, one of the commercial landmarks of the city, which around the turn of the century presented a particularly bustling scene in the mornings (in literature, see for example Tihiä’s Leeni (“Leeni”; 1907: 110–112; Leino’s Pankkiherroja (“Bank Lords”; 1914: 201). Someone

\textsuperscript{162} “Me putoamme molemmat kuin kaksi kypsää omenaa yhteissuomalaisesta sukupuusta. Minne? Maailmankulttuurin! Siellä on meidän paikkamme eikä Esplanaadin asfaltilla.”

\textsuperscript{163} Eino Leino (1878–1926) is today remembered as one of the most significant poets in Finnish literary history. His birthday (6th of June) is celebrated as the festive day of Finnish poetry (and summer). Leino’s poems are still widely read and frequently adapted to music. His two collections of Helkavirsii (Whitsongs; 1903, 1912), in particular, have been canonized as ingenious syntheses of Finnish national-romantic material and international symbolist movements. His work as a journalist, columnist and prose author, however, has traditionally attracted less attention. Critics of Leino’s prose have condemned his novels’ lack of coherence, their overcrowded plots and their seemingly random turns of events. As a prose author, Leino has been seen as a clumsy dragoon, fallen of his horse, however gracefully he might have managed to ride proud Pegasus in his lyrical output (Palmgren 1950: 23; Molarius 1998c: vii). Recent decades, however, have seen a modest increase in the academic interest in Leino’s prose output.

\textsuperscript{164} In Maila Talvio’s 1910 novel Tähtien alla (“Under the Stars”), both streets are mentioned together as the symbolic centre of Helsinki.
standing in this period in the middle of the Market Square would see to his or her immediate north the famous hotel Seurahuone (today the City Hall), which features as the setting for sumptuous dinners in several prose texts (for example Ivalo’s Aikansa lapsipuoli [“Stepchild of his Time”]; 1895: 248–252; E. Leino’s Olli Suurpää [“Olli Suurpää”; 1908/1998: 337, 498). Passing the statue of Havis Amanda, the embodiment of Helsinki, which was erected in 1908, the city walker could stroll to the restaurant Kappeli, a few steps away, opposite of which stood a band stand which provided the soundtrack of numerous evening walks described in literature. Lining the Esplanade on both sides were a number of cafés, restaurants and music halls that constitute the setting for Helsinki’s colourful social life. Turn-of-the-century literature evokes the Esplanade’s nightlife through descriptions of music hall shows at the restaurant Princess (Wilkuna’s Vaikea tie [“The Difficult Road”]; 1915: 42), dinners and drinks at Kämp (E. Leino’s Olli Suurpää [1908/1998]: 394–396), and passionate talks of the young avant-garde at the famous café Catani (E. Leino’s “Päivä Helsingissä” [“A Day in Helsinki”]; 1905: 55–70). Along the route, a leisurely stroller would also see the very first statue in the capital, that of the national poet J.L. Runeberg, erected in 1885.

This chapter analyses how Helsinki’s public space was experienced through the prism of the Esplanade, in particular in relation to representations of walking – that “network of [...] moving, intersecting writings” (de Certeau 1984: 93), performed by city walkers in literary texts in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries. In the literature written during these years, the Esplanade appears as an iconic spatial environment, but also as a highly stratified space to which multiple meanings are attached, with profound social, linguistic, political and gendered implications. After an introductory exploration of the Esplanade and its function as a setting for a bourgeois (and male) ritual, the experiences of the female protagonist in Eino Leino’s novel Jaana Rönty (“Jaana Rönty”; 1907) will be analysed in detail. Comparing one particularly revealing scene set at the Esplanade in this novel with other experiences of Helsinki’s public space in literature will enable a reconstruction of the unwritten rules, conventions and expectations that

165 For an architectural and cultural-historical approach to the Esplanade, see Lilius 1984 and Kervanto-Nevanlinna 2003b, respectively. Many of the prominent turn-of-the-century Finnish authors, Eino Leino in particular, were regular visitors of the cafés and restaurants lining the Esplanade (see Krohn 1993; Larmola 2000; Hirn 2007: 69).

166 The oldest public monument in Helsinki is the Empress’ tone (1835), located at the Market Square. Quite fittingly, Eino Leino, too, is eternalized in a statue at the Esplanade, erected in 1953; this statue is situated next to that of the writer Topelius (erected in 1932). In the year 2005, the absence of female authors in the monumental space of the Esplanade was put into question by a temporary statue of L. Onerva.

One of Helsinki’s other famous monuments situated close to the Esplanade is the statue of Czar Alexander II on the Senate Square, erected in 1894.
inform the use of public space in literary Helsinki around the turn of the century.

4.1 A SHORTHAND EXPRESSION FOR THE CITY

In novels and short stories set in Helsinki around the turn of the century, the Esplanade is omnipresent. It appears as a prism through which one approaches the Finnish capital: a metonymical representation of the whole city. Literature tends to contain one or more iconic spatial environments that are recognized immediately by the intended audience, and that are understood to represent the city as a whole. In their discussion of symbolic representations of American cities, Richard Wohl and Anselm Strauss call such a metonymically used space a “coded, shorthand expression” for the city, and they give the New York skyline as a prototypical example from the American context (Wohl & Strauss 1958: 526). A novel which opens with such an iconic setting immerses the reader or spectator in a specific geographical location, but potentially also in a social and/or political context, and in a recognizable narrative environment: the case of the New York skyline, for example, might entail expectations of a story of arrival in the city. In a wide range of Finnish prose texts, the Esplanade functions as a similar “shorthand expression”, a means of spatially framing the narration in a succinct and comprehensible manner. This holds true in particular when the setting of the Esplanade is placed immediately at the beginning of the novel or short story, or in relation to the first mention of a particular character. An early example of the way in which the Esplanade is metonymically used in literature can be found in Arvid Järnefelt’s student novel Isänmaa (“The Fatherland”; 1893), in which the protagonist, Heikki, imagines the Finnish capital to which he will return the following day. The images he evokes are those of the autumnal Esplanade:

But now the summer drew to a close. Tomorrow he would have left these quiet regions and a restless city wind would be blowing around him. Autumn clothes, hats, gloves and the Esplanade with its restaurant Kappeli and its electric lights – – ! (Järnefelt 1893/1997: 151)

167 In Finnish newspapers around the turn of the twentieth century, numerous examples can be found of such metonymic use of the Esplanade as shorthand for Helsinki (see for example Alkio 1909). An interesting example is found in a song printed in a working-class periodical, describing the visit of the devil to Helsinki. The song opens with the lines “I stepped down from the skies / and arrived at Helsinki’s Esplanade” (Jääskeläinen 1899) (“Alas ilmojen mailta ma astahdin / Tulin Helsingin Espikselle.”).

168 “Mutta nyt oli kesä päättynyt. Huomenna olisivat nämä hiljaiset seudut jo jätetyt ja puhaltamassa levoton kaupunkilaistuuli. Syys-toaletit, hatut, hansikkaat, esplanadi kappelineen ja sähkövaloineen – – !”
Together, these seemingly disconnected references (autumn fashion, modern electric lights, the Esplanade and its famous restaurant Kappeli) crystallize into an image of a modern and European metropolis, which is experienced as an unnerving and hectic environment (“restless city wind”). In the passage quoted, the ambiguous nature of the city and the conflicting promises and premonitions attached to it are summed up by an evocation of the Esplanade. It is a setting that also constitutes the central locality in the prototypical first experiences of Helsinki described in Juhani Aho’s Helsinkiin (“To Helsinki”; 1889), which is discussed at length in the previous chapter.

In the example from Järnefelt’s Isänmaa, the use of a shorthand spatial setting functions as a device to plunge the reader in the midst of a (supposedly) familiar environment. Typically, the Esplanade and the atmosphere that happens to reign there – be it climatic, or with reference to the crowds walking and gathering there – is juxtaposed with the mood of the protagonist, in a description that either correlates or contrasts with his or her feelings. In a number of texts, a juxtaposition between the Esplanade atmosphere and the characters’ mood occurs at the very beginning of the narration, in which case it provides a whole condensed story, past or future, of the protagonist’s relationship vis-à-vis the city and the urban community. The opening lines of a short story written by Kasimir Leino, published in 1889 and thus one of the earliest instances from Finnish-written

---

169 Heikki is about to return from the countryside, where he has spent the summer living in with a family, employed as a private teacher. One of the reasons why he finds the idea of a return to the capital depressing is that it will entail a rupture in the delicate balance between him and the family’s daughter, whom he loves.

170 Such a juxtaposition was sometimes used to describe the mood of the protagonist in unison with that of the urban crowd at the Esplanade, but it could also be used to convey the opposite effect, and to describe the protagonist’s sense of forlornness. In Juhani Aho’s Yksin, the lonely protagonist feels repulsed by the spectacle of the Esplanade (Aho 1890/2003: 15). Towards the end of Järnefelt’s Isänmaa, Heikki walks along the Esplanade during the first bright spring days of the year, but feels acutely out of tune with the happiness and youth of the other people at the Esplanade (Järnefelt 1893/1997: 182–186). In L. Onerva’s novel Mirdja (“Mirdja”; 1908), the protagonist senses acute alienation and loneliness when walking through the celebrating Esplanade crowd on May Day (Onerva 1908: 105). In the much later novel Hetki ikuisen edessä (“A Moment before Eternity”; 1932), written by Arvi Kivimaa, the character Walter, who has just realized he has amassed enormous debts, looks out of the window of a hotel restaurant, from which he sees the carefree people at the Esplanade, and he hears the music playing at Kappeli (Kivimaa 1932: 56).

The juxtaposition between protagonist and Esplanade crowd could also be a device to enhance the social divisions separating a literary character from his/her surroundings. The first lines of Alpo Noponen’s 1894 newspaper sketch “Leikkikentältä asti” (“It Starts at the Playground”) juxtapose the unhappy protagonist Ms. Virtanen with the noisy crowd at the Esplanade. In Maila Talvio’s short story “Hämähäkki” (“Spider”; 1912), which is, like “Leikkikentältä asti”, a story concerning social inequality, the opening setting finds the two protagonists amidst a scene of May Day joy at the Esplanade.
literature, provide an illustrative example. The title, “Neron tähteet. Kuvaus pääkaupungista” (“The remains of a genius. A description of [or from] the capital”), gives crucial information concerning the background of the protagonist (he is a former genius), but also on how the reader is supposed to view the text: it is a “description of the capital”. The opening lines of the story do not give a panoramic view of the city, but focus on a very limited spatial environment:

There he sat again, hunched up in his habitual place next to the music pavilion in front of the Esplanade’s Kappeli. The weather was not exactly favourable... a silent drizzle was constantly pouring down from the sky. And this was also the reason why there were not a lot of people to be seen, listening to the music. Those who were about ushered themselves hurriedly under the roof, ordered a glass of warm “rum toddy”, hot punch or something similar, so as to remain warm at all. And they were not content with that, but told the [...] wine chef to bring one of those simple blankets, which the people at Kappeli used to wrap around their legs in cold weather.

But that man, cloaked in his long and shabby, black overcoat, just sat there freezing on his hard and wet bench. (K. Leino 1889)

As the title suggests, the old man sitting in the cold in front of Kappeli is not more than the remains of a musical genius, poor and alone, with nothing left but to listen to the music being played at the music pavilion. The gloomy weather conditions contrast with the cosy spirit of people huddling together under the roof of Kappeli, which in turn contrasts with the lonely, excluded protagonist, cold, and only flimsily protected against the fury of the elements. Bearing in mind that the subtitle of the story is “a description of the capital”, Helsinki is put down as an inhospitable place with dreary weather

171 This short story belongs to a genre typically used for descriptions of the capital: the literary sketch, a genre that became particularly widespread in popular newspapers, and that has a long tradition in describing Paris (see Wilson 1992: 96). Closer to Helsinki, the late nineteenth century also saw a proliferation of Stockholm sketches in the Swedish papers and literature (see Borg 2011: 138–164).


Mutta tuo pitkään ja kuluneeseen mustaan päälynsuttuun kääreyytynyt olento se vain istui hyypeysissään kovalla ja märällä penkillänsä.”
conditions. This vision would return time and again in literary descriptions of Helsinki, which set the first experiences of a protagonist arriving in the city against the background of grim autumn weather.173

In terms of imagined community and of geographical reality, Helsinki is conjured up at the beginning of Kasimir Leino’s short story as a very limited social and physical space: a small, exclusive group of bourgeois men gathering in the centre of Helsinki’s society life. This is one vision of the microcosm of the capital that would remain prominent in literary (and other) representations: Helsinki as a city of bourgeois leisure centred on the Esplanade. In “Neron tähteet”, the setting at the Esplanade serves to underscore the divide opening up between the lonely protagonist and the more successful inhabitants of the city. The mood of the protagonist and the scenery at the Esplanade could equally be used to convey the opposite: the confidence of a successful protagonist navigating the cold and unwelcoming Esplanade. This is the case in the opening lines of Olli Suurpää, a Helsinki novel written by Kasimir Leino’s younger brother, the famous poet Eino Leino. Eino Leino uses a number of elements reminiscent of Kasimir Leino’s “Neron tähteet” to juxtapose a literary protagonist with a cold winter evening at the Esplanade. The description of the protagonist and his surroundings, and its implications for the reading of the city as a symbolic space are strikingly different from “Neron tähteet”:

A strong and freezing wind blew through Helsinki’s boulevards. It was winter, but the snow had melted over and over again, and had eventually completely receded to yonder side of the clouds. The chilly cars of cabmen rolled over the cold cobble stones.

There were not a lot of people around, even though it was the normal hour for the evening walk, the moment just before the start of theatre plays and concerts. Families preferred to stay inside. Bachelors quickly slipped inside through pub doors.

Attorney-at-law Olli Suurpää sailed safely along the Northern Esplanade in his large Petersburg fur jacket. He had somehow supplied his mortal part perfectly against all the fluctuations of hot and cold. Nevertheless his eyes, too, were fixed particularly intensely on the two burning electric lamps in front of Kämp, lamps that he was able to discern already from afar as standing out from the light.

173 One of the most influential early Helsinki novels in Swedish, published in 1907 by Richard Malmberg (pseudonym Gustav Alm), is significantly entitled “Autumn Days” (Höstdagar; the subtitle was “en Helsingforshistoria”, a story of Helsinki; see Pedersen 2007: 154–157).
bundles projected outwards from the shop windows. He was on his way to a small, secret party meeting. (E. Leino 1908/1998: 333)\textsuperscript{174}

*Olli Suurpää*, like Kasimir Leino’s “Neron tähteet”, starts out with a description of the Esplanade as a Helsinki microcosm: the Finnish capital is reduced to its boulevards, and those, in turn, culminate in the bright lights of Kämp, to which all eyes are set (“his eyes, too”). It is a city of leisure and bright shop windows: of theatre plays, concerts, and cafés. But Helsinki is also, in this novel, a city with secretive forces jockeying for position in an increasingly volatile political climate. The season is not autumn, the time of decay and melancholy, but winter, a fitting setting for what in effect is a political allegory with the aim to depict Helsinki in the “Frost Years” (“routavuodet”), the years of Russian oppression at the beginning of the twentieth century. The seasonal conditions besetting the city can be linked to the afflictions at the heart of the body politic – the repressive policies of the Russian authorities, as well as the appeasing attitude of some of the Finnish political forces. In contrast to the first story, the protagonist has managed to supply “his mortal part perfectly against all the fluctuations of hot and cold”, but the ironic description may instil an observant reader with a sense of doubt as to how safely, really, Olli Suurpää is “sailing along the Esplanade”. It is particularly tempting to read the reference to the Petersburg fur jacket allegorically. In the chilly political climate which sets Finns against each other and against the Russian oppressors, Olli feels not in the least uneasy about protecting himself against the cold by an import from the Russian capital. This may be read as a premonition of future plot developments: towards the end of the novel, Olli Suurpää betrays the Finnish cause by accepting a position in the Russian-run administration.

In the two extracts above, Helsinki is introduced metonymically by way of the Esplanade, but in very different terms. In Kasimir Leino’s “Neron tähteet”, it appears as a cold city of leisure, exclusion and personal despair, centred on the Esplanade. In Eino Leino’s *Olli Suurpää* similar elements recur (city of leisure and artificial lights; geographically and socially confined environments; freezing cold), but with a political undertow.

\textsuperscript{174} “Jäinen viima puhalsi läpi Helsingin puistokatujen. Talvi oli, mutta lumi oli sulanut moneen kertaan ja lopuksi kokonaan unohtunut pilvien tuolle puoleen. Ajurien kärryt vierivät viluisina kylmillä katukivillä.

Ihmisiä ei näkynyt monta liikkeellä, vaikka oli tavallinen iltakävelyn tunti, hetki ennen teatterien ja konserttien alkamista. Perheet pysyivät mieluimmin kotonaan. Poikamiehet pujahtivat nopeasti kapakan ovesta sisälle.

4.2 A BOURGEOIS RITUAL: WALKING AS ENUNCIATION

In texts on Helsinki’s history or architecture, the Esplanade, the “nerve centre of the city’s mental life” (Suolahti 1949: 310) is described almost invariably through its physical appearances: the majestic buildings lining the thoroughfare, the music stand in front of Kappeli, the exotic touch added by the presence of palm trees around the turn of the twentieth century (see Järvenpää 2006), the restaurants which were often operated by foreign bakers, and the like. In literary texts, what receives most emphasis are the spatial narratives that stress the Esplanade’s role in Helsinki citizens’ interaction with each other. The Esplanade appears as a public space in which citizens’ need for display was channelled into a highly programmed ritual of walking, with distinct social, political and gendered implications.\(^{175}\) In prose texts of this period, walking the Esplanade appears as a crucial ritual with which to create and exhibit a sense of belonging to the capital – an enunciation with which the walker voices his inscription into a particular imagined society. In an early novel by Juhani Aho, *Papin rouva* ("The Parson’s Wife"; 1893/2000), for example, one of the characters is defined almost exclusively by mentioning that he is one of those who walk at the Esplanade at the appropriate time (Aho 1893/2000: 249). Almost invariably, the bourgeois ritual of walking the Esplanade in literary examples is explicitly bound up with a particular time in the (early) afternoon.

In the fragment from *Papin rouva*, the Esplanade-walker mentioned is identified by a term that is frequently used to describe a man strolling along the Esplanade: “keikari”, a word which is a close relative of the dandy. In one newspaper sketch describing the spectacle at the Esplanade, the fashion-savvy men strolling the Esplanade are described as “flâneuring” (“flaneeraavat”) and, echoing Baudelaire, the author of the text claims ironically that they, who spend their time idling, are in fact fulfilling their duty in “following their time” (Mikko 1893: 135). The ritual of walking the Esplanade is most often performed by individuals and families from the upper and middle classes, but in the literature of this period, it also carries gendered meanings: the walker on the Esplanade at the turn of the century is almost unvaryingly male.

Building on the thoughts of de Certeau concerning spatial narrations and the everyday (see section 2.4.), the Esplanade can be considered as a synecdoche not only in the way it represents, physically and geographically, the city of Helsinki, but in the way it is used by Helsinki citizens to enunciate

---

\(^{175}\) As Seppo Aura has pointed out in his study of episodes as analytical units with which to approach movement through the city, the experience of the Helsinki Esplanade is defined by a tension in the built environment that is created with the help of two powerful spatial reference points, the Swedish theatre and the Market Square. The temporal duration of a walk between these two is ideal for an episodic stroll (Aura 1989: 141).
their belonging (or endeavour at belonging) to a larger urban community. De Certeau argues that everyday activities are enunciative: they are practices that speak in similar ways as words that are uttered. In this sense, walking can be seen to exhibit all three central dimensions of the speech act: it appropriates a given system; it concretizes one particular possibility amongst an infinite number of potential ones (in the case of walking, the chosen routes), and perhaps most importantly, it is part of a dialogue with other enunciations.

De Certeau points out that if walking is approached as an enunciation, particular kinds of walking can be interpreted as figures of speech; he notes, in particular, the peripatetic figures of speech of the *asyndeton* and the *synecdoche*. In relation to the Esplanade, the latter concept, which “expands a spatial element in order to make it play the role of a ‘more’ (a totality)” (de Certeau 1984: 101) is of particular interest. The Esplanade is used as a shorthand reference for Helsinki, and drawing on de Certeau’s terminology, a walk along the Esplanade can be seen also as a synecdochic spatial practice with which to carry out a dialogue vis-à-vis Helsinki. By walking the Esplanade, literary characters in a number of prose texts around the turn of the century can be seen to create a relation to urban public space in its totality: seeing and being seen, they inscribe themselves into a particular discourse on what it is to be a Helsinki citizen.

De Certeau’s concept of the synecdoche entails a process of knowledge gathering: in the complex and profoundly ambiguous context of the city, taking a part for the whole is an epistemological process of the first order (see Prendergast 1992: 210). The shorthand reference to the Esplanade at the beginning of a novel or short story has epistemological significance, first of all, for the reader, who is introduced to a larger context which is made knowable through reference to a (presumably) representative part. The synecdochic walk is also an epistemological endeavour from the part of the character who, by his enunciative walk, is becoming acquainted with the urban environment, and making his presence known in the process.

A telling example of walks as complex ways of enunciation can be found in a long soliloquy at the centre of Eino Leino’s novel *Olli Suurpää* (“Olli Suurpää”; 1908). As seen above, *Olli Suurpää* begins with a description of the eponymous protagonist walking along the Esplanade on his way to Kämp. As the novel proceeds, it becomes clear that a regular walk along the Esplanade at the appropriate time constitutes a central element in the everyday practices with which Olli tries to instil his life with a sense of stability; a bulwark against the troubling political and emotional upheavals he is faced with. Olli Suurpää is acutely aware of the importance of his everyday rituals, and in a long monologue he explains to himself that his claim to be a “real native of Helsinki” – even though he is not born in the city

176 In a letter to L. Onerva, Leino recounts how he identifies, up to a certain degree, with Olli Suurpää’s protagonist (Leino 1961: 35).
– is based on a set of everyday practices, amongst which a carefully performed and timed walk features prominently (Leino 1908/1998: 420–425). The internal monologue is rendered by the narrator in a profoundly satirical tone, which conveys to the reader an understanding that Olli’s routines are in reality not more than futile and superficial attempts at mental and social stability. The satirical element is taken to comic heights when Olli’s poodle, Matti, voices his opinions, and, echoing his master’s words, praiizes the Esplanade as the ideal environment to network and to “develop one’s soul through diverse and interesting conversations with the most noble dogs of the city, in whose company I, too, walk every day from the one end of the Northern Esplanade to the other, as solemn as my master does with his briefcase under his arm” (ibid.: 425).177

With their highly programmed walk along the Esplanade, Olli and his dog enunciate a particular kind of belonging to Helsinki bourgeois circles. In terms of the three speech act functions mentioned above, with their walk they appropriate the spatial language of Helsinki, and by walking the Esplanade at the proper time, they render to other Helsinki citizens the message they reiterate during their internal monologues: “I belong here”. They actualize a particular route, leaving other routes or places out of their daily practice; last, their walk at the Esplanade functions as a point of departure for routes and encounters with other walkers and spatial environments.

Typical of similar highly programmed walks along the Esplanade in literature of this period, Olli Suurpää’s leisurely promenade is not without its political undercurrents. The walk along the Esplanade, carefully timed to conform to the expected routines of a law-abiding citizen, constitutes a clearly understandable enunciation of support for the government in charge and for the political status quo. This is explicitly stated by Olli’s poodle, who in his part of the monologue strongly defends the political authorities in a statement that closely mirrors his master’s monologue:

But my sympathies are in this matter completely at the side of the legal authorities, which I see represented by so many of my equals at the Helsinki Esplanade. As long as the official institutions function, as long as the hand of the law performs its task meticulously and the people are unwaveringly faithful to the Emperor and to the Fatherland, I do not see any sensible reason why a peaceful citizen would turn to rebellious solicitude concerning the fate of the people and society. (Leino 1908/1998: 425–426)178

177 “[…] kehitellä sieluani vaihtelevilla ja sisältörikkailulla keskusteluilla kaupungin ylevimpien koirien kanssa, joiden seurassa minä puolestani astun joka päivä Pohjois-Esplanadin päästä päähän yhtä juhlassensa kuin konsanaan minun isäntäni salkku kainalossa.”
178 “Mutta minun myötätunteeni ovat tässä asiassa kokonaan sen laillisen esiavvan puolella, jota näen niin monen vertaiseni Helsingin esplanaadilla edustavan. Niin kauan kuin virkakunnat toimivat,
By performing his daily walk, Olli Suurpää and his dog are enunciating not only their desire to belong to Helsinki’s imagined urban community, but also their inscription into a particular political party programme: that of appeasing the Russian authorities, rather than choosing the headlong confrontation advocated by the Young Finn party to which Eino Leino himself was affiliated.\(^{179}\) In several novels by Arvid Järnefelt, the punctual and bourgeois Esplanade walker is similarly described as a representative of the conservative forces in society; this is the case in *Maaemon lapsia* (”Children of Mother Earth”; 1905: 137) as well as in *Veneh’ojalaiset* (“The Family Veneh’oja”; 1909/1996: 258–259, 263).

Taken to the utmost extreme, a small shift in the spatial synecdoche of walking the Esplanade, such as the change from one sidewalk to the other, could entail a drastic change in the city walker’s political sympathies. This is the case in a short story by Juhani Aho, which describes the opportunistic shifts in allegiance from Swedish-speaking to Finnish-speaking sympathies, acted out on the asphalt of the Esplanade. The struggle between Finnish- and Swedish-speaking parties for predominance is among the most prominent themes in Finnish literature of the late nineteenth century, in particular in student novels. Historically speaking, the language divide ran straight through the middle of the Esplanade: the Finland-Swedes were accustomed to walk the Northern Esplanade – the sunny side of the street – while the Finnish-speaking population would walk along the Southern Esplanade (Järvenpää 2006).\(^{180}\) One notable example in literature can be found in which explicit reference is made to the language question, and in which the Esplanade appears as a metonymical image of the field of Finnish party politics: Juhani Aho’s “Mallikelpoinen” (“An Exemplary Character”; 1890). In this short story, a walk along a particular part of the Esplanade symbolizes subscription to a whole political discourse.

The “exemplary character” who is the subject of Aho’s satirical short story is Mauritz Ahlfelt; a young, ambitious and unscrupulous character from a Swedish-speaking background who is ready to make all necessary concessions to further his political career.\(^{181}\) The very first thing the narrator

---

\(^{179}\) For Eino Leino’s involvement with the party struggles around the turn of the twentieth century, see Kunnas 1973; Vattulainen 1998.

\(^{180}\) In most literary representations of the Esplanade little is made of this spatial linguistic divide; in the opening lines of *Olli Suurpää* quoted above, the Finnish-speaking protagonist walks along the Northern Esplanade, and so do most of the literary characters in turn-of-the-century Finnish prose.

\(^{181}\) Intriguingly, several of the satirically rendered literary characters described as walking the Esplanade at the appropriate moment work as junior officials in the Finnish Senate. This is the case for a dandyesque character mentioned in Aho’s novel *Papin rouva* (Aho 1893/2000: 117) and for a
mentions about Mauritz is that he can be met regularly at the Esplanade, and the Esplanade constitutes a key part in this character’s daily routines.\footnote{The importance of the daily routine at the Esplanade is reiterated in a second short story by Aho featuring Mauritz Ahlfelt, “Hätääkärsivien hyväksi” ("For the Benefit of the Needy") in which the narrator states that we “all know Mauritz because of his office […] and from the Esplanade, where he habitually walks with his briefcase under his arm between two and three” (Aho 1891a). ("[…] jonka me kaikki tunnemme hänen virastostaan […]; ja Esplanadilta, missä hän salkku kainalossaan säännöllisesti kävelee kello kahden ja kolmen välillä […]")} It also functions, however, as a metonymical space symbolic of his political ambitions and for the direction he is going to take in the ongoing party-struggle. Towards the end of the story, the narrator concludes that it will not take long until Mauritz will move away from the Northern Esplanade to the “Finnspång” – a Swedish-language term which literally means the “Finnish path”, a term given to a stretch of the Southern Esplanade where the leaders of the Finnish-minded party were known to walk (Forsman et. al. 1925–1928: 895–896; Paunonen 2010: 162).\footnote{It should be added that Mauritz Ahlfelt’s linguistical and political accommodation does not end at the “Finnish path”; he is mentioned at the end of the story to be learning Russian.} Through reference to a minimal change in spatial practices in this highly symbolic space, the transfer from the Northern to the Southern Esplanade, a monumental political move is made tangible: for opportunistic motives, Mauritz joins the Finnish-speaking circles, where he will have better possibilities of advancing his career.

Incidentally, this was also the function of one of the most famous political activists in Finnish history: Eugen Schauman, who assassinated the Russian Governor-General in the staircase of the Senate (Schoolfield 1998: 108).
As is clear from the examples above, a walk along the Esplanade was not only far removed from the uninhibited wanderings of the flâneur, it was also anything but a challenge to existing hegemonic spatial strategies. Walking, similarly to any other everyday utterance or enunciation, can contest power structures as well as support them. This is something which de Certeau is clearly aware of, when he argues that “[w]alking affirms, suspects, tries out, transgresses, respects, etc., the trajectories it ‘speaks’” (de Certeau 1984: 99). Later critical geographers and literary scholars inspired by his (and Lefebvre’s) writings, often show an uninhibited optimism in their views of peripatetic practices, and tend to see everyday enunciations as positively marked ways of appropriation and contestation, set against the totalizing space of the city (see for example Borg 2011: 119). The numerous descriptions of walks along the Esplanade as a programmed bourgeois ritual in Finnish turn-of-the-century literature attest, however, to everyday enunciations’ potential to uphold power structures. It should be noted in this context that in several of the cases discussed above, the literary characters’ uncritical attitude towards totalizing spatial practices is generally not shared by the narrator. Mauritz Ahlfelt and Olli Suurpää are severely ridiculed, described in a satirical manner, and characterized as social and political arrivistes ready to compromise.

The laying out of the Esplanade as a central pedestrian promenade channelling the movements of the citizens has its counterparts in international and much larger urban projects: Stockholm’s Esplanade system (see Borg 2011: 72–85), and, of course, the massive remodelling of Paris by Baron Haussmann, and the London of John Nash. The grand-scale redevelopments of London and Paris, in particular, were an illustration of urban planning harnessed for socio-political purposes to channel potentially subversive pedestrian (and other) movement (see Lefebvre 1974/1991: 308; Harvey 1989b: 182; Sennett 1994: 329–332). Compared to these international examples, the scale encountered at the Esplanade was microscopic, but political and social dimensions were clearly present on the asphalt of the Esplanade in turn-of-the-century literature. Several male, middle class city walkers of the Esplanade are explicitly seen as upholding and enunciating a particular socio-political ideal, and the function relegated to the working-class crowds is to be in awe of the spectacle that is daily performed. This is expressed, for example, in a passage in the student novel Hellaassa (“In Hellas”; Ivalo 1890), in which a description of the well-to-do at the Esplanade is juxtaposed with the mention of “a considerable percentage of the capital’s maids and servants”, who “were standing in a densely grouped bunch in front and around the [Kappeli] bandstand” (Ivalo 1890: 109–110).184 Different classes were given very different roles in the daily spectacle at the Esplanade: in a space where such an importance was

184 “[…] iso prosentti pääkaupungin piikoja ja renkejä seisoi ahdetussa läjässä soittokomeron edustalla ja ympärillä.”
attached to the ritual of seeing and being seen, the roles of watchers and people being watched were clearly defined.

A tangible example of the social divisions witnessed on the Esplanade, and the way these depended on particular times of the day, can be seen in Hilda Tihlå’s novel *Leeni* (“Leeni”; 1907). In a descriptive passage, several pages of length, the narrator scrutinizes how the Esplanade changes during the course of one day, and how it caters for several functions of the city, but with a distinctive undertow of social stratification. In the early morning, Helsinki is at first silent and clean; gradually, the city wakes up, and becomes busy with life in the bustling Market Square, located at the eastern end of the Esplanade. Around midday, the economic function of this public space, which is described as socially diverse, suddenly comes to an end when “the heart of the city” becomes the scene of the bourgeois walking ritual already described (Tihlå: 1907: 110). Not everyone is welcome any longer; working-class men are only few and far between; and when a “dark beauty from the outskirts of the city” joins the crowd, her presence is felt to be awkward – people would rather have her gone (ibid.: 110–111). When a young working-class boy strays on the Esplanade, his presence is not appreciated, and “he soon runs off to a place away from the centre, where he can breathe safely” (ibid.).

4.3 THE GAZE AND THE STRATIFICATION OF PUBLIC SPACE IN EINO LEINO’S JAANA RÖNTY (1907)

The bourgeois ritual performed at the Esplanade is far removed from the spontaneous wanderings of Baudelairean *flâneur*, which were spurred on by a fascination for urban phenomena of modernity. This does not mean, however, that the considerable literature that has evolved around the *flâneur* and the *flâneuse* (see section 2.4.) does not have any relevance for understanding the encounters in public space found in the literature analysed here. One of the *flâneur*’s most important characteristics has undiminished relevance: the gaze. In Baudelaire’s quintessential essay “The painter of modern life”, the observer of modernity is endowed with a particular way of looking – a child-like “animally ecstatic gaze” grounded in “deep and joyful curiosity” (Baudelaire 1863/1964: 8). The highly influential readings of Baudelaire by Walter Benjamin have further enhanced the importance that has been attached to the *flâneur* gaze in readings of the (late) nineteenth-century urban experience (Benjamin 2006: 40). One of the

---

185 Cf. the first chapter of Zola’s novel *Le Ventre de Paris*, which “takes us through the full cycle of a day” in Les Halles in Paris (Brooks 2005: 137).

186 “[... ] kaupungin sydämeen”; “Joku laitakaupungin pimeä kaunotarkin uskaltaa joksus eksyä jokkoon [sic]. Hän herättää kiussallista huomiota, pysyisi poissa - - -!”

187 “[... ] hän pian kiirehtää pois, laidemmalle missä jälleen voi vapaaesti hengittää.”
quintessential literary examples of the flâneur gaze is provided by Baudelaire’s poem “À une passante” (“To a Passer-by”; Baudelaire 1861), which describes the exchange of meaningful glances between two chance passers-by (see Benjamin 2006: 75–77; Brooks 2005: 134–135).

The polyphonic dialogue of gazes, glances and stares in urban public space is also indicative of the social and gendered power relations that permeate this space. During the last decades, the gendered dimension of the gaze has received particular attention, inspired in part by new perspectives offered by feminist film criticism (Mulvey 1989; see also Warhol 2005: 194) and art history (Pollock 1988). In writings on female city walking, the flâneur’s gaze has come under critical scrutiny (see Pollock 1988: 253; Hapuli et al. 1992: 102; Gleber 1999: 184–185), and has been argued to be “patriarchal, ‘panoptic’ and controlling” (Leslie 2006: 90). The flâneur and the male gaze have been seen as the quintessential symbol of “men’s visual and voyeuristic mastery over women” (Wilson 1992: 98). The poem “À une passante” and its subsequent reading by Benjamin have been central to a number of pivotal re-readings of urban modernity in relation to the female city walker (Wolff 1985: 42), to the extent even that the passante has been equated with the flâneur himself: the woman being passed on the street is “an enigmatic icon of the cityscape”, and her ability to answer the gaze makes her a “mirror image of the male observer” (Parsons 2000: 72 ff.).

If the flâneur is largely invisible on the Esplanade, the male “gendered gaze” referred to in feminist (or more generally gender-inspired) readings of the male city walker is pervasively present, and in some instances in Finnish turn-of-the-century literature, a particular gendered gaze constitutes the first step in a chain of events leading to aggression, violence, and even rape. In the following, I examine experiences of the female city walker in Finnish turn-of-the-century literature, analysing a pivotal scene in Eino Leino’s Jaana Rönty as a crucial example of gendered and social stratification of urban public space. The concept of the gaze is closely related to problematics of focalization, and my analysis takes into account relevant aspects of focalization and shifts in focalizer.188

4.3.1 JAANA RÖNTY

Jaana Rönty is one of the three novels that together constitute Eino Leino’s Frost Year trilogy (“routavuosiromaanit”). The triptych is intended to give complementing views of society: first, that of a student from a provincial
background (Tuomas Vitikka), second, that of a working-class woman (Jaana Rönty), and third, that of a civil servant (Olli Suurpää). *Jaana Rönty* was the most successful of the three: it received favourable reviews, was awarded with a state literary prize, and, quite exceptionally for a Finnish novel, it was reviewed positively in the British newspaper *The Tribune* in the very year it was published (Anon. 1907; H.S. 1908: 58). Interesting from the perspective of urban writing, *Jaana Rönty* was praised by contemporary critics across the language divide for the way it depicts Helsinki from a Finnish-speaking lower class perspective (Schildt 1912). During recent decades, *Jaana Rönty* has received considerable attention as a novel that depicts the pulse of its time, and which displays the changing attitude of the intelligentsia towards the common people in the early twentieth century (see Sarajas 1962: 135–154; Lyytikäinen 1999: 213; Ojajärvi 2008: 210, 2009: 205–224; Rojola 2008).\(^{189}\)

Jaana Rönty is one of the typical young men and women of the provinces whose first encounters with the city have been the object of analysis in the preceding chapter. She is a young woman from a poor and provincial background who moves to the great city, where she awakens as an individual, but where severe misfortunes befall her, and where eventually she degenerates.\(^{190}\) Like many Finnish Young Man/Woman novels, a substantial part of the novel is set in the countryside, but the most consequential and detailed scenes take place in the capital, which can be considered as the catalyst of turning points in Jaana’s life. In the background of Jaana’s downward evolution we find not only the strained political conditions in Finland which gave to Eino Leino’s trilogy the name “Frost Year Novels”, but also the rapid economic development of Finland’s capital and the nation’s socio-political upheavals, which periodically gave rise to violent eruptions in urban public space.\(^{191}\)

The first encounters of Jaana with the Finnish capital are disconcerting: unable to orient herself, Jaana wanders the city aimlessly, alienated by the unfamiliar surroundings. To newcomers, however, the city is not only a disorientating and paralyzing space, but also the arena for social advancement. Years after her arrival, Jaana has become a young city maiden, with her clothes, her work and her little home to prove her new status. The

\(^{189}\) It should be stressed that the narrator's occasional ironical attitude towards Jaana (and other characters) in *Jaana Rönty* cannot be interpreted as a straightforward bias against the lower classes, since all three protagonists of the Frost Year Trilogie are described in profoundly satirical terms.

\(^{190}\) The “awakening” in the city is a typical feature of female protagonists in realist and naturalist literature. In literature written in English, one of the most typical examples of such awakening is Theodore Dreiser’s Carrie. See Richard Lehan’s reading of Carrie: “The city formed Carrie, acting as a catalyst to bring out elements dormant in her personality. She came to the city in pursuit of a self that was waiting to be born.” (Lehan 1998: 203)

\(^{191}\) The most important of these eruptions are the Great Strike (1905) and the Viapori Rebellion (1906), followed in 1918 by the Civil War (see section 1.6.).
“social text of the city street” (Lefebvre 2003: 91), however, remains largely foreign to her, made up of enunciations she finds it difficult to read and understand. When she tries to appropriate the spatial language of the city, her peripatetic enunciations are misread with dramatic effect. The pivotal moment in Jaana’s development in the city comes on a beautiful spring evening, when she is walking along the idyllic Esplanade. Typically for Helsinki novels of this period, the description of the setting juxtaposes the climatic circumstances on the Esplanade with the protagonist’s inner thoughts and feelings. The air is filled with expectation: Jaana is about to meet her “cavalier” – a young man she has met close by where she lives, and they are supposed to go to the circus together.

Outside, it was a warm spring evening. Music could be heard at Kappeli. Jaana’s steps felt so light that her heels were constantly trying to jump up in the air. Her lips were smiling, and her eyes glittered. (Leino 1907/1998: 219–220)

A fateful chain of events unfolds when Jaana’s acquaintance does not appear, and when gradually, the spectacle offered by the Esplanade starts to draw Jaana’s attention. Fascinated by the numerous people strolling about, she starts to copy the way other women walk the Esplanade. A police officer eventually notices Jaana, accosts her and asks her with what right she walks there. When she is unable to give him a satisfying answer, she is taken to the police station, where she is raped.

The critic Viljo Tarkiainen argues that Jaana’s rape (in addition to many other events in the novel) is not more than a sad coincidence (Tarkiainen 1907: 494). The fatal events that befall Jaana at the Esplanade are, however, anything but random: they are revealing of the tense political atmosphere in contemporary Helsinki, the prevailing socio-political strains, and the social and gender-related stratification of urban public space. In particular, they illustrate two questions that were intimately interconnected with the social and gendered stratification of urban space, and that were thematized in media discussions and the literature of the time: the woman question and the question of morality in society. In both questions, for reasons that are clearly unknown to Jaana, but that must have been common knowledge for most of the novel’s readers, the Esplanade featured prominently.

---

4.3.2 PUBLIC SPACE – PUBLIC WOMEN?

The Esplanade was not only a place for male bourgeois showing-off, but also one of the most important Helsinki spaces in which courtship and flirtation, in all its subtle and less subtle forms, were staged. Amongst many other things, this was the place where men from the higher social circles came to watch the young maidservants taking a walk in their free time. In a passage in Santeri Ivalo’s novel *Hellaassa*, for example, a young student tells the others how the “maids’ parade” at the Esplanade had been unbelievably good the other day (Ivalo 1890: 20–21). The reference to the “maids’ parade”, the spectacle of young working-class girls strolling along the Esplanade in their spare time, is relatively harmless, although it illustrates the different roles assigned to men from the higher classes and women from the lower classes, which constituted at the Esplanade – and all through the city’s public space – a continuous area of tension. In another student novel written by Ivalo, *Aikansa lapsipuoli* (“Stepchild of his time”; 1895), two of the characters descend upon the Esplanade after a heavy lunch at Seurahuone, to watch how “spawning was at its hottest” (Ivalo 1895: 252).

When night began to fall, the playful courting rituals took on a more merciless and uninhibited form: the Esplanade was also the central area for Helsinki’s street prostitution. In Finnish literature, there are several direct references to the sinful nature of the Esplanade, such as the following passage from Wilkuna’s *Vaikea tie* (“The Difficult road”; 1915), which describes the closing-time scene unfolding before the protagonist’s eyes on the Esplanade around the turn of the century:

193 The above-mentioned passage in Ivalo’s novel is also the very first known appearance of old Helsinki slang in writing. The full passage reads: “When I returned yesterday from the laboratory, I met the sub at the University’s Anatomy department, and then when came here to the Esplanade, where there was a terribly good maids’ parade.” (“Kun minä eilen illalla palasin labbiksesta, tapasin Aasiksen kohdalla Supiksen, ja niin me laskeusimme tänne espikselle, jossa oli mahdoton hyvä piikis.”)

The quote presents a combination of Helsinki slang and academic jargon.

194 “[…] kutu kävi kuumimmillaan”.

195 In his study *Rahasta – vaan ei rakkaudesta* (“For money – not for love”; 1995), Antti Hääkkinen paints a gloomy picture of the nightly Helsinki streets during the period between 1867 and 1939. In the nineteenth century, one percentage of the urban population was put down in the records as a prostitute. Street prostitution was wide-spread in Helsinki, but its main area was the surroundings of the Esplanade, and the Northern Esplanade in particular: “when a man was in need for paid female company, he went to the Esplanade” (Hääkkinen 1995: 27). In old Helsinki slang we find some of the following synonyms for prostitute: “Esplanade angel” (“espisenkeli”), “Esplanade bird” (“espislintu”) and “Esplanade butterfly” (“epsiperhonen”). The earliest references to the “Espis” given by the Helsinki slang dictionary are telling, for example: “if the seamstresses think they’re not paid well enough, let them go to the Esplanade [i.e., to prostitute themselves]!” (Paunonen 2000: 177).
The men leaving the cafés were joined by street nymphs, who, like nightly butterflies, had left their hiding places on the outskirts of the city and had now, protected by the midnight shadows, dared to come to the finest parts of town to prey. The shameless barter was accompanied by loud bursts of laughter and rude jokes. Police officers, muffled up in their overcoats, were silently walking back and forth in the middle of the street like living statues. (Wilkuna 1915: 85)

In this passage, the nightly Esplanade turns into a maze of glances and gazes: prostitutes and men exchange furtive glances, and the police officers in the background, in their turn, keep an eye on the proceedings. It is a passage which reveals the socially divided and gendered geography of the city. The centre of the city is not the everyday habitat of these “nightly butterflies”, rather, the dwellings where they are said to hide are situated at the “outskirts of the city” and they come only at night time to this “finest part of the city”. Lower class women are in the roles of prostitutes, upper middle class men are categorized as the potential clients; respectable women are not to be seen. The implication is that respectable women have no place in the whole scene, and indeed, the Esplanade, like other public spaces in Helsinki where street prostitution was practised, was generally understood to be an environment where unaccompanied women could be freely approached from a particular time of the day onwards (see Häkkinen 1995: 30).

The play of glances and gazes could lead to painful misunderstandings: recognizing potential clients and possible prostitutes in the middle of a crowded street was no easy matter, especially in the case of the Esplanade, where (at daytime and in early evening) many people went about on their daily chores. References to such misunderstandings are encountered in a number of sources: in Arvid Järnefelt’s autobiographic work Vanhempieni romaani (“The Book of My Parents”), for example, there is a mention of an encounter at the Esplanade in which a prostitute approaches the son of acquaintances of the Järnefelt family (Järnefelt 1928–1930/1944: 393–

196 "Kapakoista tulleisiin miehiin liittyvät katunymfit, jotka kuin yöperhoset olivat lähteneet liikkeelle laitakaupunkikätköistään ja keskiyön varojen suojassa uskalautuneet kaupungin hienoimpaan osaan saalistamaan. Julkeata kaupanhierontaa säestivät äänekkääit nurunkikatukset ja rivot sukkeluudet. Kaapuihinsa käärityyneet poliisikonstaapeli mittelivät hiljalleen keskikatua kuin elävät patsaat."

197 Similar confusion reigned in Victorian London, where respectable women moving through public space unchaperoned were repeatedly confused with prostitutes (see Wolff 1985: 41; Walkowitz 1992: 50–53; Wilson 1992: 93). Minna Canth, in an article entitled “Naikskyynksestä” (“On the Woman Question”; 1884), condemned the fact that Helsinki women did not dare to go to the Kaisaniemi park at night for fear of being considered not respectable – something no man would be concerned with (see also Häkkinen 1995: 30). Similar articles, condemning the common idea that women were not supposed to be in the city without a chaperon in the evening, appeared in the decades to come (see for example Räsänen 1903).
In Järnefelt’s novel *Nuoruuteni muistelmia* (“Memories from my Youth”; 1919) the protagonist, Hilja, a girl who has just moved to Helsinki, is mistaken for a prostitute when she goes for a walk at the Esplanade in the evening.

Awareness of what time and place was considered acceptable for a solitary (female) walker is central to a woman’s ability to navigate urban public space, and ways of dressing and moving had to be taken into account as well. A prostitute could not necessarily be recognized by her clothing only, but when a poor woman dressed too luxuriously, this could be perceived as a clear sign. In the above-mentioned instance from *Nuoruuteni muistelmia*, Hilja has dressed particularly carefully because she has gone searching for the boy she loves. Eino Leino’s *Jaana Rönty* presents a similar case: Jaana, too, had dressed carefully, and she was on the way to meet a boy she claims to be her “fiancé” on the fateful evening. When a working-class girl in literary texts dresses too luxuriously at an early age, this is seen as a foreboding of her future fall, for example in Kasimir Leino’s short story “Emillä Ellä” (“Elli from Emmla”; 1884) and Pakkala’s *Elsa* (“Elsa”; 1894) (see Lappalainen 1998a: 112–113, 2008), or in the case of Maila Talvio’s “Helsinkiin” (“To Helsinki”; 1896, see section 3.5.).

The elements which lead to the fatal chain of events at the Esplanade in *Jaana Rönty* are thus constituted by Jaana’s clothing, the moment and the place of the events (the Esplanade at dusk), but also, and crucially, by Jaana’s body language. A particular kind of walking was associated with public women, and there are numerous instances in literature in which the way a woman walks is interpreted as a clear sign of indecent intentions. In Maila Talvio’s novel *Tähtien alla* (“Under the Stars”; 1910), a man approaches the main character Hilja at the Railway Square in Helsinki and grabs her by the arm; when Hilja is taken aback by this sudden event, the gentleman blames the way she walks: “Why did you walk so slowly, then?!” He retorted with an air of rightful anger, and pulled back” (Talvio 1910: 283). It was a situation

---

198 Upon hearing the news, the upper class ladies do not, at first, understand why this woman would act so strangely, and when they hear she is a prostitute – and when someone explains to them what that word means – they decide “that they should immediately take the most drastic measures to uproot such an institution, which threatens their sons with damnation” (Järnefelt 1928–1930: 394). It is telling that these ladies are not in the least concerned with the fate of the prostitute in question, but only with that of their sons: prostitution represented the dirt in the world, which threatened the foundations of city – the bourgeois home (see Lappalainen 1998a).

199 At the turn of the twentieth century, the Finnish bourgeoisie became increasingly concerned with working class clothing habits, and with the urbanizing lower classes’ tendency, as the bourgeoisie saw it, to dress above their station. The perceived immodest dressing of working-class women, in particular, was criticized and linked to moral dangers and the city’s degenerating nature (see Oittinen 1990).

200 “– Mitä te sitte kävelette niin hitaasti! tiuskasi herra oikeutetun suuttumuksen vallassa ja jättäytyjä jäelle.”
which was not only typical of Helsinki; similar events were witnessed in other cities as well, both in Finland and, of course, internationally. In Finnish novels situated in the urban environments of Oulu and Kuopio, women, even young girls, drew male attention to their own corporality by the unusual way in which they walked (see Lappalainen 1998a: 110). Inability to conform to the steady pace of the metropolis has also been noticed in the context of women’s respectability in nineteenth-century London. In Victorian London, country girls received unwanted attention by the unusual speed with which they walked (Nead 2000: 65), and respectable women who wanted to move through urban public space without being accosted had to demonstrate their dignity by the gracious and purposeful pace of their movement (Walkowitz 1992: 51).

Interestingly, Leino’s novel offers a detailed description of the way Jaana walks immediately preceding the challenge by the police officer, and of how she tries to adapt to a particular kind of walking she sees performed at the Esplanade. In de Certeau’s terms, Jaana tries to appropriate the spatial language of the Esplanade, but she is unaware of the strong undercurrents of meaning which her imitation carries. The narrator describes at length how Jaana becomes gradually fascinated by the “ladies” she sees walking at the Esplanade. Although Jaana realizes that they are not real upper class ladies, she seems to be unaware that they are, in fact, prostitutes. She notices how they walk in a particular way, and how they “tripped about so nice and neatly, taking smaller steps than the others and carrying their skirts differently than other women” (Leino 1907/1998: 221). Jaana tries to imitate them, and when she realizes what she is doing, “she started to copy them ever so eagerly, this time on purpose and self-consciously” (ibid.).

From the moment Jaana forgets the reason why she is walking along the Esplanade, she starts to notice the spectacle performed there, and to actively take part in it. But she underestimates to what extent she herself has become part of that very spectacle. Jaana, as an outsider to the city, is not able to read correctly this “subtlest but least well-defined system of signs” – the city street (Lefebvre 2003: 91). Her appearance and the way she walks are understood, however, by others on the Esplanade as part and parcel of the social text, and her behaviour is interpreted accordingly. When Jaana copies the movements of other women, her own steps, in turn, are followed attentively:

A police officer, standing on the corner of the street, had for some time been following Jaana’s steps with his eyes. Now he decidedly went after her, and at a dark gateway, he grabbed the girl by the arm.

---

201 “[…] sipsuttivat niin sievästi ja soreasti, ottivat lyhempäää askelia kuin muut ja kantoivat toisella tavalla hamettaan.” “[...] rupesi kahta pahemmin jäljitelemään, täällä kertaa tahallisesti ja itsetietoisesti.”
“Why are you walking here?” he asked. (Leino 1907/1998: 221)²⁰²

Significantly, the challenge of Jaana’s right to walk is accompanied by a shift in focalization. The narration is no longer recounted through Jaana herself, but through another focalizer: the police officer. In this case, it is indeed the panoptic and controlling gaze of the upholder of public order who scrutinizes Jaana and who classifies her on the basis of the gendered and social signs made up by her clothing, outlook, and way of walking. Here, as in other instances from contemporary literature, it is not merely outward appearances that give away a woman as not belonging to the surrounding environment, but rather the way she walks and the very steps she takes: the man “had for some time been following Jaana’s steps”.²⁰³ On the basis of Jaana’s body language, the police officer comes to the conclusion that she is a prostitute.

4.4 THE EXPERIENCE OF HELSINKI’S PUBLIC SPACE UNDER THE AEGIS OF THE “FROST YEARS”

The way people move through the public spaces of the city is profoundly defined by the gender of the city walker and his/her ability to recognize reigning social and sexual codes, and this holds true for late Victorian London as well as for present-day cities (see Koskela & Pain 2000; Tani 2001; Koskela & Tani 2005), and, in our case, for the Helsinki of turn-of-the-century Finnish literature. The gendered undercurrents of the male gaze which dominate the Esplanade in the prose texts analysed here are also intimately connected with social and political tensions: the gaze that scrutinizes and objectifies the female street walker is also a means of framing that enhances social divides in urban public space.²⁰⁴ The political

---

²⁰² “Poliisikonstaapeli, joka seisoi kadunkulmassa, oli jo jonkun aikaa seurannut silmillään Jaanan askeleita. Nyt lähti hän päättävästi hänen jälkeensä ja tarttui erään pimeän porttikäytävän kohdalla tytön käsiin.

~ Mitä sinä tässä kävelet? hän kysyi.”

²⁰³ Antti Häkkinen points out that the prostitutes in turn-of-the-century Helsinki were not necessarily recognized on the basis of their clothing, but rather on the basis of make-up and a particular way of walking (Häkkinen 1995: 32). The police officer in Jaana Rönty could be expected to know the regular, semi-legalized prostitutes on the Esplanade, and would consider Jaana to be a newly arrived girl, who is not yet in the police registers.

In Helsinki around the turn of the century, the police did not usually interfere with street prostitution, as long as a prostitute was in the possession of a booklet with information on her medical condition, and as long as she acted discreetly, was sober and did not dress in any inappropriate way (Häkkinen 1995: 166, 30).

²⁰⁴ Some of the most important reassessments of the flâneur figure from a gendered perspective involved a keen awareness of the social dimension of the gendered divide in public space (Wolff 1985;
oppression of the Frost Years, which looms largely in the background of the events described in *Jaana Rönty*, adds a further dimension to the meanings that are attached to uneasy encounters in urban public space.

Seen in the light of the political context in which Eino Leino wrote the Frost Year Novels, the police officer on the Esplanade takes on a more complex character than that of the mere gatekeeper and controller of a particular gendered geography of fear.\(^{205}\) The extremely volatile conditions reigning in Helsinki in the early years of the twentieth century put an unmistakable stamp on the way urban public space is rendered and experienced in Finnish literature. In Runar Schildt’s words, the Finland-Swedish generation responsible for the breakthrough of urban images in literature is a generation “marked first and foremost by the Frost Years and the Great Strike” (Schildt 1912), and this is also true of the Helsinki novels written in Finnish that appeared in this period. Compared to the development of city images in other literary traditions around the same period (for example the developments in the urban literature of Stockholm, see Borg 2011), the experience of Helsinki is permeated and defined by a sense of urgency related to the grave political conditions.

These were the “cursed years” (Aspelin-Haapkylä 1980), during which the acutely felt threat to the nation and the suffocating political repression lie almost universally on the Finnish minds and hearts, and in particular on the capital, where the political, cultural and social forces were concentrated. In the Finnish novels, short stories, poetry and newspaper articles that were published during these years, spatial surroundings were repeatedly imbued with allegorical qualities – indeed, due to the enforced Russian censorship in this period, Finnish authors often had no other choice than to make use of allegorical images and historical reminiscences to voice their criticism of the Russian repression (see Leino-Kaukiainen 1984: 238–239; Lyytikäinen 1999: 211).\(^{206}\) Eino Leino was a master in couching political preoccupations, worries and programmes in allegorical language: in his very first literary text on Helsinki, the poem “Helsinki sumussa” (“Helsinki in the Mist”; 1899, see section 1.6.), all of the Helsinki centre appears as an allegory of the political situation, and in the two other Frost Year Novels he wrote in addition to *Jaana Rönty*, the strained political climate is described as being felt so tangibly on the Esplanade that it profoundly disturbs the daily routines of otherwise malleable male bourgeois characters: in the novel *Tuomas Vitikka*...
In *Jaana Rönty*, both Helsinki public space and the protagonist’s fate take on allegorical dimensions related to the on-going political struggle. Jaana is portrayed as a representative of the Finnish nation, and the police attack can be read as an allegory for the rape of Finland during the Frost Years. This is clearly also the way in which many contemporary readers understood this passage (see Anon. 1907; Järnström 1908: 153). The police officer who stops Jaana uses Russian words (“Nietu” [“no”]; “Da da [“yes”]) alongside Finnish in his conversation with Jaana, and he speaks Russian to officers arriving on the scene (Leino 1907/1998: 222–223). Furthermore, the “cavalier” whom Jaana is supposed to meet at the Esplanade is, in fact – as readers realize by then – in the service of the Russian secret police, and it is the friend of this cavalier, also a secret police officer, who rapes Jaana at the police station. Identification of the police with the Russian oppressors is also made in other novels, for example in Wilkuna’s *Vaikea tie* (1915), in which the main character Markus is stopped by a police officer when he staggers home drunk after a nightly bar crawl. He calls the officer a “Ruskie devil” and ends up in the police gaol, where most of the police officers speak either Russian or Finnish with an Estonian accent (Wilkuna 1915: 137).

A comparison between these instances in Wilkuna’s *Vaikea tie* and Leino’s *Jaana Rönty* is revealing in another sense: Jaana’s confrontation with the police officer is the pivotal moment which propels her on a downward course, while in *Vaikea tie*, the protagonist Markus continues cheerfully onwards on the chosen path, largely undisturbed by the encounter. The difference between the two passages lies, of course, in the gender and social standing of the protagonists in question: a male representative of the upper and middle classes could rise above such incursions on his freedom to

---

207 Since so much of Olli Suurpää’s mental stability is based on his daily rituals, it comes as no surprise that the Russian oppression appears most tangible as an annoying disruption of these rituals:

“And when I descended on the Northern Esplanade for my usual midday walk, I happened to hear there, too, only troublesome and unpleasant things. The atmosphere was heavy, the air filthy and poisoned. [...] It made me suffer, for I am, in fact, a sociable man who loves company [...]” (Leino 1908/1998: 427–428)

(“Ja kun minä tavalliselle puoli-päivä-kävelylleni Pohjois-Esplanaadille laskeuduin, sattui sielläkin korvaani ainoastaan ikäviä ja epämiellyttäviä asioita. Mieliä oli raskas, ilma saastainen ja myrkyllinen. [...] Minä kärsin suuresti siitä, sillä minä olen oikeastaan toverillinen ja seuraa rakastava mies [...]”)

In Eino Leino’s first Frost Year Novel, *Tuomas Vitikka*, the father of the eponymous protagonist has similar feelings regarding his daily walk: he is mentioned to be in a nervous mood when he has to miss out on his daily walk on the Esplanade due to his duties in the party struggle (Leino 1906/1998: 114). Tuomas’s father, like Olli Suurpää, is a law-abiding, right-wing high civil servant.

208 “[...] ryssäpiruksi [...]”
roam the city. In the case of Jaana Rönty’s movement through the city, other rules apply, and the events on the Esplanade lead to a social and moral descent which is also reflected in Jaana’s personal social-geographical map of the city, as seen through her respective dwelling places and work places. At the beginning of the novel, she is as yet a stranger to the working-class district and to the city’s brothels, into which she strays unwillingly. In the course of the novel, however, Jaana’s downward trajectory takes on the form of a journey through the social layers of the city, from the asphalt of the Esplanade to her later dwellings in the working-class district of the city, and her work as a sauna washer on the outskirts of the city.

The fact that the unwritten rules governing Helsinki’s urban public space apply differently to people from different classes and gender is explicitly visible in Jaana Rönty. In the novel, there are four instances in which a character’s right to walk the city is challenged. All the important characters in the novel take part in these events: Jaana Rönty, the elderly Baron Manfelt, whose trajectories through Helsinki repeatedly intersect with those of Jaana, and (through the secret and regular police) also the Russian authorities. The very first instance in which a city walker’s right to walk is questioned in Jaana Rönty is of considerable importance, since it initiates Jaana’s acquaintance with her future “cavalier”. Jaana has noticed that a young man walks up and down the street close to where she lives, and when this young man approaches her, Jaana asks him, in wordings remarkably similar to the police officer’s later question: “Why are you always walking here?” (Leino 1907/1998: 215) The man first answers playfully that he has been instructed by the doctor to walk, but he finally answers more seriously that he has “official business to attend to” (ibid.). Jaana does not believe this explanation, but the man is in fact, telling the truth, since he is occupied by

---

209 A telling passage in this respect, set in Turku, can be found in Järnefelt’s Veljekset. One of the four brothers, Gabriel, lives in Turku in working-class circles. When he is drawn into a fight and is arrested by the police, he is released almost immediately. The narration suggests that, although he is dressed as a man from working-class background, his commanding bearing and language convince the police officers of the fact that he is (as he indeed is) from a higher social stature, which leads to his swift release (Järnefelt 1900: 98–102).

210 As far as the two prototypical Esplanade walkers with whom this chapter opened – Olli Suurpää and Mauritz Ahlfelt – are concerned, no women are mentioned in the descriptions of their daily walks. Their everyday routines are, however, clearly part of a socio-geographically defined network of sexual desires that permeate Helsinki. Both have a mistress they see on regular times, and both women are linked to a particular social geography of the city. Olli Suurpää’s mistress lives near the cemetery – the very same environment where Jaana, too, takes up residence at some point. Mauritz Ahlfelt does not go with his friends to “particular parts of the city” (to go to a brothel), but prefers instead a more regular and rationalized solution (in other words, a “kept woman”).

211 “Mitäs te tässä aina kävelette?”

The only substantial difference with the question asked to Jaana by the police officer is the use of the polite verb form in Jaana’s question.
the Russian government to spy on the students who live in the same house as Jaana.

Immediately following the scene in which Jaana is arrested by the police officer on the Esplanade, there is another, third passage in which a city walker’s right to walk freely is challenged. When Jaana is dragged violently to a waiting police carriage, an angry mob forms, and an old man shouts at the officers, one of whom threatens the man with his scabbard, telling him to move on. The old man, however, is not to be threatened so easily: “I will go when I want to,’ he barked.” (ibid.: 224). After an exchange of words, the old man tells his name and rank:

I am baron Manfelt, major-general, resigned from duty, with the right to carry a uniform. Living in this city. (Leino 1907/1998: 225)

The stunned police officer apologizes and the Baron walks on, with unabated freedom to move through urban space: as a male member of the nobility and as a former army officer his authority is sanctioned – ironically – like that of the secret police, by the Czar himself. Significant for the role of Baron Manfelt in the novel is the fact that in this passage, the focalization shifts again, this time to the Baron himself, who gets to say the last word on the situation. As he is walking away from the scene, he considers for a moment whether he should interfere or not, but decides that it is no use: “every day similar things happened, and a lot worse, too” (ibid.: 225). To the Baron, this is not more than an “insignificant street incident” (ibid.). Intriguingly, the incident triggers the Baron’s memory: he realizes that he has met a similar-looking girl (in fact, the very same girl) in a brothel at the outskirts of the city, who told him the story of her life and family. The next chapter in the novel presents the story of Jaana’s rural background, and the framing of the story suggests that it is told as Baron Manfelt remembers and reconstructs it – the Baron does not only keep the authorial gaze over the pivotal scene at the Esplanade, but also over the very life of Jaana on the level of the narration (see Rojola 2008: 232–234).

_Jaana Rönty_ is an allegorical story of the Finnish nation under Russian attack, but also a Frost Year version of the story of a young working-class woman succumbing to the vices of the city (see Railo 1907: 170–171; rv 1907), a standard _topos_ in realist-naturalist literature (Lappalainen 1998a; Aalto 2000: 142). The fact that Baron Manfelt is repeatedly used as a focalizer reveals that this is also a story concerning the upper classes’ perspective of the working classes, and a reflection of the former’s responsibilities towards

---

212 “– Minä menen silloin kuin minä tahdon, ärjäsi vanha herra.”
213 “– Minä olen parooni Manfelt, kenraalimajuri, virasta eronnut, oikeudella kantaa univormua. Asuva tässä kaupungissa.”
214 “Tapahtuikan joka päivä samallaista ja paljon pahempaa.”
215 “[...] vähäpätöisestä katukohtauksesta.”
alleviating the plight of the latter. The very first encounter between Jaana Rönty and Baron Manfelt is instructive in this respect: they meet at the brothel into which Jaana is unwittingly introduced, on which occasion the Baron “saves” her. The occurrence at the brothel is described as a rite of passage, including rituals of dressing-up and name change. In the pivotal scene at the Helsinki Esplanade, Baron Manfelt has the opportunity, again, to save Jaana, but he eventually prefers to walk on: he and the other representatives of the intelligentsia in the novel are described as either impotent or unwilling to really interfere with the plight of the poor and the repressed.

4.4.1 THE ESPLANADE AS AGENT ROAD

As a story of descent into moral corruption and prostitution, Jaana Rönty resembles the prototypical naturalist narrative of a working-class woman’s evolution vis-à-vis the modern city. Parallels in other novels and short stories in the same period abound, and Eino Leino’s elder brother Kasimir had written a remarkably similar short story, “Emmalan Elli” (1884), in which the degenerating environment is not constituted by Helsinki but Oulu. Both in Jaana Rönty and “Emmalan Elli” (and several other contemporary texts), the protagonist’s background and roots bode ill for her future development, but the move to the city plays a decisive role. In Jaana Rönty, Helsinki has a crucial role in awakening the dormant instincts that lie in waiting for Jaana, and the Esplanade, as the most important synecdoche of the Finnish capital, is the spatial environment that functions as an accelerator of this process. The programmatic walking rituals performed at the Esplanade “activate”, as it were, the predispositions and the gendered roles that are held in store for Jaana. In this sense, the Esplanade can be considered an “agent road”, a spatial narrative function that defines and inspires the protagonist’s movements (see Gumbrecht 2006; section 3.5.). Similar to the experience of the journey by railway to the capital, described in the previous chapter, the experience of the Esplanade is defined by a loss of independent movement, and agency is transferred from the protagonist to the road itself, and to the moral and social trajectory it implies.

For working-class women, a walk on the Esplanade is repeatedly described in this period as inevitably involving the fatal first steps on the trajectory towards prostitution and degeneration. Exemplary of such a vision of the Esplanade as an “agent road” is a 1902 sketch from urban life published under the pseudonym Maija in the woman’s magazine Kodin ystävä (“Friend of the Hearth”). In the text, entitled “Elämän todellisuudesta” (“The Realities of Life”), the I-narrator recounts the fate of a young girl, Hanna, who moves from Oulu to Helsinki, and who, following the lead of another young woman, “a poor frivolous girl, corrupted by Helsinki”,

133
starts walking the Esplanade in the evening. At this point, nothing has as yet occurred, but to the narrator, the consequences of these first steps are obvious enough: “Poor Hanna, she did not understand to what kinds of dangers such a life could lead...” (Maija 1902) On a warm August evening, Hanna is approached by a gentleman, invited to his home, and (the story is not conclusive on this account) raped, after which she descends into prostitution. Hanna is the clear victim, but the narrator does not point the finger to anyone in particular as the one to blame: all characters are described as enacting their pre-determined roles, which are activated on the asphalt of the Esplanade. Rather than involving a moral outcry, the sketch extends a general warning on the dangers of the modern city for innocent newcomers.

In short stories and novels of the 1920s and 1930s, the importance of the Esplanade diminishes, but the idea of the urban road as a degenerative “agent road” in relation to young working-class women remains prominent. For a young girl, walking the city roads continues to entail fateful consequences. In Toivo Tarvas’s aptly named short story “Asfalttkukkanen” (“Asphalt Flower”; 1920), from the collection Kadun lapsia (“Children of the Street”), the protagonist Saara receives words of warning similar to the one expressed above when she is on her way to meet a student acquaintance. The old lady with whom she lives notices how Saara is about to leave the house particularly well-dressed, and warns her: “Oh, poor child. Beware, pitiable girl, of evening walks, it can become a habit, from which you cannot let go even though you would want to. There are more than enough streets in this city; so many that you cannot walk them to the end in one lifetime.” (Tarvas 1920: 121) Saara is seduced by the student; she subsequently becomes the

216 “[…] huikentelevainen, Helsingin turmelema tyttö raukka.”

The genre of this short story is relatively fluid: literary sketch, column, causerie, autobiographical story, moral parable.

217 “Hanna parka, hän ei ymmärtänyt mihin vaaroihin sellainen elämä voi johtaa […]”

In another sketch, published in the women periodical Koti ja yhteiskunta (“Home and Society”), entitled “Hanna Toivosen ystävät” (“The Friends of Hanna Toivonen”; 1893), two female ideals are juxtaposed in a way similar to the story of the Ant and the Grasshopper. The pleasure-loving working-class girl is described as loving big wages and little work, nice clothes, and walks along the Northern Esplanade (e 1893: 81).

218 “Voi lapsi parka. Varo sinä tyttöpaha illalla kävelemistä, se voi tulla tavaksi, josta ei päiše eroon vaikka kuinka tahtoisi. Katuja riittää tässä kaupungissa niin, ettei niitä yhdessä ihmisiässä saa loppuun käytyä […].”

Similar scenes can be found in later literature, too. In Iris Uurto’s novel Raumin ikävä (“The Longing of the Body”; 1930), the young working-class woman Ester gets the advice from her elderly landlady not to end up on the street. When Ester proudly answers “Everyone walks the street”, the old woman warns her: “Yes, but at different times.” (Uurto 1930/1931: 337) (“Katujahan kulkevat kaikki. […] Kulkevat eri aikoina.”)
mistress of an elderly engineer, and eventually she degenerates into an abject state of prostitution. The short story ends with Saara’s suicide.

Similarly, in Unto Karri’s 1929 novel *Sodoma* (“Sodom”), the street is seen as exacting a direct influence on young women, and it is again an old lady who expresses worries about the “dirt of the street” which attracts young girls “like a giant magnet” (Karri 1929: 51–52). Regardless of earlier warnings, young Alli, one of the novel’s main characters, feels in her soul the “call of the street” (ibid.: 91).219 The reader is hardly surprised when she finds work in a bar of slightly dubious nature, begins a close relation with a frivolous student, and eventually becomes pregnant. In *Sodoma*, the Esplanade has not lost its position as the centre of Helsinki’s street prostitution: a close friend of Alli recounts how she is being kept as a mistress by a rich man she met at the Esplanade. In the exchange of words between Alli’s friend and the gentleman in question, the woman had told him quite frankly that at present, she organizes her “reception” at the Esplanade, but that she is looking for more quiet quarters – in other words, she wants to make the move from being a street prostitute to being a kept woman (ibid.: 99–100).

### 4.5 UNEASY ENCOUNTERS

As the examples above illustrate, the turn of the century saw in Finland – as elsewhere – a vivid discussion concerning the woman question, morality in society, and prostitution, in close relation to questions such as the rise of the working class, and the urbanization and industrialization witnessed in the metropolis.220 The way such worries were couched in prose narratives repeatedly takes the form of descriptions of uneasy encounters in urban public space, in which a male protagonist is confronted with a disconcerting figure rising from the city crowd.

Disturbing feelings of uneasiness, uncertainty, even horror, have been called following Freud (with a term originally coined by Schelling) *das Unheimliche* (Freud 1919/1997). *Das Unheimliche*, or the uncanny, is everything which should have remained repressed, but is returned by the unconscious: drawing on Schelling, Freud defines it as “something which ought to have remained hidden but has come to light”, and he argues, more specifically, that the uncanny “proceeds from something familiar which has been repressed” (Freud 1919/1997: 217, 224; see also Kristeva 1988/1991: 183 ff.). One example, provided by Freud himself, is that of a city walker in a well-known, safe and homely environment, where he is confronted with a

---

219 “[…] katujen saasta vetää heitä jättäiläismagneetin tavoin puoleensa […]”

“[…] Alli tunsi kadun huodon sielussaan […]”

220 Several articles concerning the prostitution question appeared in this period, particularly in working-class newspapers (see for example Willman 1906; J.S. 1909).
strange presence that fills him with horror. In the background of the mental shock caused by this confrontation, we can see a fundamental insecurity typical of the new urban parvenu, whose quest for a well-defined position in society was far from concluded (see Vidler 1992: 3–12; Lehan 1998: 90–91). The streets of the metropolis are typically the setting in which the (male) protagonist encounters his own fears and insecurity in the form of a stranger rising from the crowd, who is able to overthrow all rational structures. More generally, the literary city tends to revolve around a “return of the repressed and half forgotten” (Ganim 2002: 381) and in the literature of the turn of the twentieth century, the uneasiness lurking at the edge of sight was often related to the figure of the woman. Freud recounts a personally experienced story of prostitution in the city to illustrate the meaning of the uncanny (Freud 1919/1997).

In the Finnish novels discussed here, uncanny encounters in the Freudian sense, relating directly to the protagonist’s mental insecurity, without immediate reference to the social and political questions of the age, are rare: one instance can be found in Eino Leino’s Olli Suurpää, in which the protagonist meets a faintly familiar woman in the semi-public space of Helsinki’s concert hall (see Ameel 2006: 96–97). The encounter with the woman, who turns out to be an old acquaintance of the protagonist, instils Olli with fear that the fragile frontiers between reality and imagination are on the verge of collapsing.

In most of the Finnish novels analysed here, the accidental encounter of a strangely familiar figure in urban public space is directly related to the moral and social questions of the age. The protagonists repeatedly meet characters that seem familiar but hard to recognize, and that, unlike Baudelaire’s passante or Poe’s man in the crowd, are no complete strangers but turn out to be ghosts from the past. The passages in question force the usually male protagonist into agonizing soul searching and a contemplation of his earlier choices and ethical values. The setting for these encounters is typically a safe and familiar urban surrounding, not uncommonly the Esplanade.

A typical example can be found in Arvid Järnefelt’s Veneh’ojalaiset, in which the protagonist Hannes meets a repellent drunken woman in the street. Too late he realizes that the despicable woman is in fact the same person as the girl he once promised, in his teens, to save from prostitution. The encounter can be considered as a reminder of his inactivity and incompetence in the face of social and gendered inequality. An even more
disturbing event in the same novel is a strange encounter on the Esplanade which resembles, on a number of accounts, the events described in “À une Passante”.223 In Baudelaire’s sonnet, the lyrical I meets a woman in the street who is dressed in mourning; he is overcome by the shock of the meeting and by regret, because he will most likely never meet this woman again: “O you whom I could have loved, O you who knew it too!” (quoted in Benjamin 2006: 76). The poem reverberates with a sexual desire directed to, and emanating from the crowd. As Benjamin points out, this desire is “imperious”, and the detail that the woman is in mourning adds an extra titillating and decadent touch to it (ibid.: 76). The shock felt by the lyrical I in this poem is, in Benjamin’s reading, one of the fundamental experiences of modern urban life, a reading which resonates far and wide in the study of city experiences in literature (see for example Berman 1982/1989: 146–147).

The event in Järnefelt’s Veneh’ojalaiset differs on a number of crucial aspects from the encounter in “À une Passante”. Hannes sees a woman walking, dressed in mourning, but he is unable to look her in the eyes and even actively tries to avoid doing so, since he has devoted his life to the stern teachings of Tolstoy and Epictetus (which is one of many comic elements in the novel). Hannes prefers to cross the street, rather than run the risk of being overcome by the shocking desire that so upsets Baudelaire’s flâneur. But when he meets the mysterious woman again (she, too, has crossed the street) and looks her in the face, he recognizes not a desire that beckons to an unrealizable future – he sees the results of his earlier and already consummated desire.224 The woman is not a stranger to him, but his beloved Kerttu, who is in mourning for their lost child, born out of wedlock, and abandoned by Hannes. This encounter, then, is not a call for impossible and anonymous love in the big city, but a call to marry. Soon after the encounter, Hannes goes to see Kerttu, they marry and establish a family. Like other encounters in Helsinki’s public space, this encounter with a mysterious woman is not a personally perceived shock emanating from the modern urban crowd, but a social and/or moral wake-up call to help another character, with whom the protagonist turns out to be familiar.

In a number of prose works referred to earlier in this chapter, the gendered and social inequality reigning in public space is thematized, rather than merely mentioned in passing. In the quoted works written by Järnefelt,

223 The poem “Den enda stunden” (1833) by the Finnish romantic poet J.L. Runeberg presents an interesting early expression of this kind of chance meeting and the sudden recognition of reciprocated love, but without the urban setting, and within a romantic frame of meaning (see Schoolfield 1998: 304)

224 In a sense, Veneh’ojalaiset consists of a succession of recognition scenes, and there are repeated instances in which Hannes recognizes, often to his dismal surprise, Kerttu. For the importance of a “poetics of awakening” as central to Järnefelt’s prose see Isomaa 2009: 11. For a discussion of one particular awakening scene, the brothel scene in Veneh’ojalaiset, see the following chapter, section 5.2.
this theme is explicitly visible, for example in *Nuoruuteni muistelmia* (“Memories of My Youth”; 1919), but also throughout the novel *Veljekset*. In a revealing scene, the protagonist in *Veljekset*, Henrik, walks the streets of Helsinki, pondering what task he should devote himself to in the city. Looking around, he sees a prostitute, and considers giving his energy to these “children of the city that most need it” (*Veljekset* 1900: 441). He soon realizes, however, that this will be a daunting task: “If I should be obliged to treat everyone of those women like my own sister, I would not have the time to do anything else, – I would not even be able to walk along the streets” (ibid.). To his dismay, the woman approaches him, and half-heartedly, he tries to bring her to change her life. It transpires that they have met earlier, and later on, Henrik finds out that she is, in fact, the sister of his own brother’s wife. The girl is eventually saved when she marries a friend of Henrik’s.

Like Henrik in Järnefelt’s *Veljekset*, young Markus in Kyösti Wilkuna’s novel *Vaikea tie* tries to save a prostitute he met accidentally and who equally turns out to be an earlier acquaintance. Markus does not succeed; although the girl – Sandra – goes back to her home village on Markus’s behest, she returns to Helsinki towards the end of the novel. Markus meets her again in front of the statue of Runeberg at the Esplanade – a clear indication that she has taken up her old profession. Markus’s concern for the harassment of working-class women in Helsinki’s public space runs like a red thread through *Vaikea tie* from the moment Markus approaches two working-class girls in the Old Church Park. The angry reaction of one of the girls acts as an awakening to Markus – about whom we learn a few pages later that he was drunk at the moment – and, realizing the dire conditions of working-class girls moving through urban public space, he joins the socialist ranks and writes an article in the socialist paper *Työmies* (The Labourer) criticizing the behaviour of students towards women. Although he returns to the bourgeois ranks during the Great Strike, he is eventually engaged with the same working-class girl he met at the Old Church Park.

---

225 “[…] jotka tämän kaupungin lapsista enin sitä tarvitsevat.”

226 “Jos minun täytyisi jokaista tuommoista naista kohdella niihin sisartani, niin enhän sitten joutaisi muuta tekemäinkään, – en päääisi kaduilla kulkemaankaan.”

227 The theme of a man trying to save a working-class girl from prostitution recurs continuously in prose of the turn of the century, in Finnish literature as well as in international prose. Tolstoy’s final novel was built around these thematics (*Resurrection*; 1899); Järnefelt translated the novel into Finnish, and it was published the very next year (1900) (see Isomaa 2008: 211, 237). The novel is referred to in Tihlät’s *Leeni* (1907), in which we find, again, a young idealistic student (who has read *Resurrection*) and a young country girl hastening towards damnation.

228 *Vaikea tie* is to a considerable degree an autobiographical novel. Kyösti Wilkuna did write for *Työmies* in August 1904, and one of his articles carried the same title as the article Markus Kaarlela writes on the basis of the encounter in the Old Church Park (see Railo 1930: 86–88).
The passage from Talvio’s *Tähtien alla* quoted earlier, in which the main character Hilja is mistaken for a prostitute when walking slowly across the Railway Square, is equally linked to the broader thematic field of the novel, in which questions of morality are of a first order. In the novel, Hilja enters into a close, but harmless friendship with a young student – the son of a farmer – living in with the family, a relation which fatally tarnishes the reputation of both Hilja and her family. A similar misunderstanding affects the platonic love affair between student Eljas and bar girl Anna in Ivalo’s debut novel *Hellaassa* (1890). Their untimely public appearance results in Eljas’s removal from the city’s influential circles and his noble plan – to save Anna from the dangers of prostitution – fails miserably.

### 4.6 TRACES OF FLÂNERIE BEYOND THE ESPLANADE

Generally speaking, the characters in turn-of-the-century literary Helsinki do not display an eagerness for the creative, Baudelairean surrender to the city crowd or to the exciting spectacle of urban life. Most of the time, bourgeois literary characters in fact prefer not to walk at all and choose instead to take a horse-drawn carriage to travel even the smallest distances: the distance of the railway station to Kappeli, covered by Antti by horse-drawn carriage in Aho’s *Helsinkiin*, for example, is less than a kilometre. Whenever walking the streets of Helsinki acquires a certain air of self-confidence, it is a practice that is rigidly regulated and stratified, as in the case of the programmed stroll along the Esplanade. One of the possible reasons for the conspicuous lack of *flâneurs* in Helsinki in this period is, of course, the Finnish capital’s size. At the turn of the century, Helsinki was so small, both in geographical terms and in terms of its population, that many of the upper (middle) class people walking its central streets would necessarily know each other at least remotely, a condition which translates into the repeated instances in literature of coincidental encounters at the Esplanade or Aleksanterinkatu.

When Hannes, the protagonist of Järnefelt’s *Veneh’ojalaiset*, returns to Helsinki after years in St. Petersburg, he is delighted to notice that in his home city, he recognizes every second or third person on the street (Järnefelt 1909: 125). In such circumstances, surrendering to the crowd or indulging in urban anonymity could hardly be considered a reasonable option for aspiring Helsinki *flâneurs*. Even in Joel Lehtonen’s *Henkien taistelu*, which is set in the capital around the turn of the 1930s, one character states that “in the small town Helsinki” people run into each other almost unavoidably.

---

229 The entry for “flâneur” in the nineteenth-century *Encyclopaedia Larousse* concluded that only a true metropolis could act as the scene for *flânerie* (Wilson 1992: 93–94). Walter Benjamin locates the *flâneur* in a limited period of time and in a particular city – Paris during part of the nineteenth century (Benjamin 2006).
(Lehtonen 1933: 448), and the protagonist is indeed repeatedly described running into acquaintances on the Esplanade or the street Aleksanterinkatu.

The peripatetic exploits in Helsinki at the turn of the twentieth century, then, seem to lack most of the features of the walk in the city of modernity as exemplified by Baudelaire and Poe. Finnish writers at this time did not, however, lack interest in the *topos* of the *flâneur*, nor were they unable to render him in prose.230 Descriptions of urban wanderings, bearing clear marks of *flânerie*, can be found in works such as Juhani Aho’s *Yksin* (“Alone”; 1890/2003), Maila Talvio’s *Tähtien alla* (“Under the Stars”; 1910) and V.A. Koskenniemi’s *Kevätilta Quartier Latinissä* (“A Spring Evening in the Quartier Latin”; 1912, see Pääjärvi 2006). In all three cases, the Baudelairean surrender to the crowd and to the frenetic pace of urban movement is set in Paris, although the setting of these literary works is at least partly Helsinki.231 Not only was the environment found lacking, but so were the potential city walkers: most of the Finnish-speaking characters in Helsinki novels of this period belong to the lower and lower-middle classes and have a provincial background, and would thus fit awkwardly with the image of a self-confident city dweller with plenty of time to spare.

When taking into account Finland-Swedish novels from around the same period, the modes of walking the city, however, have a dramatically different outlook, and it becomes clear that the lack of the *flâneur* in literature in Finnish is not determined by the characteristics of the historical city of Helsinki, but by prevailing aesthetic preferences. In Finland-Swedish literature, the idle city walker would take firmer root; influenced by Hjalmar Söderberg’s and other Swedish authors’ literature of Stockholm, the so-called *dagdrivare* generation would build a rich imagery of literary Helsinki, in which the lonely, male city walker would take a central place (see Pedersen 2007). This generation was actively involved in discussing new developments

230 The poetry of Baudelaire was far from unknown in Finland at the turn of the century. In Swedish-language newspapers and periodicals, in particular, his name appears time and again around the turn of the century. In Finnish media he is less visible, but nevertheless clearly well-known. An early article from 1866, “Ranskan toinen keisarikunta ja sen kirjallisuus” (“The Second Empire in France and its Literature”), mentions Baudelaire, his interest in everything “ugly”, and *Les Fleurs du mal*, which had met with so much consternation amongst the French (K.B. 1866: 127–135). In a long 1892 article entitled “Uusia suuntia Ranskan kirjallisuudessa” (“New Directions in French Literature”), Kasimir Leino writes, amongst others, about E.A. Poe, Baudelaire and the French decadent authors writing towards the end of the nineteenth century (Leino 1892). Translations into Finnish had appeared, in the magazines *Aika* (in 1908, in a translation by V.A. Koskenniemi), and in *Päivä* (in 1910), and both of these magazines wrote on a number of occasions on Baudelaire. A collection of French poetry published by L. Onerva in 1912 also included poems by Baudelaire.

231 Around the turn of the century, Paris was in vogue in Finland as much as it was in almost everywhere else in the world. The cultural elite of Finland was eager to travel to Paris, and the scattered references to Paris in literature of this period bear witness to the public’s eagerness to read about the “capital of the nineteenth century”.

140
in *flâneur*-writing that appeared in Sweden (Borg 2011: 182). The Finland-Swedish *dagdrivare* or idler cannot, however, be equated outright with its close relative the Baudelairean *flâneur* (as happens in Laitinen 1991: 301–302; Molarius 1998b). The *dagdrivare* saw the idleness of his life as an unfortunate condition, rather than as an accomplishment worth striving for (see Pettersen 1986; Ciaravolo 2000: 172–173).

For the *flâneur*, there is something profoundly euphoric about a “voluntary up-rooting, of anonymous arrival at a new place” (Wolff 1985: 40). As seen in the previous chapter, the condition of being uprooted, and of anonymous arrival in the capital, constitutes, on the contrary, a debilitating shock to the Young Men and Women from the provinces converging in Helsinki in the Finnish-written literature of the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries. The effects of this shock continue to have their effect once literary protagonists settle down in the city: even for a short trip, characters usually prefer a horse-drawn carriage rather than walk, a decision that also reflects a desire to uphold a particular status.

In descriptions of leisurely walks in turn-of-the-century Helsinki novels written in Finnish, nature tends to play a more important role than the urban spectacle. Inhabitants setting out for a stroll (or for a trip by car or horse-drawn carriage) quickly find themselves either on the seashore or in the forest. As the character Albert Hagen, in Toivo Tarvas’s *Eri tasoilta* (“On Different Levels”; 1916a), exclaims: “Really, this beloved Helsinki is small, after all. [...] Just when we start to get going, we already bump into the sea or the forest” (Tarvas 1916a: 82). The close presence of both the countryside and the sea gives the leisurely movement of Helsinki citizens distinct characteristics. The sea, in particular, is closely bound up with Helsinki’s perceived identity, in historical, journalistic as well as literary writings. A fascinating example of a solitary walk performed in connection to Helsinki’s seascape is found in the novel *Aikansa lapsipuoli* (Ivalo 1895), in which the protagonist, after a session of heavy drinking, suddenly feels oppressed by the stifling atmosphere in a centrally located Helsinki café. In need for fresh air, the protagonist leaves the place — and sets out for an odyssey on the frozen sea:

Otto started to talk with some new friends, and in the meantime Juuso slipped out of the bar. He walked to the sea, went down on the ice and took a long walk far on the frozen sea, where the sun shone bright on

---

232 “Kyllä tämä rakas Helsinki sentään on pieni, – sanoi Albert. – Tuskin on päässyt menemisen alkuun, niin silloin meri taikka metsä jo on vastassa.”

233 Helsinki is called the “Daughter of the Baltic”, which is also the title of a historical novel on Helsinki by Maila Talvio (see also Havis Amanda, and note 4 above).
the snowy surface and where the fresh sea wind blew freely. There he tried to gather and organize his thoughts. (Ivalo 1895: 159)²³⁴

In the same novel, the scene of a beautiful winter holiday is described, when the whole city empties, and the citizens set out for winter outings on skis, horseback and sledges:

The inhabitants of the capital, young as well as old, were today on the move in the snow-covered nature, some walking, some on horseback, many, the younger ones in particular, on skis. From all sides, and through all the customs barriers, they could be seen skiing out of the city in small groups, some in the direction of the open sea to the islands, others in the direction of the forests and the hills. (Ivalo 1895: 73)²³⁵

The protagonist, too, is on the move with a small group of friends, on their way to the “Old Town” (Vanhakaupunki), a district of scenic beauty which also in later decades features as a destination for Helsinki citizens (see Lehtonen 1922: 58).²³⁶ In the passage above, Helsinki is described from a panoramic perspective encompassing the totality of the city. The idea that the city has clearly defined boundaries and can be described in a comprehensive manner is enhanced by the mention of the custom barriers and by the exhaustive enumeration of all possible directions in which the citizens are going. Towards the end of the novel, the protagonist, utterly disillusioned with life, becomes “a fervent walker, [and] moving in the open air seemed to calm his mind and entertained his thoughts” (Ivalo 1895: 275).²³⁷ Typically of the Helsinki walker in this period, however, becoming a fervent walker does not amount to becoming a flâneur: usually, he “made long walks out of the city”, and even when he stays inside the city boundaries,

²³⁴ “Otto siirtyi keskustelemaan parin uuden toverin kanssa ja Juuso pujahdi sillävälillä ulos. Hän käveli rantaan, laskeusi jäälle ja retkeili kauas selälle, jossa päivä kimallutti kirkkaaksi lumista tannerta ja raitis merituuli vapaasti puhalteli. Siellä hän koetti koota ja järjestellä ajatuksiaan.”

²³⁵ “Pääkaupungin asukkaat, niin nuoret kuin vanhat, olivat tänään liikkeellä lumisessa luonnossa, mikä jalkaisin, mikä hevosella, monet, nuoremmat varsinkin, suksilla. Heitä hiihtä pieniä ryhmää ulos kaupungin joka laidasta ja joka tullista, toiset haarausivat selälle saaria kohden, toiset metsiin ja mäkilöille.”

²³⁶ In an earlier student novel by Santeri Ivalo, a winter outing is described, this time including a group of young students out to go sledging (Ivalo 1890: 69–70). The scene in Rakastunut rampa describes Helsinki tourists visiting the rapids at the Old Town, a favourite attraction in the spring (see the 1910 Helsinki guide Helsingin opas [Etelä-suomalainen osakunta 1910: 209]).

²³⁷ “[…] tään talvena ja keväänä oli hänestä näet tullut ahkera kävelijä, ulkoilmassa liikkuminen ikäänkuin rauhoitti hänen mieltään ja viihtyti hänen ajatuksiaan.”
the lonely expanses of the sea seen from the park Kaivopuisto constitute his
favourite environment (ibid.).

City walking in the Finnish capital was thus closely bound up with the
nature of the city – the sea shore, the parks, the forest and bays close to the
city. Environments of natural beauty that frequently function as the
background setting for a leisurely stroll in Finnish prose texts are, amongst
others, the Observatory Hill, which offered a view of both the city and the sea
(in Järnefelt’s Veneh’ojalaiset, Wilkuna’s Vaikea tie); the Kaivopuisto park,
and the surroundings near the Töölö Bay (in Ivalo’s Aikansa lapsipuoli;
Talvio’s Tähtien alla; Tarvas’s Kohtalon tuulissa).

Flâneurs are scarce in Finnish literature in the period 1890–1940, but
they do exist. The earliest explicit references appear in the work of Toivo
Tarvas, which also in other respects pioneers aestheticizing descriptions of
Helsinki. Albert Hagen in Toivo Tarvas’s Eri tasoilta (1916a) is a flâneur par
excellence. A native of Helsinki, he feels a close bond with the city, but also a
sense of loneliness and alienation which he actively cultivates. Solitary walks
in the city are his favourite pastime, and in his love for the urban crowd, he
resembles Baudelaire’s painter of modern life, who enjoys “to set up house in
the heart of the multitude” (Baudelaire 1863/1964: 9). When Albert, after a
period of convalescence towards the end of the novel, is able to walk through
the city again, he is overwhelmed with joy that he “can walk in the bustle of
the crowd, and feel he belongs to the crowd”; “[i]t is sweet to be in the crowd
and to imagine, that they feel the same as you do” (Tarvas 1916a: 250).

Several flâneurs can be found in the work of Toivo Tarvas; in Eri tasoilta, the
second male character, Urho, surrenders at times to drifting through the
Helsinki crowd, and in the collection of short stories Häviävää Helsinkiä
(“Disappearing Helsinki”; 1917) the protagonist of the framing story
“Suomenlahden helmi” (“Pearl of the Baltic”) is an aestheticizing city walker,
as well as an ardent observer of the urban spectacle.

During the 1920s and 1930s, the texts of one Finnish author, in particular,
can be singled out as evocations of Helsinki flânerie: the novels, short stories
and poems of Iris Uurto. The flâneur attitude is described most explicitly in
her debut collection of short stories and poetry Tulta ja tuhkaa (“Fire and
Ashes”; 1930), in which the protagonist of the first short story, “Gretan
päiväkirjasta” (“From Greta’s diary”; Uurto 1930: 5–18) writes down a eulogy
to her home city and to walking through its streets:

I have a special love for this city. I love its streets, its windows, houses,
movement. The best pastime, the purest pleasure, is for me to walk
along the streets, especially in the evening. [...] If only I may move one

238 “Hän kulki tavallisesti pitkät matkat ulos kaupungista [...]”
239 “[...] saa liikkua ihmisvilnässä ja tuntea kuuluvansa siihen [...]”; “Suloista on olla
ihmisjoukossa ja kuvitella, että ne tuntevat samoin kuin itse...”
foot in front of the other, slowly and carefree. And at the same time I
direct my gaze at faces, people, everything. (Uurto 1930: 7)240

If a flâneuse does indeed exist (see the discussion in section 2.4.), she
certainly resembles Greta in Tulta ja tuhkaa, with her “special love” for the
city and her desire to walk Helsinki’s streets and to gaze at the spectacle it
provides, in conscious or unconscious imitation of Baudelaire’s “perfect
idler” and “passionate observer” (Baudelaire 1863/1964: 9). But walking the
city is for her more than a mere pastime. Benjamin notes that the flâneur
“seeks refuge in the crowd” (Benjamin 2006: 40), and Greta’s promenades
are inspired by a longing that makes her want to forget herself in the crowd:

I am homeless and I try to forget myself in the bustle of the street. This
wandering is a true image of myself. A stranger to everything, an
observer without a leading star. With a restless longing in my heart.
(Uurto 1930: 9–10)241

Several of the characters – both male and female – in Iris Uurto’s later prose
are given to an aestheticizing wandering through the Helsinki streets: Paula
in Ruumiin ikävä (“The Longing of the Body”; 1931) and Lauri in
Kypsyminen (“Maturing”; 1935) have the strongest penchant for flânerie,
and their experiences of the city will be analysed in more detail in Chapter 6,
which explores the aestheticization of the city in 1920s and 1930s prose
literature.

240 "Minä rakastan tätä kaupunkia erikoisesti. Rakastan sen katuja, ikkunoita, taloja, liikkettä.
Parhainta ajanvietettäni, puhdasta iloa, on minulle kuljeksid pitkin katuja, varsinkin iltaisin. [...] Vain
siitä, että saan siirtää jalan toisen eteen, hitaasti, huolettomasti. Ja samalla kiinnittää katseeni
kasvoihin, ihmisiin, kaikkeen.”

241 “Olen koditon ja kadun vilinässä koetan unohtaa itseni. Tämä kuljeksiminen on tosi kuva
itsestäni. Vieraana kaikille, katselijana, vailla mitään johtotähteä. Levoton ikävä rinnassa.”
5 EXPERIENCES OF A METROPOLIS IN MOTION. CHANGING AND DISAPPEARING HELSINKI

The first decades of the twentieth century see the emergence of what can be called the fully-fledged Helsinki novel – the city novel that embraces various layers within a sweeping synoptic view. This chapter analyses the appearance of literary Helsinki as a space in motion, and the ongoing interaction between the changing built environment and the development of literary protagonists. The first decades of the twentieth century are years in which the economic and demographic growth of the city is punctuated by major upheavals such as the Great Strike of 1905 and the Viapori Rebellion of 1906 (see section 1.6.), events with a far-reaching influence on the literary image of the city as a space of extreme possibilities as well as extreme danger. In the literary representations of this period, Utopia and Apocalypse lie closely together. Perhaps surprisingly, this is also a period in which literary protagonists express a growing sense of belonging to the city and to the particular parts of the city they begin to call their home.

I will start out with a brief discussion of Arvid Järnefelt’s novel Veljekset (“Brothers”; 1900) to illustrate how this period presents a more panoramic vision of the city.242 Järnefelt’s kaleidoscopic Veneh’ojalaiset (“The Family Veneh’oja”; 1909) will be approached as a key novel and will be discussed in depth. In this novel, new, emerging aspects of the literary city can be seen to function on a variety of narrative levels. Thematically, the city appears as a profoundly apocalyptic environment and as the stage for speculation and development driven by opaque financial and economic forces. In terms of the plot development, Helsinki functions not so much as a passive background, but as an active force enabling tremendous possibilities of self-fulfilment: drawing on a distinction used by Burton Pike, one can say that the city in this novel has irreversibly become a “presence” rather than a mere “setting” (Pike

242 Arvid Järnefelt (1861–1932) was one of the most colourful and prolific Finnish writers of the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries. Descendent from a family belonging to the nobility, his father was a high-ranking officer in the Czarist army, later a Finnish senator, while his mother Elisabeth kept one of the most influential literary salons of Finland. His brother-in-law was Jean Sibelius, and his brothers Armas and Eero belonged to the artistic elite of his time. The most well-known Tolstoyan in Finland, he at one point renounced his position at law court to become a farmer. His most canonized writings today are his debut novel Isänmaa (“The Fatherland”; 1893) and the biography of his parents Vanhemienny romaani (“The Book of My Parents”; 1928–1930). Several monographs have been written about Arvid Järnefelt’s works and life (see Hӓkli 1955; Niemi 2005; Isomaa 2009; Karkama 2010); amongst these, Saija Isomaa’s analysis of the generic complexities of three novels by Järnefelt, including Veneh’ojalaiset, bears the most immediate relevance to my study.
Finally, in terms of the attributes that are attached to the city by the literary characters, *Veneh’ojalaiset* presents a break with most of the earlier literature of Helsinki: regardless of the novel’s apocalyptic overtones, the protagonists express a profound sense of belonging to the Finnish capital.

In Järnefelt’s *Veljekset* and in *Veneh’ojalaiset*, as well as in a number of short stories and city novels from the 1910s, two important approaches within which the urban space operates serve as indications that a new relationship is being forged between the city and the urban protagonist. The first approach is that of the panorama, a narrative strategy used to impose a totalizing order and a measure of comprehensibility on the complex and ambiguous cityscape (see de Certeau 1984: 91–95; Prendergast 1992: 210–211; Berg 2011: 189). Complementary with this panoramic view is a relation with the city that is acted out in transitory experiences on ground level, through an invisible “chorus of idle footsteps” (de Certeau 1984: 97). It is arguably in the syncopated interaction between both perspectives that a complex experience of the city is grounded. The ground-level experiences of literary characters in this period, moreover, increasingly express a heightened sense of mobility when compared to earlier instances from Finnish literature. Literary characters such as Henrik in *Veljekset*, Hannes and Hinkki in *Veneh’ojalaiset*, and a number of characters in the 1910s prose texts written by Maila Talvio, Eino Leino and Toivo Tarvas, are shedding the limited mobility typical of the earlier Young Men and Women of the Provinces. Increasingly, they experience the city environment through everyday walking.

### 5.1 A PANORAMIC VIEW OF THE CITY

Arvid Järnefelt’s novel *Veljekset*, a multi-perspective depiction of Finnish society in the late nineteenth century, opens with an extensive panoramic description of Helsinki.243 The sweeping view of the city in the following quote reaches beyond the superficial modern city of leisure and light, and displays an acute concern with life at the urban fringes and the margins, as well as a heightened awareness of the city’s ongoing transformations:

> Henrik lived on the outermost fringes of the capital, where because of the rocks there were no more regular streets, or where a street grid had but only recently been planned and laid out amidst the remains of

---

243 The brothers of the title live in different parts of Finland and are representative of different layers of society: the ambitious civil servant (Uuno); the labourer (Gabriel); the parson (Johannes); and the undecided student (Henrik). The novel received mixed reviews: Eino Leino condemned the novel for its one-sided ideological viewpoint and for its didactic tone, which, he claimed, made it difficult to enjoy it as a work of art (Leino 1901: 18–19), and the novel was criticized for its patchy structure (J-n 1901: 14).
stones broken by explosions; – behind those and a few barren, wave-battered rocks, the sea, continuously rumbling, widened into an open expanse, with no land in sight at the horizon. From his window, Henrik could see at his right an institution for fallen women and an incredibly tall brick tower, constantly pouring out a thick black cloud of smoke, which indicated which way the wind blew. It was the electric lighting power centre, thanks to which in the boutiques of the city, in the public institutions, the festival halls, and in the streets, bright lights flared up when a small lever was switched. On the left, one could see first a maternity hospital, then, in the direction of the sea, the ramparts of Kaivopuisto, and in the direction of the land, the green pinnacle of the Catholic Church, and behind that, the first orderly features of the city. (Järnefelt 1900: 5)

In contrast to other (both contemporary and earlier) descriptions with which Helsinki novels and short stories analysed in previous chapters opened, the city is portrayed here from a perspective that is at once all-encompassing and still very selective. In the novels and short stories discussed earlier, the experience of the city presents a narrow physical and social urban reality made up of the asphalt of the Esplanade and the interiors of bars, clubs and restaurants, with very few references to factories, working-class districts, or even shops. The panorama seen from Henrik's window in Veljekset, on the contrary, does not present the reader with the centre of the city, but with the urban fringes. It is a first indication that the narrator is particularly concerned with dissecting the social and moral problematics of the people living on the margins of society.

In the panoramic view of the city with which Veljekset opens, the physical features of Helsinki are endowed with important symbolic functions, and the way in which they are described reveals a keen understanding of the city's complexity. Helsinki is described as an expanding city, laid out in an ongoing process of planned destruction (“[...] where a street grid had but only shortly been planned and laid out amidst [...] stones broken by explosions [...]

244 "Henrik asui pääkaupungin äärimmäisellä laidalla, missä kallioiden vuoksi ei enää ollut säännöllisiä katuja tai olisi vastasuunniteltuja tulevaisuuden linjoja keskellä rikkiammuttujen kivien röykkiöitä; – näiden takaa muutamien paljaiden aallon nuoleminen karien peristä avautui meri aavaksi ulapaksi maan näkymättä taivaanrannassa, ja alituisesti pahasti. Ikkunasta näkyi oikealle eräs turvalaitos langenneita naisia varten ja suunnattoman korkea tiilitorni, josta aina tuprusi paksu musta savupiili, tuulen suuntaa osottaan. Se oli sähkövalaistuksen voimankeskus, jonka ansiosta kaupungin puodeissa, julkisissa laitoksissa, juhlasaleissa, kaduilla kirkkaat valot leimasivat vaan pientä nappulaa siirtämällä. Vasemmalla näkyi lähinnä lapsensynnytyslaitos, enemmän merelle pääi kaivopuiston vallit, maalepääin katolisen kirkon viheriäinen huippu ja sitten alkavan kaupungin säännöllisemmät piirteet."
great fear of the age” (Wilson 1992: 92), prostitution, and in the moral dangers of city life. Next to this, the power station is situated, the hidden force centre providing the energy for the brightly lit city. The plume of smoke emanating from its chimney literally and symbolically indicates which way the modernizing winds of change are blowing. Almost all contemporary descriptions of Helsinki feature mentions of dazzling electric lights; the panoramic view in Veljekset aims beyond such superficial appearances of the modern city, to suggest the hand that switches the lever. In relation to the two buildings first mentioned, the maternity hospital seems an almost logical extension of a particular series of urban institutions: by virtue of its being mentioned immediately in relation to the earlier buildings, it is almost as if the children are produced at the hospital in a similar way as the electricity in the power centre – for the sake of the city’s energy. Further off in the panorama, two other images and archetypal functions of the city appear: that of the temple (the Catholic Church) and the fortress (the Kaivopuisto ramparts). Helsinki is constructed in this passage as a space defined by planological and technological dynamics, but also as part and parcel of social and moral problems.

The strategy of describing the city from a bird’s eye perspective is a technique typical of nineteenth-century and early twentieth-century novels which, as Bart Keunen points out, “tend to emphasize the deterministic relationship between protagonist” and environment (Keunen 2001: 426–427). This deterministic relationship can be found in a number of realist-naturalist (city) novels of the nineteenth century such as the Paris novels by Balzac and Zola, and drawing on Bakhtin’s study of the Bildungsroman (Bakhtin 1986), Keunen argues that novels functioning within such a deterministic and documentary, realist-naturalist paradigm read “buildings, streets, works of art, technology and other social organizations as signs that refer to historical developments” (Keunen 2001: 425); signs of the massive changes witnessed in the cities of the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries.

The panorama is the literary image which translates these complex processes into a single comprehensible vision. As pointed out by Michel de Certeau and, following de Certeau, by Christopher Prendergast in the latter’s study of Paris in the nineteenth century, the panorama constitutes an almost Olympian perspective of the city which involves the “exaltation of a scopic and gnostic drive” (de Certeau 1984: 92), and it constitutes “the very image of a certain urban rationality” (Prendergast 1992: 209). The panorama effects an epistemological process of coming to grips with a confusing spectacle, presenting urban conditions as a comprehensible totality with its own centre and inner logic. But it is also a way in which the urban text is totalized – a

245 The idea of a child as a tax payment to the city was not far removed from early twentieth-century thought, and is applied, for example, in a review of Maila Talvio’s Niniven lapset (H. S-M. 1915: 259).
way of producing a “fiction of knowledge” (de Certeau 1984: 92). The panoramic vision is related to what Nicholas Freeman has called, in his study of literary London, an empiricist reaction to the city, grounded in the “positivist belief that the city could be mapped and eventually understood by processes of painstaking investigation and analysis” (Freeman 2007: 26).

In Finnish literature of the first decades of the twentieth century, the panorama becomes a prominent means of approaching the city in a totalizing way, often with strong moralizing undercurrents. In the opening pages of Maila Talvio’s Niniven lapset (“Children of Nineveh”; 1915), for example, Helsinki is seen from the third-floor window of the apartment of the family Ståhle, which presents a view that suggests both promises and threats:

There truly was something radiant and electric in that white city. In between the city’s clusters of houses, one could see the friendly rippling blue inlets of the sea. Seen from the third storey, where the apartment of the counsellor was situated, the city was resting calm and smiling at their feet, as if it was handing pleasures left and right to all those hundreds and thousands that asked them from their city. The buildings were grouped around the white church in proud and regular groups. The air, full of dust, the smell of asphalt, and street noise, was saturated with irritating life. The green colour of the trees, which formed groups here and there in the city and along its fringes, had that strange and dark glow, which accumulates in plants before they wither.

(Talvio 1915: 6–7)246

Following an enumeration of positive attributes (“radiant and electric”; “friendly”; “calm and smiling”) in this passage, the reader is confronted with a number of portentous omens. The street noise is “saturated with irritating life”, and the colour of the trees displays an ominous “strange and dark glow, which accumulates in plants before they wither”. The decay visible in the trees foreshadows the descent of the family Ståhle, only recently arrived in Helsinki, into moral and financial bankruptcy, but also the coming fate of Helsinki as a “New Nineveh” on the verge of the Great War (See Viinikka-Kallinen 1997: 25).

Similarly, Eino Leino’s novel Pankkiherroja (“Bank Lords”; 1914) opens with a reassuring and pleasant panoramic view of the South Harbour of Helsinki:
Experiences of a Metropolis in Motion. Changing and Disappearing Helsinki

Helsinki, in which the capital’s parks and prominent churches are described side by side with the bustle of the harbour and the unloading of a coal ship. The homely panorama becomes gradually overshadowed, however, by a menacing thunder cloud. The narrator suggests that this very cloud is perhaps in hindsight the reason why the “sunshine was this time so sharply strong and bright” (Leino 1914: 8). Like the bright glow of the plants before they wither in Niniven lapset, the urban panorama in Pankkiherroja has the intense beauty of something about to be shattered. The portentous elements present in the urban panorama are not merely juxtaposed with the characters’ mood; rather, the panoramic totality of the city reflects and foreshadows the future plot developments, and the eventual fate of the protagonist(s).

The panoramic opening view in Veljekset, and in other Helsinki novels in its wake, is symptomatic of an endeavour to present a totalizing understanding of the city, aimed at identifying and questioning its social, economic and moral complexities. The acute awareness of processes underlying urban space is central to the thematics addressed in the novel as a whole, in which moral questions are of the first order. Towards the end of Veljekset, when the protagonist, Henrik, considers that he feels, finally, at ease and content in the city, he realizes that one of the main reasons for this is the fact that he is free “from those real city activities that made his life so agreeable, such as the many and indispensable physical urban activities: sweeping the streets, watering, building, coach driving, and so on” (Järnefelt 1900: 438). Few of the Esplanade walkers discussed in the earlier chapters – and certainly not Olli Suurpää or Mauritz Ahlfelt (see section 4.2.) – would have cared if they were not able to take part in all aspects of the city’s activities, but to Henrik, who has experienced a moral awakening, the city appears as a larger chain of causes and effects that all have to be taken into account.

247 “Juuri tuon samaisen ukkospilven vuoksi, jonka nopea nousu oli jo kauaksi merelle kemottanut, mahtoikin auringonpaistee olla tällä kertaa niin kirpeän väkevä ja hellittävä.”

248 While the view is panoramic, it is also fragmentary. As Juhani Niemi points out, the fragmentary and episodic character of the novel can be considered as a feature pointing at the ongoing “modernizing development of the form” of the Finnish novel in this period; Veljekset is a novel in which the “fragmentation, wavering identity, and kaleidoscopic nature of modern culture” becomes visible (Niemi 2005: 148, 150).

249 The urge to get at the source of the production chain pervades much of Järnefelt’s life and oeuvre (see Karkama 2010: 15).

250 “[...] että hän itse vapautuu niistä varsinaisista kaupunkilaistoimista, jotka juuri tekivät hänen olonsa niin mukavaksi, kuten enimmät ja välittämättömimmät ruumiilliset kaupunkityöt: katujen lakaseminen, kasteleminen, rakentaminen, ajurina oleminen ja niin edespääin.”

What Henrik is concerned with in this passage is what Marx has called the “fetishism of commodities” (Marx 1867/2005), the masking operation that hides from sight the production processes and workers involved in producing commodities (see also Harvey 1989b: 8)
In the panorama at the beginning of *Veljekset*, there is a reference to an urban environment in the process of being violently destroyed, levelled and built: Henrik lives on the fringes of the city, “where a street grid had but only recently been planned and laid out amidst the remains of stones broken by explosions”. It is a descriptive detail that bears considerable relevance for the understanding of the novel and its protagonist. Henrik’s life, too, is being disrupted and is informed by a sense of insecurity, and he is looking for ways to create a home and to find a purpose in life (see also Niemi 2005: 143–146). Eventually, he becomes attached to his lodgings in the capital and to the room from which the panoramic view above is seen. But this home, like Henrik’s paternal home in the countryside which has been lost after the untimely death of his father, is not to last. The wooden house in Helsinki in which he lives has to make way for the forces of urban development that were seen encroaching upon the panorama in the novel’s opening pages. He has to move out and when, on a fine day in the spring, Henrik walks through Helsinki towards his old quarters, the view he sees is one of “great destruction”: half of the house is already ruined, and shreds of wallpaper, with the decorative patterns he knows by heart, are swaying in the wind. Henrik immediately connects the destruction of this home in the city with the destruction of the paternal house, the old vicarage, which had been violently “torn from his heart” (Järnefelt 1900: 436–437). Like that of so many other characters in turn-of-the-century Finnish literature, Henrik’s rootlessness is linked to the destruction of the paternal home in the countryside (see section 3.5.). When the political situation becomes more critical (the February Manifesto is obliquely referred to), Henrik’s sense of homelessness is juxtaposed against the plight of the whole nation, but, perhaps surprisingly, not without positive repercussions. Destruction offers the possibility of starting again with a clean sheet, without earlier dependencies on past dreams or affiliations:

251 “[…] suuren hävityksen näky.”
252 “[…] sydämmestä se juuri noin revittiin kuin tämäkin.”

Significantly, this sense of uprootedness can also be read allegorically, in terms of the socio-political condition of the Finnish people at this point in history. Made fatherless by strained political conditions, the various social classes of the Finnish nation have become adrift, and lack a clear purpose; and the beckoning city does not, in the view of the narrator of *Veljekset*, offer a stable home or profession.

The title “Veljekset” (“Brothers”) invites a comparison with Aleksis Kivi’s classic *Seitsemän veljestä* (“The Seven Brothers”; 1870), in which the development of the orphaned seven brothers can be read allegorically as a coming-of-age of sorts of the Finnish nation. Kivi’s seminal novel features the metaphor of the egg-shell in a context not dissimilar to the one quoted from *Veljekset*. Juhani Niemi notes that the brothers also bear some similarities to Järnefelt himself, and his brothers Kasper, Eero and Armas (Niemi 2005: 147).

253 The publication of the February Manifesto constituted for Järnefelt, as for so many leading Finnish men and women, a shocking turning point (see Karkama 2010: 218; see section 1.6.).
The home vicarage and his earlier image of life was not more than something like a broken eggshell, from which he had emerged. And having to leave that confined abode, which first had grieved him, turned into a feeling of triumph, when the ceiling of his new home opened into the arching sky, and the walls receded into a blue haze. (Järnefelt 1900: 532)254

Henrik's sudden feeling of epiphany and relief comes while he is in the train on his return journey to Helsinki. It is a feeling in which the reader finds hints of the optimistic pantheism which permeates many of Järnefelt’s works, and of Tolstoyan ideas concerning the rejection of the material world. But other ideas are at work in conjunction with these: despite earlier feelings of rootlessness, alienation and discomfort in the city, Henrik has become attached to the capital, which he begins to call his home. In large parts of the novel, he is still described as ill at ease when moving independently in city space.255 Gradually, however, everyday walks, rather than the panoramic views he looks at with such mixed feelings at the beginning of the novel, begin to give real meaning to his experience of the city.256 In the terms proposed by de Certeau, the “imaginary totalizations” of the panorama make way for the less visible, but more tangible everyday practices of walking the city, with their own epistemological repercussions (de Certeau 1984: 93). In the last conversation Henrik has with the young woman he loves, the geography of the city has become infused with a comforting intimacy: “I have become so used to this city and to these familiar routes from your place to mine and from my place to yours”, he tells her as he prepares to leave the city one last time (Järnefelt 1900: 541).257

254 “Kotipappila ja hänen entinen kuvansa elämästä oli vaan niinkuin rikkinakutettu munankuori, josta hän oli tullut ulos. Ja tuon ahtaan asumuksen jättäminen, joka ensin suretti, muuttui riemuksi, kun uuden kodin katto taivaan laeksi väljeni ja seinät eteni siniautereeksi.”

255 When lost in Turku, for example, he immediately looks for the nearest horse-drawn carriage (Järnefelt 1900: 274–275)

256 In the earlier prose of Järnefelt, the panoramic view is typically that of the countryside landscape, and it is this landscape which sets the highest demands on the protagonist. In Järnefelt’s debut novel Isänmaa, the typical panorama is the homely countryside panorama seen by Heikki (for the panoramic view of the Finnish countryside in relation to Järnefelt’s Maa kuuluu kaikille [“The Land Belongs to Everyone”; 1907], see also Niemi 2005: 169–171). In Veljekset, the panorama of the provincial home lands is lost, destroyed with the auctioning of the home vicarage; Henrik has to make do with the complex and at first repulsive panorama seen from his Helsinki home.

257 “Olen niin tottunut tähän kaupunkiin ja näihin tuttuihin välimatkoihin teiltä meille ja meiltä teille [...]”
5.2 HELSINKI IN ARVID JÄRNEFELT’S VENEH'OJALAISET (1909)

In Järnefelt’s subsequent Helsinki novel, several of the themes that were taken up in Veljekset are further developed. Veneh’ojalaiset (“The Family Veneh’oja”; 1909) is a multifarious analysis of the social and historical events at the outset of the twentieth century, but also a kaleidoscopic panorama of an emerging metropolis. Following subsequent generations of the Veneh’oja as they descend on the Finnish capital, Veneh’ojalaiset focuses, in particular, on the events of 1904–1906: the years of the Russian oppression, the murder of the Russian Governor-General Bobrikov, the Great Strike and the Viapori rebellion (cf. section 1.6.). These eventful years are focalized mostly through one member of the Veneh’oja, Hannes, who is born in Helsinki. Järnefelt’s novel recounts the coming-of-age and the inner struggles of this character, but it also tells the tale of a socially divided city. The narration moves through the city of the well-to-do, and descends into the urban districts of poor labourers, socialist agitators, working-class gang members and underground characters, resulting in a description of the city’s development from below (cf. Häkli 1955: 373; Anttila 1956: 643). The way the city appears in this novel is not only given historical depth by situating Helsinki at the summit of a family history spanning numerous generations, it is also presented through different focalizations (male and female, middle class and lower class) and in relation to other imagined cities, particularly St. Petersburg. The narrated city, moreover, takes into consideration a much higher geographical portion of the city than earlier representations in literature, expanding into the suburbs and the islands in front of the Helsinki harbour.

In many respects, Veneh’ojalaiset is the kind of complex city novel V.A. Koskenniemi calls for in his 1914 collection of essays Runon kaupunkeja

258 As a historical document, the novel is particularly interesting, since the main character Hannes was modelled on Johan Kock, a prominent historical figure Arvid Järnefelt was well acquainted with. Captain Kock was one of the most important actors during the Great Strike and the Viapori Rebellion; the leader of the Red Guard in Helsinki during these years. The accuracy with which Järnefelt has described the events of 1905–1906 can be gleaned from the fact that in a long open letter to Järnefelt, posthumously published in 1916, Kock accused the author of publishing confidential information and of presenting events in a way which was so convincing and so recognizable, that it made it almost impossible for the general audience to see it as a work of fiction; Kock consequently accused Järnefelt of libel (Kock 1916; see also Isomaa 2009: 210–213). Apart from the interest caused by the accusation of libel, the novel received relatively little attention at the time of appearance.

259 Hannes resembles in a number of respects the protagonist of Järnefelt’s earlier novel Veljekset, Henrik. Like Hannes, Henrik feels that the city is morally despicable, although he nevertheless thrives in Helsinki (Järnefelt 1900: 440). Henrik, in turn, is quite similar to the protagonist of Järnefelt’s debut novel Isänmaa (1893/1997). Heikki (see also Viljanen 1959: 141–142). Heikki is a Finnish variation on the name Henrik.
(“Literary Cities”), in which he claims that the Finnish capital as yet lacks a “synthetic literary work about Helsinki, a novel or an epic, in which this Northern capital would live in its totality with all those characteristics which nature, race and culture have bestowed upon her” (Koskenniemi 1914: 89; see section 1.1.).

Veneh’ojalaiset puts such claims in perspective. In this novel (as in a number of other literary texts from the first decades of the twentieth century which will be discussed below), Helsinki appears as a multi-layered space-in-motion: a city which changes; develops; which is threatened with destruction, and which undergoes radical modifications which have their direct and often far-reaching impact on the experiences of the protagonists. What makes this novel particularly interesting from the perspective of the literary experience of Helsinki is the way in which it combines radically different frames of reference pertaining to the city. Building on prevalent realist and naturalist discourse on the city, it infuses the experience of urban space with distinctly apocalyptic undertones, which culminate in the climactic events of 1906. The most striking aspect of the urban experience is the sense of intimacy which the protagonists, Hannes, in particular, gradually experience in their relationship with Helsinki.

5.2.1 A NOVEL ABOUT THE LAND QUESTION

Veneh’ojalaiset is a novel which is concerned throughout with experiences of the city and with the way in which characters react to and interact with the city they see growing and expanding around them, and yet it begins in a rural environment within an epic time frame. The temporal scale of the narration, which descends into a time before history, when a word for the city does not yet exist, is a first indication of the sweeping perspective Järnefelt wants to offer on the phenomenon of the city. The epic story at the beginning of Veneh’ojalaiset features an agrarian society before the introduction of property, there is an ancient king ruling over his far-away subjects, and a devil in human shape. The family Veneh’oja lives in a semi-paradisiacal state in the wilderness of southern Finland. In a plot reminiscent of the book of Job, the devil, angry at the well-ordered pastoral society, disperses the Veneh’oja, posing amongst others in the human shape of a land surveyor.

260 “Meillä ei ole [...] syntetistä runoelmaa Helsingistä, romaania tai eeposta, jossa tämä pohjoisen pääläiskentän eläisi kokonaisuudessaan kaikkine niin ominaisuuksineen, joita luonto, rotu ja kulttuuri ovat sille määrittäneet.”

261 Since the Veneh’oja did not even possess a word for “city”, they had to denote it with the term “big village”.

262 A similar descent into epic time is also present in Järnefelt’s earlier novel Maaemon lapsia (“Children of Mother Earth”; 1905); see also Niemi 2005: 160; Isomaa 2009: 125 ff.

263 On the intertextual relation of the novel with the Biblical story of Job, and with Faust, elements which bear relatively little relevance to the literary city, see Isomaa 2009: 218–232. Isomaa
The partitioning of the land, possibly referring to the land enclosure started in 1757, when Finland was still part of the Swedish kingdom, is not dissimilar to the Fall of Man and the expulsion from paradise (see Molarius 1996a).264 The opening of the novel is couched in mythical and allegorical language, and it presents the history of the family Veneh’oja within a narrative structure that sets out in the time of the “absolute past” – the time of “fathers and founders of families” normally destined for the epic genre (cf. Bakhtin 1981: 13–14) – and that moves on to the historical past, to include events that are set apart in time only a few years from its first readers.

After the expulsion from their lands and through a series of adventures, a branch of the Veneh’oja – more a tribe than a family – descends on Helsinki. The voyage is recounted in terms of an epic struggle, including murder, banishment to Siberia, a contract with the devil and a fight with the god of the heavens himself. Throughout, the Veneh’oja long for a return to their lands. This longing, however, is profoundly contradictory, since they never were in the possession of any fixed lands, and their desire is hence for a return to a nomadic, pre-fall reality. It remains unclear throughout the novel whether Helsinki thus symbolizes the city of Cain, outside of paradise, or, regardless of everything, may bear some characteristics of a beckoning Promised Land.

In Veneh’ojalaiset, the question of land ownership takes on a central role, and the question is repeatedly associated with the problems posed by the city.265 Since the city is the seat of government, rationalization and money-based economy, it is only logical that the primeval anger of the Veneh’oja is directed at the very idea of the city, and one of them, Heikki, concludes a pact shows that many of the characters in the novel bear traits of Faust, but that these Faust figures are complex and thoroughly ambiguous characters.

264 For contrasting comments on the themes of the expulsion from paradise and exodus in Järnefelt’s novel, see Isomaa 2009: 313. There remain a number of possible intertextual references to exodus in the text. In a travesty of Moses, the mater familias of the Veneh’oja is not able to reap the fruits of her arrival in the city; she dies from exhaustion upon arrival. Franssi, who will lay the basis for the economic success of the Veneh’oja, is equally linked to Moses, since as a child he is transported in a basket amidst the flow of people that runs to the city. Hannes, when he is looking for his lost child in a maternity at St. Petersburg, dreams of carrying his child back home in a small basket.

265 Järnefelt was particularly preoccupied with the land reform question, and he wrote on the subject the novel Maamon lapsia (“Children of Mother Earth”; 1905) and the pamphlet Ma a kuuluu kaikille; Matkoiltani Laukon lakkomailla (“The Land Belongs to Everyone; From My Journeys to the Strike-Torn Region of Laukko”; 1907 [for the English translations of these Finnish titles, I am indebted to Ahokas 1973: 177]). The unresolved question of land reform would eventually be one of the issues that triggered the Finnish Civil War. Some literary historians have been keen on seeing direct references in Veneh’ojalaiset to particular contemporary events, going so far as to identify the Veneh’oja directly with the thousands of tenant farmers notoriously evicted from their homes at Laukko during the winter of 1906–1907 (see Ahokas 1973: 107), and situating the legendary lands of the Veneh’oja at Laukko (Niemi 2005: 168).
with the devil to set fire to the “greatest village of all”. In the way in which he describes the land question in a distinctly urban novel, Järnefelt follows international city literature. Richard Lehan has pointed out that writers such as Dickens, Balzac and Gogol, but also Joyce, Ibsen, Hauptmann and D’Annunzio were essentially “considering in literary terms what Marx and Engels had taken up in economic terms: the land question; the displacement of a peasant class; the entrapment of a commercial class in a new kind of city controlled by money and commodity relationships”, and the whole commensurate breakdown of traditional social structures, culminating in the disorientating and alienating city experience (Lehan 1998: 107). In many ways, the land reform question was a crucial part of the urban question, and it is no mere smoke screen, then, that Järnefelt had originally claimed that *Veneh’ojalaiset* was going to be a book on the land question (see Kock 1916: 5).

### 5.2.2 CITY OF SIN: THE BROTHEL SCENE

Hannes and his nephew Hinkki are the first generation of the *Veneh’oja* who grow up in Helsinki, and they are also the first significant literary characters in Finnish prose born in the Finnish capital. They get to know the city from within, and from the very first scene in which they appear, they are described as negotiating the city’s boundaries. Hannes and Hinkki appear into sight at the moment when the epic time frame from the beginning of the novel moves into the historical time of the late nineteenth century. This change is initiated first with a panoramic view of the city (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 49), which then zooms in on the group of boys to which Hannes and Hinkki belong (ibid.: 50–51). The introductory scene describes a fight in which different gangs of teenage boys compete for a stake in the capital’s territory. The boys, from Finnish, Finland-Swedish and Russian backgrounds, repeat on the level of the city street the much more monumental struggles shaking Finnish society around the turn of the century. But for Hannes and Hinkki, this fight is not a political allegory; it is also about becoming acquainted with their immediate surroundings, the streets and parks of their home city.266

Hannes grows up in the Finnish capital, but like many of the characters moving to Helsinki in this period, he will have to get to know the secrets of the city by way of an introduction into strange and alienating surroundings. A considerable number of the Finnish Young Man/Woman of the Provinces novels of this period feature the introduction of the protagonist in an unfamiliar space, where he or she will be confronted with the vices of the city, and where either he/she or the reader will shed his/her last doubts as to the

---

266 The Helsinki novel *Herran vanki* (“Prisoner of the Lord”; 1923) by Olavi Kallio equally begins with a school boys’ fight in Helsinki between boys from Finnish-speaking and Swedish-speaking background.
real nature of the city. According to Robert Alter, the entrance of the protagonist into an unfamiliar space is a central topos in the realist novel, and particularly so, since “the realist novel is to such a large degree about the encounter with the new social and moral experience and how it reshapes the protagonist” (Alter 2005: 32). In Finnish literature, such pivotal spaces are more often than not the kind of spaces that Foucault has identified, in his seminal “Of Other Spaces” (Foucault 1986) as “heterotopias”, the kind of “other spaces” that not only carry their own manifold meanings, but that also have their ordering repercussions on the space at large they belong to. Heterotopias, according to Foucault, are “something like counter-sites, a kind of effectively enacted utopia in which the real sites, all the other real sites that can be found within the culture, are simultaneously represented, contested, and inverted” (Foucault 1986: 24). Of the characters discussed in the previous chapters, Jaana Rönty is unwittingly introduced into a brothel (Leino 1907/1998: 195–210); Hilja Kahila is confined to a police gaol (Järnefelt 1919: 104), and students such as Antti in Helsinkiin (“Helsinki”; Aho 1889/2000: 83 ff.) and Eljas in Hellaassa (“In Hellas”; Ivalo 1890: 4 ff.) end up in the confusing maelstrom of crowded bars, all upon arrival in the capital. Almost invariably, these heterotopian localities symbolize an aborted initiation into one of the more disconcerting sides of the city.

The heterotopian space in which Hannes is introduced in Veneh’ojalaiset is, again, a brothel (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 79 ff.), the spatial embodiment of the vices, but also of the double moral standards of modernizing urban society. In the late nineteenth century, literary representations of the brothel were informed by the vivid and complex discussion of prostitution that occupied sociologists from New York to Paris; the brothel became, in literary and other representations, “a metaphor for the whole new regime of nineteenth-century urbanism” (Wilson 1992: 105). In “Of Other Spaces”, Foucault draws particular attention to brothels, denoting them as an “extreme type of heterotopias” (Foucault 1986: 27). The brothel is a heterotopia par excellence: it is set partly outside of the traditional set of moral values which upholds the social structure of society, a place in which social interaction is regulated according to a particular set of rules and

267 Alter is speaking of the introduction of the protagonist into a masked ball in Flaubert’s L’Éducation sentimentale (Sentimental Education; 1869), and notes similarities with, amongst others, instances in the work of Balzac. L’Éducation sentimentale also has, of course, a famous brothel scene, and so have several of the canonical realist and naturalist novels. Zola’s Nana (Nana; 1880) features a scene in which two men are introduced into the brothel of Nana; the passage, features, like that in Järnefelt’s Veneh’ojalaiset, a peep-hole scene (see Brooks 2005: 116–117).

268 In Järnefelt’s debut novel Isänmaa, there is a brothel scene which has some similarities to the one in Veneh’ojalaiset – a scene which was deleted from some of the later editions of the novel (Niemi 2005: 87). The protagonist in Isänmaa is certainly aware of what kind of place he finds himself in, and any sense of sudden awakening or initiation in his case is out of the question (Järnefelt 1893/1997: 172–175).
Experiences of a Metropolis in Motion. Changing and Disappearing Helsinki

habits. The brothel can be seen as an “institution” of sorts within society, mirroring and questioning sexual morals, ideas of family, femininity and masculinity.

Entrance into a brothel is generally restricted, a feature which Foucault saw as one of the typical characteristics of heterotopias (ibid.: 24). In *Veneh’ojalaiset*, Hannes is led to the brothel passively, and he is guided by his nephew Hinkki, who has a more intimate knowledge of the city. The scene is seen through an extradiegetic narrator, something which is indicated, amongst others, by the way in which Hannes is continuously referred to by the nickname he hates, “captain”. Hinkki claims that they are going to a farewell party organized in his honour; it is the day before he will leave the city. The party is supposedly taking place in the house of Hinkki’s fiancée, Magda, but to the reader, it rapidly becomes clear that Hannes is introduced into a brothel. According to Saija Isomaa, the three central novels in Järnefelt’s social commentary period (Isänmaa [“The Fatherland”; 1893], *Maaemon lapsia* [“Children of Mother Earth”; 1905] and *Veneh’ojalaiset* [1909]) all revolve around the moment of awakening of the protagonists, who, through various circumstances, “suddenly awaken to see the ‘truth’ about societal circumstances, and begin to act according to their new insight”; Isomaa speaks in this respect of a “poetics of awakening” (Isomaa 2009: 11). Hannes’s awakening in this heterotopian space opens his eyes to urban problematics, but also to the vicious nature of society at large.

The initiation rite into the secrets of the city in *Veneh’ojalaiset* revolves around a gradual unmasking scene performed on Hannes by Hinkki, who wants Hannes to realize that his belief in the authorities (school, amongst others) is naïve. The pivotal space of the brothel contains a variety of elements of make-believe that are gradually revealed as deceptions. In the antechamber where Hannes is led, he is confronted with a subtle masquerade, which centres on the resemblances to normality and to the traditional bourgeois home. Similarly to other brothel scenes in Finnish literature, the women in this scene take a central role in the creation of a travesty of a bourgeois home: they are repeatedly described as occupied in an act of transformation in front of mirrors: combing their hair, changing clothes, putting on make-up, and the like (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 79; see also Leino’s *Jaana Rönty* [“Jaana Rönty”; 1907/1998: 195 ff.]). In *Veneh’ojalaiset*, the element of dressing up is taken to unprecedented heights when Magda gets ready to see the clients, who are waiting in the room next door; she takes off her normal clothes and puts on a night gown (at least, this


269 The other “principles” of the heterotopia singled out by Foucault are that all world cultures constitute heterotopias, that the function of a specific heterotopia can change over time within a society, that a heterotopia “is capable of juxtaposing in a single real place several spaces […] that are in themselves incompatible”, that heterotopias tend to be linked to significant turning points in people’s lives, and, lastly, that they “have a function in relation to all the space that remains” (Foucault 1986: 24–27).
is how Hannes interprets her attire), as if to imitate an atmosphere of homely intimacy. It is at this point that recognition starts to dawn on Hannes (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 86).

A considerable part of the unfolding events gains its comic depth and suspense through the discrepancy between what the reader knows and what Hannes gradually starts to suspect: that he is not in the house of a respectable middle class family, after all. To maximize the effect of masquerade and impending unmasking, the description of Hannes’s naivety is taken to extremes, and the brothel scene, in line with earlier comic undercurrents in the character description, is densely packed with comic and ironic narrative elements. Several words of modality (“probably”, “apparently”, “seemingly”) serve as textual indications of the moments during which the narration slips into the point of view of Hannes, and all these cases underline Hannes’s lack of understanding of the situation.270

When Hannes meets a number of intriguing creatures at Hinkki’s fiancée’s house, the narration continues: “probably they were Magda’s sisters”; “apparently they really intended to have a party in Hinkki’s honour” (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 79);271 and when the matron arrives, “she was probably her [Magda’s] mother or aunt” (ibid.: 82).272 The misreading is carried to comic heights in a soliloquy by Hannes, in which he extolls the beauty of Hinkki’s bride, and which reads like a farcical parody on Shakespeare’s famous sonnet 130 (“My mistress’ eyes are nothing like the sunne”), or the Song of Songs: “the skin of Hinkki’s bride is white as the purest potato flour, and an indescribably sweet scent reeks from her clothes, but my girl is brown like a coffee bean and she certainly does not always reek well” (ibid.: 81).273 The similes, making use of comparisons with everyday objects, enhance the comic effect: Hannes is presented as a simple and innocent boy, on the threshold of a profound and eye-opening shock.

Among the enigmatic elements experienced by the protagonist, sounds play a particular role. Gradually, Hannes starts to realize what is happening when “in the bigger room [next door] the noise of drunks can be heard”

270 For words of modality as textual indications of focalization, see Herman & Vervaeck 2005: 78–79.

271 “[…] arvatenkin ne olivat Magdan sisaria.” “Nähtävösti oli tässä aikomus viettää todella juhlaa Hinkin kunniaksi […].”

272 “[…] oli kaiketä tämän äiti taika täiti.”

273 “Hinkin morsiamen iho on valkea kuin hienoin perunanauho ja sanomattoman ihana tuoksu lähtee hänen vaatteistaan, mutta se minun tyttöni on ruskea kuin kahvipapu eikä suinkaan aina hyvältä tuoksu.”

The reference to the smell of Magda’s clothes may also be read as a parody on the Song of Songs 4:11; “the smell of thy garments is like the smell of Lebanon” (in the King James Bible Translation). A reference on dark skin is also present in the Song of Songs 1:5; “I am black … / as the tents of Kedar / as the curtains of Solomo”).
Experiences of a Metropolis in Motion. Changing and Disappearing Helsinki

(Järnefelt 1909/1996: 84). Lefebvre argues that “[s]pace is listened for, in fact, as much as seen, and heard before it comes into view” (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 199–200). In this case, the emphasis on the faculty of hearing in the brothel scene strengthens the focalizer’s sense of passivity and insecurity. Yi-Fu Tuan, in his ground-breaking work on environmental perception, states how the “effect of evanescence and fragility in this description of place is achieved by dwelling on the sounds. Compared with seeing, hearing is unfocused and passive.” (Tuan 1974: 51) In Veneh’ojalaiset, the sounds next door expand the spatial environments perceived by Hannes, who is confined to the enclosed space of the antechamber. Since he is in the brothel for the first time, however, he is unable to interpret the meaning of what he hears. Confused, he demands an explanation from Magda, who had warned him earlier that he should leave before the clock sounds midnight. Like an inverted Cinderella, the innocent girl will turn out to be a prostitute when the masks are taken off at midnight.

When Hannes hears the merry voices of men in the adjacent room, and distinguishes the voice of one of his teacher, a further sense of understanding dawns upon him – not only has the bourgeois home of his earlier illusion turned into a brothel, but he realizes that all of society is involved in upholding the vicious practices he detest. In a Herculean rage, he throws everybody out of the building. The consequences of his actions are severe. The subsequent police enquiry results in his expulsion from school, and his possibilities of social advance thus diminished, he joins the armed forces and goes to the Military Academy at St. Petersburg, where his hate for prostitution and loose morals receives theoretical grounding through

274 “[…] rupesi sen ison huoneen puolelta kuulumaan humalaisten melua […]”

275 In other brothel scenes in Finnish literature of this period, sounds give away the true nature of the space into which the protagonist is introduced. Jaana Rönty, thinking she has been accepted into a household as a maid, wakes up in the middle of the night because of strange sounds which announce to the perceptive reader the real nature of her surroundings and, consequently, what kind of degenerating turning point is in the offing: “From the rooms around her, she heard drunk singing and a piano playing.” (Leino 1907/1998: 209) (”Ympäriltä huoneista kuului loilotusta ja pianonsoittoa.”) Similarly, the novel Rakastunut rampa (“A Cripple in Love”; 1922/2006) describes the sensation of young Nelma, unwittingly introduced into the Helsinki brothel of her acquaintance Mimmi Rumsfelt: “From the room next door, she heard happy voices and clattering sounds” (Lehtonen 1922/2006: 123). (”Vierushuoneesta kuului iloisia ääniä ja rymyä…”)

276 The story of Hannes is in another way, too, explicitly framed as a modern fairy tale: Hannes and his beloved Kerttu are the modern, Finnish equivalents of the Grimm Brothers’ story about Hansel and Gretel. Hannes’s tale resembles other archetypal tales: a boy without a father, he resembles in many respects the archetypal foundling, called to overturn society’s structures.

277 One important detail which further enrages Hannes is that Hinkki claims he can see Hannes’s illegitimate father through the key hole (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 88); he thus links the brothel with Hannes’s traumatic background and the shame about being a child fathered in unclear circumstances (see also Isomaa 2009: 235).
conversations with Russian revolutionaries. The urge to change society for the better and to dissolve prostitution will eventually lead him to join to revolutionaries and to draw up plans for the destruction of cities.

5.2.3 TENTACULAR CITY

In the pivotal brothel scene, the protagonist of *Veneh'ojalaiset* comes to realize that prostitution lies at the heart of the city and its moral diseases. The city is not only the most explicit environment for loose morals, but their very cause. Hannes’s uneasy feelings about the city’s moral and social questions are later moulded into words by the revolutionary Natalja Federova he meets in St. Petersburg, who pities the human race, “builders of dead villages and rotten cities” (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 167), and who tells Hannes unequivocally that “prostitution is a disease produced by the city” (ibid.: 162–163). Like the landlessness of the poor, and the exodus of the destitute to the major population centres, prostitution is caused by the city, and the injustice that has been done to the Veneh’oa can be compared with the injustice done to all poor men and women forced to sell the work of their body for money. Shocked by the vicious nature of society and by the role of the city and of his own actions within it, Hannes becomes ready to devote his life to a politics of radical change.

The image of the city which is constructed in *Veneh'ojalaiset* from the epic time frame onwards, and which is reasserted in Hannes’s pivotal experience in the Helsinki brothel and in the revealing conversations he has with the Russian revolutionaries, feeds into the discourse of the city as Minotaur, constantly yearning for new blood, draining and perverting the forces of the countryside. It is an image that becomes prominent in a number of late nineteenth-century writings on the city; London, for example, was described as expecting a yearly “maiden tribute of the New Babylon” (see Stead 1885) and feeding on the countryside, like the “tentacular cities” described in the poetry of Émile Verhaeren (*Les Villes Tentaculaires*; 1895; see also

---

278 “Voi teitä kuolleiden kylien ja mätien kaupunkien rakentajia [...]”

“Prostitutsioni on kaupungin tuottama tauti.”

Natalja’s verdict on prostitution and the city has immediate relevance to Hannes, since the place where he meets Natalja is a St. Petersburg orphanage where he has gone searching for the illegitimate child Kerttu has borne him (see also Isomaa 2009: 211).

279 Henry James, in 1888, described London as a “strangely mingled monster”, an “ogress who devours human flesh to keep herself alive to do her tremendous work” (as quoted in Walkowitz 1992: 15). In the late nineteenth century, London was repeatedly described as a devouring monster and a heathen god. As Freeman points out, this association “employed Christian rhetoric in demonizing the metropolis, admitting both the city’s spiritual failings and the continuing totemic power of religious language in describing its realities” (Freeman 2007: 202).
In Finnish literature, Maila Talvio is one of the authors who repeatedly draw on such pessimistic discourse (see for example *Kultainen lyyra* ["The Golden Lyre"; 1916], section 3.5.). This dystopian imagery appears most tangible in descriptions of working-class conditions in Helsinki. Compelling examples can be found in the prose of L. Onerva: in "Pentti Korjus" ("Pentti Korjus"), published in the short story collection *Nousukkaita* ("Parvenus"; 1911), Helsinki is described as "this bright, clattering city" which every year "threw into the darkness hundreds of young people which it had used up, for which it did not have any use anymore, and every year it received new, uncorrupted blood from the countryside, new tender children’s souls to eat" (Onerva 1911: 34–35). In another passage in the same short story, which presents a prototypical description of a provincial character’s degeneration in the capital, Helsinki is described both as a living being with tentacles, which throws up its slaves after a hard week’s work, and as a technological construction which is composed of engine rooms peopled with “a dark people, that rarely sees the light” (ibid.: 30). In Onerva’s story “Jumalien hämärä” ("Twilight of the Gods"), a sketch published in the short story collection *Vangittuja sieluja* ("Imprisoned souls"; 1915), the working-class district Sörnäinen is likened to a Moloch’s

---

280 The concept of the "tentacular city" was also developed by the Belgian socialist leader Émile Vandervelde, under whose influence it became well-known in socialist circles in France, as well as in Northern Europe (see Josefson 2003). The Finnish socialist leader N.R. af Ursin refers to Vandervelde’s concept of the tentacular cities in a 1907 article in the socialist periodical Työmies (af Ursin 1907).

In a long 1910 article published in the Finnish periodical *Aika*, Jean L. Schlegel describes the cities in Verhaeren’s poetry as vampires drinking the juice of the countryside, but he ends his analysis of Verhaeren’s poetry with the observation that the cities, those earlier “blood-sucking cities, cannibals and the cause of the emptying of the countryside – hold, regardless of their downsides, the element of redemption, because it is here that the spirit of reform and justice emerges” (Schlegel 1910: 465).

281 “Joka vuosi syöksi tämä valoisaa, helisevää pääkaupunki pimentoihin satoja nuoria ihmisiä, jotka se oli käyttänyt loppuun, joilla se ei tehnyt enää mitään, joka vuosi sai se uutta turmeltumatonta verta maaseudulta, uusia herkkää lapsensieluja syödäkseen.”

282 “Ja suurkaupunki syöksii onkaloistaan ilmoille kaikki raskaan työviikkonsa mustat orjat. Se purki taivasalle maan-alaisista konehuoneistaan hämärän kanssa, joka harvoin näki aurinkoa [...].”

The wording in the quote from Onerva’s collection of short stories Nousukkaita closely resembles the tone of a newspaper article which had appeared in 1900 in the periodical *Uusimaa* under the title “How the capital taxes the countryside” ("Maaseudun vero suurkaupungille"): "Soon new flocks of inexperienced servants, young men and women, will begin to move from the countryside into the capital. Many of them do not even approximately suspect the dangers to which they expose themselves. And before long, their luck might run out. Not much later, the countryside will receive back these people, broken in body and soul. That is what has happened – does it have to continue that way?" (Anon. 1900)

The editor-in-chief of the periodical was, coincidentally, also a scion of the Järnefelt family, although not directly related to Arvid Järnefelt.
gaping mouth (Onerva 1915: 37–38). In her most famous novel, *Mirdja* (“Mirdja”; 1908), L. Onerva presents a similar image of Helsinki as a consuming force, but in this text, Helsinki appears not as an industrial city devouring the working classes, but as a city of light, leisure and (sensuous) pleasure that consumes the sensitive protagonist eager to experience the world. Seen from the protagonist’s window, Helsinki is described in terms of a burning fire: “it is treacherous, it does not sleep, it is noisy and voluptuous, it burns. Mirdja knows it all too well. For many years, it has been burning Mirdja every day and every night.” (Onerva 1908/2002: 84)

### 5.3 HELSINKI IN TRANSFORMATION

Behind the pessimistic realist and naturalist discourse on the city as “a diseased centre outside of nature” (Lehan 1998: 70) looms an awareness of the radical changes brought about in the modernizing and urbanizing society of the turn of the twentieth century. The city appears not only in the cloak of Biblical cesspit of vice it dons intermittently, in *Veneh’ojalaiset* and other early twentieth-century novels, it appears as the instigator of a radical commodification; first the commodification of space (see Harvey 1989b: 176–177), which in turn leads to a commodification of the landed labourers who are forced to sell their bodies in the city. It is ironical that for Hannes, who feels utterly repulsed by urban evil, there is no escape from the contaminating nature of the city and its vices, since he is both victim and beneficiary of urban developments. Hannes’s education and his status in life are all grounded in the vices of the city, since they have been made possible by the money of his uncle Franssi, whose fortune, in turn, is based on the shrewd exploitation of urban evils. As a horse carriage driver, Franssi is familiar with the secrets of the city, and able to take his clients to brothels after bar closing time; his fortunes accumulate after he opens a brothel in addition to a liquor store (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 36–39). But it is the tremendous rise in real estate prices which forms the real basis of Franssi’s fortunes: without having to raise a finger, he wakes up one morning almost ten times richer than he had thought he was. No wonder the city appears to Franssi like something out of a fairy tale: “A magical castle, a fairy tale wonderland was to him this golden city with its inexhaustible wells of fortune” (ibid.: 113).

The city is a force transforming everything it comes into contact with, and in *Veneh’ojalaiset*, the development of Helsinki, the change from wooden
houses to stone houses, speculation and the growth of the city – a metamorphosis that is also highlighted in the opening lines of *Veljekset* – accompany the protagonists’ rise in society. References to the interaction between city growth and character development had featured only tangentially in Finnish novels from the late nineteenth century; in Santeri Ivalo’s *Aikansa lapsipuoli* (“Stepchild of his Time”; 1895), for example, the description of the great building enthusiasm which sweeps the city in the early spring is juxtaposed only in passing with the desperate struggle of the protagonist to keep his financial situation from total collapse (Ivalo 1895: 132). In a number of 1910s novels and short stories, the city’s whirlwind changes become increasingly central to the plot development, most prominently in Maila Talvio’s *Niniven lapset* (“Children of Nineveh”; 1915), Eino Leino’s *Pankkiherroja* (“Bank Lords”; 1914), and in the collections of short stories by Toivo Tarvas, published in the 1910s.

Maila Talvio’s *Niniven lapset* is of particular interest, since it is arguably the first Finnish novel which thematizes urban planning and development. In this novel, the first effect of city growth, development and speculation is a moral one. *Niniven lapset* recounts a tale of speculation and fraud set in the worlds of publishing, finance, industry and urban development, and one of the protagonists caught up in the corrupting scheming is Leo Teräs, the promising but gradually degenerating eldest son of the parvenu Ståhle family (see above, section 5.1). Towards the end of the novel, Leo is completely ruined and he becomes involved in one last scheme. Together with other leading speculators, he plans the construction of an enormous cultural temple that will transform the city, but that also constitutes an omen of the impending disaster threatening this world of speculation. The development project in question constitutes the climax of the novel, and within it, all different threads come together to seal the fate both of the city and the various protagonists. To build this cultural temple, which will be called “Nineveh”, several wooden houses have to be razed to the ground, including the house of Old Man Säfstrand, an enigmatic and exceedingly rich

286 Like so many families in early twentieth-century Finnish prose literature, the elder generation still has the traditional Swedish name, while the son has changed his last name into the Finnish equivalent. In *Niniven lapset*, Old Man Säfstrand’s son Aarne has changed the family’s surname to Ruokoranta. In Toivo Tarvas’s *Eri tasoisita* (“On Different Levels”; 1916a) and *Kohtalon tuulissa* (“The Winds of Fate”; 1916b), Albert Hagen changes his surname to Hakala (Tarvas 1916b: 32–33). In Maila Talvio’s *Niniven lapset*, the children of the Ståhle (“steel”) family use different translations: the son Leo changes his name into Teräs (literally “steel”), while his sister Gisela uses different pseudonyms derived from her name: her tango pseudonym is Gisela Acero, while her pen name is Cela Rauta (Cela Iron). In the case of Gisela, the name changes can be considered representative of the masquerading and self-fashioning strategies typical of newcomers to the city, and in particular of upwardly socially mobile women (for examples in American fiction see Geyh 2006: 428; Simpson 2011: 503)
The old man in his dilapidated house grows to be a symbol of the repressed and distinctly uncanny conscience of the city; unheeded, he becomes a metaphor for a world overtaken by modernity, moved aside by the Faustian forces transforming the city. In his tragic quality, he resembles the figures of Philemon and Baucis, the old couple Goethe's Faust has to dispossess in order to fulfil his plans as developer, and who are “the first embodiments in literature of a category of people that is going to be very large in modern history: people who are in the way – in the way of history, of progress, of development; people who are classified, and disposed of, as obsolete” (Berman 1982/1989: 67).

Finnish prose literature of this period contains a number of similar instances of the motif of the “mad old man in the back yard”. In Järnefelt's Veneh'ojalaiset, the patriarch of the Veneh’oja, Heikki, lives hidden in Franssi’s house after his escape from Siberia, first in a back room, later in a wooden shed in the yard of Franssi’s brand-new stone building, babbling stories of past wrongdoing to which no-one listens. The motif of the old man in the wooden shed amidst the multiplying stone buildings emphasizes, both in Talvio’s Niniven lapset and Järnefelt’s Veneh'ojalaiset, a particular temporal rhythm in the relationship between the protagonist and the city. While the city can also be experienced as an unchanging background, contrasted with the rapid developments of a protagonist, this motif underlines the immobility of the characters in contrast with the changes in the urban landscape, and the experience of being left behind by one’s own time (see Pike 1981: 16–17). From the early years of the twentieth century onwards, urban prose on Helsinki increasingly draws on such dissonant rhythms between the development of literary characters and their urban surroundings.

In the decades following Finnish independence, Mika Waltari became one of the most important authors to document the fast-moving built environment. In his second Helsinki novel Appelsiininsiemen (“The Orange

287 Old Man Säfstrand is referred to as the nation’s Diogenes, but also compared explicitly to Balzac’s Père Grandet (Talvio 1915: 180).

288 In a sense, the whole clan of the Veneh’oja can be regarded as a group similar to Faust’s Philemon and Baucis – disposable people who have to make way for the modernizing and urbanizing impulses of its age. In this context, one intertextual reference in Veneh'ojalaiset is of particular interest: the reference to Nietzsche’s Der Antichrist (The Antichrist; 1895) and the Hyperboreans, who live in a semi-paradisiac state until they are affected by the disease of modernity (see Isomaa 2009: 255–256).

289 Burton Pike gives Robert Musil’s literature as an example of the former, and suggests that Baudelaire might have been “the first writer who systematically exploited these syncopated rhythms as a way of indicating the estrangement of the individual from the city” (Pike 1981: 16–17).

290 In a sense, the problematic interplay between different kinds of temporalities is grounded in the uneven development that was the result of capitalist and industrializing developments in the city, played out on the level of individual lives.
Experiences of a Metropolis in Motion. Changing and Disappearing Helsinki

Seed”; 1931), perhaps more than in any other novel, Waltari shows Helsinki as a city with an ever-changing face; constantly new and highly symbolic buildings (the new, giant department store Stockmann, the Finnish Parliament) are being released from their scaffolds, and the effect is that the “face of the city has become more strange, more solemn” (Waltari 1931: 261–262). In Mika Waltari’s 1930s prose, the description of a changing and fluctuating Helsinki is mostly infused with an optimistic tone and by the thrill inherent to a sense of belonging to the vitality of a renewing world, but around the turn of the century, the reigning feeling was that of something being lost, and of being left behind by the fast changes of modernization which uncontrollably transformed the cityscape. In literature, Toivo Tarvas was the writer who most consistently took up the work of describing the disappearance of a bygone Helsinki in his collections of short stories. Amongst these, the aptly entitled Häviävää Helsinkiä (“Disappearing Helsinki”; 1917), is arguably the most interesting.

Häviävää Helsinkiä starts out with a framing story which presents a panorama of the city seen from an island in front of the harbour. It is an “enchanting view” which opens up before the eyes of the protagonist: “the

291 “Kaupungin kasvot muuttuivat vieraanmiiksi, ylhäisemmiiksi.”

292 Historically speaking, the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries saw urban development and change in such rapid convulsions, that the spectacle of demolished buildings gave rise to a new kind of newspaper section headed “disappearing Helsinki” (“Häviävää Helsinkiä”). The sections on disappearing Helsinki also functioned as announcements of upcoming auctions in connection with the demolishing of wooden houses (see Anon. 1899a; Anon. 1899b; Anon. 1902; Anon. 1910a).

The sections on the disappearing city were not a complete novelty. In 1885, the Finland-Swedish author Zacharias Topelius had written a newspaper series under the title “Anteckningar från det Helsingfors, som gått” (“Notes regarding the Helsinki that has disappeared”, see Topelius 1885/1968), but these consisted of more general, historical causeries on Helsinki’s past.

For a similar interest in “disappearing Stockholm” in Swedish media and literature in the late nineteenth century, see Borg 2011: 85–97.

The city municipality took notice and action with regard to the disappearance of sections of Helsinki’s buildings, and a special board was founded to document this disappearing Helsinki. The work of the photographer Signe Brander on behalf of the board resulted in a valuable collection of early twentieth-century photographs of the city (see Alanco & Pakarinen 2005).

293 Toivo Tarvas is the first author writing about Helsinki in Finnish who is also a native of the Finnish capital. In the 1910s, he wrote several novels and short stories in which Helsinki features prominently, and in which the literary characters’ intimate knowledge of the city and its codes is expressed also by a vivid use of Helsinki slang. He is mentioned in all of the lengthy studies concerning Helsinki in Finnish literature (Liuttu 1950: 49; Anttila 1956: 645; Liuttu 1963; Palmgren 1989: 45; Laine 2011: 150–155), but otherwise, Tarvas has been almost completely forgotten by posterity (see also Laine 2011: 150). Lea Rojola does look at Tarvas’s novel Eri tasoilla (1916a), but links the thematics in the novel to earlier, turn-of-the-century novels, rather than as seeing Tarvas’s prose as a predecessor of 1920s and 1930 thematics (Rojola 1999: 166–172).
grand city glimmered in front him like a beautiful pearl thrown on the sea shore of the Baltic Gulf” (Tarvas 1917: 11). The onlooker first rejoices in imagining the bustling life on the streets of Helsinki, but he is eventually overwhelmed by a desire to go down to the capital to experience the reality of the “city of his dreams” – to leave the comprehensive panoramic view and to immerse himself into the fragmentary reality on ground level (ibid.: 15). The short stories which follow, sketches of life in the capital, can be considered as the results of the probing wanderings of the protagonist in the first story. The sketches guide the reader through working-class districts and through the lives of mostly elderly people who look with dismay at the transformation of their beloved environment through the creation of new streets and squares, and the replacement of wooden houses by stone buildings. In every sketch, the juxtaposition between the fast changes of the built environments and the inability of the characters and their lived places to keep up with the modernizing process are evoked. A labourer returning to his birth city notices “with a depressing feeling of melancholy in his heart” (Tarvas 1917: 60) that the places he is looking for have gone for good (“Enkelten sävel” [“Angels’ Melody”]); a wooden coffee kiosk has to be removed by the orders of the municipality to make way for a stone building (“Kahviputka” [“Coffee Shed”]); and a traditional sauna, situated in an overgrown inner yard amidst high stone walls, has to make way after a speculator has bought the ground (“Vanha sauna” [“The Old Sauna”]).

The motif of the elderly man or woman in an old dilapidated house waiting for imminent destruction returns repeatedly in Tarvas’s sketches: there is a clear similarity between the fate of Old Man Säfstrand in Niniven lapset, for example, and that of Ottilia Silfverbäck, an old spinster who lives in a one-storey building, a “shrine protected by the Gods” in the middle of the “most noisy, most highly built part of Helsinki”, which is “squeezed in between the shadows of high stone walls”, and which will be expropriated by the city to make way for a new square (Tarvas 1917: 169; “Ottilia Silfverbäck”). The most tragic character in Häviävää Helsinkiä is the blind war veteran Antti Peltari, who keeps a cigarette kiosk at the southern side of the “Long Bridge” (“Pitkäsilta”). Antti Peltari has an intimate knowledge of the city which is based not on sight but on all other senses, but the changes in the built environment render his knowledge obsolete. Disoriented by the changes in the city’s soundscape, evicted from his familiar place when the wooden bridge is replaced by a stone one, he becomes unable to read his
immediate spatial environments, and is killed by a car on the new stone bridge (“Antti Peltari”).

Figures resembling the Faustian Philemon and Baucis in the midst of a radically changing urban environment remain persistent in literature during the late 1920s and 1930s. In Joel Lehtonen’s *Henkien taistelu* (“The Battle of the Spirits”; 1933), a novel that has strong Faustian undercurrents, the two elderly ladies living in a shed near the villa where the protagonist is housed clearly belong to this category (Lehtonen 1933: 123–124). The ladies are gradually chased out of their rightful home by the protagonist’s vicious landlady. *Henkien taistelu* is for the most part set in the Helsinki suburbs (see Chapter 7); more urban examples of elderly people and houses in the middle of modernizing society can be found in the work of Unto Karri and Arvi Kivimaa. In the opening lines of Karri’s 1929 novel *Sodoma*, the “clean and red-shining stone walls” of the new district Töölö are described to hide within themselves, “like a memory from times gone by”, a dilapidated house in which one of the novel’s protagonist, a young girl, is living together with her old stepfather (Karri 1929: 7).298 Like Antti Peltari in Tarvas’s *Häviävää Helsinkiä*, the girl dies in a car accident at the end of the novel. Similarly, “Kaksi Äijää” (“Two Old Guys”) a story in Arvi Kivimaa’s collection *Katunousee taivuaseen* (“The Street Rises to the Heavens”; 1931) evokes an urban world in the throes of developments which literally grow ahead of the city’s inhabitants. Again, the urban transformations are reflected in a changing soundscape: “What a different melody it [the city] had taken on in a few years’ time! First it had been peaceful, calm, familiar; now high-pitched, cold and taciturn!” (Kivimaa 1931: 127)299 Like *Häviävää Helsinkiä*, Kivimaa’s story describes a city in flux, in which a few remains of times past are still standing, wooden buildings inhabited by old men, embittered with the modernizing world around them, and bound to fade away. In Mika Waltari’s 1931 Helsinki novel *Appelsiininsiemen* (“The Orange Seed”), the protagonist Irene’s father, an elderly professor at the Helsinki university, is repeatedly referred to as being sidestepped by the rapid urban changes of his time, and is eventually run over by a car, the typical fate for a character out of tune with the rhythm of the city (Waltari 1931: 445–446, 453). Similarly, in Waltari’s novel *Surun ja ilon kaupunki* (“City of Sorrow and Joy”; 1936), an elderly character is run over by a car, in this case immediately upon arrival in Helsinki.

298 “Töölön siistien, punaisenhohtavien kivimuurien keskellä [...]”; “kuin muistona entisiltä ajoilta [...]”

299 “Kaupunki muuttui.
   Kuinka toisen sävyn se olikaan saanut muutamassa vuodessa! Ennen leppei, tyyri, tutunomainen; nyt korkea, kylmä ja vaiitelias!”
5.4 INTIMATIONS OF APOCALYPSE

As some of the titles of the novels discussed above indicate, turn-of-the-century Finnish literature drew on various strands of end-of-days rhetoric. Such strands included the apocalyptic undercurrents in decadent and symbolist literature in some of the work of Eino Leino, as well as (more indirectly) the profound pessimism experienced by people living through the carnage of the First World War, apparent, for example, in Talvio’s *Niniven lapset*. The potent millenarian imagery attached to Biblical (and Classical) Cities was not lost on Finnish authors in this period. Large and prosperous cities reminded Koskenniemi inevitably of the ruins of Carthage and Nineveh (Koskenniemi 1914: 45–47), and in his letters to L. Onerva, Eino Leino explicitly refers to Helsinki as a Sodom and Gomorrah (Leino 1960: 145, 148); Maila Talvio identifies Helsinki with Sodom in her historical novel *Linnoituksen iiliset rouvat* (“The Merry Wives of the Fortress”; 1941). Following the Great War, the cultural pessimism of which Oswald Spengler (1918/1926) was one of the prophets continued to link the fate of Biblical cities with those of the perceived decay of the Western world. It is a feeling summed up by the protagonist of Unto Karri’s Helsinki novel *Sodoma*, when he claims that “[s]imilar to Babel and Niniveh which lie in ruins, so will also this corrupted part of the world fall into ruins” (Karri 1929: 287).

The Biblical end-of-time frame of reference which is visible in titles such as Maila Talvio’s *Niniven lapset* (1915) and Karri’s *Sodoma* (1929) permeates the experience of the city in a whole range of novels in the early twentieth century. In a novel such as *Sodoma*, the Biblical rhetoric was related to a moral threat in the first place; in several of the Helsinki novels that appeared in the 1910s, the Great War adds a new and acutely pessimist dimension to...

---

300 Comparing a modern capital to Nineveh (as well as to other Biblical cities) is, of course, a well-established topos in literature of the turn of the twentieth century. Alfred Döblin, for example, describes Berlin as a modern Nineveh in an early sketch in *Der Sturm* (1910), and uses references to Nineveh and Babylon again in *Berlin Alexanderplatz* (*Berlin Alexanderplatz*; 1929/2004: 130), amongst others. In literature of Paris, too, the comparison between the capital and the ruins of Biblical cities was used for a wide range of purposes from the early nineteenth century onwards (see Citron 1961: 15–40). Popular literature made recourse to this imagery, too. One example in the literature of Helsinki is provided by the humoristic sketch “Vappu” (“First of May”; Sipuli 1906), which light-heartedly describes the Finnish capital as a modern Sodom and Gomorrah.

301 “Niinkuin on raunioina Babel, Ninive, niin raunioituu tämäkin turmeltunut osa maailmaa.” There are several other passages in the novel in which Martti compares the world in which they live with that of Biblical cities doomed to be destroyed. After an after-party at an artist’s atelier, where a model had performed the dances of Salome and Judith (Karri 1929: 40), Martti argues that his generation is “living the days of Sodom and Gomorrah. We are destroying everything, even those things that earlier generations have created.” (ibid.: 41)

(“Me elämme Sodoman ja Gomorran päiviä. Me hävitämme kaiken senkin, mitä meitä edelliset polvet ovat luoneet.”)
this rhetoric. In Toivo Tarvas’s short story “The Old Sauna”, the electric lights of a movie theatre are shining bright in the darkness, like “the fire writings at Belshazzar’s feast” (Tarvas 1917: 141).\textsuperscript{302} The same Biblical reference to the ominous letters spelling Babylon’s impending doom is found in Tarvas’s novel \textit{Kohtalon tuulissa} (“The Winds of Fate”; Tarvas 1916b). A long description of a wartime Czarist festival depicts how the illuminated Russian battle ships in the Helsinki harbour, “those spectacular, grand vessels, rose and fell against a dark background like the giant fire letters painted by the hand at Belshazzar’s feast” (Tarvas 1916b: 69).\textsuperscript{303} The fiery letters spell out, in other words, the coming end of an Empire, as well as that of a whole age.

In the same novel, the beautiful panoramic view of Helsinki seen from the top of the Fire Department Tower changes into a nightmarish scene when the longing for a lost home in the countryside overwhelms the protagonist Janne:

\ldots but the straight streets in the city below looked black and empty like the gaping abysses of eternity. He shuddered. The hundreds of metal stacks on the rooftops, with their moving, winged heads swinging back and forth in the spring wind, seemed like the black angels of the devil himself. And further away, the black smoke rising from the high factory chimneys blew like gruesome giant flags made from a mourning veil... (Tarvas 1916b: 76).\textsuperscript{304}

The hellish features of the city at night are, in this passage, first and foremost the result of the projection of the protagonist’s pessimistic feelings on the

\textsuperscript{302} “[…] niinkuin Belsazarin pitojen tulikirjoitus.”

\textsuperscript{303} “[…] nuo tummaa taustaa vasten loistavat suuret alukset nousivat ja laskivat juhlallisesti niinkuin Belsazarin pitojen käden piirtämät jättiläistulikirjaimet.”

Belshazzar’s feast and the sudden appearance of the portentous “mene tekel” on the wall of the Babylonian palace was a popular theme in nineteenth-century apocalyptic discourse (see Dennis 2008: 49). Kaarlo Bergbom had written a Finnish version of the story in 1864 (1864/1907–1908), and the topic became again popular in the early twentieth century. A play written on the subject by the Finland-Swedish author Hjalmar Procopé (1905) was staged in 1906–1907, with music composed by Jean Sibelius. The image was used also in political discussions in early twentieth-century Finland, for example during a discussion of Russian infringements on Finland’s autonomous status in the constitutional committee (see Anon. 1910b). The French movie “Le Festin de Balthazar” (1910) toured the Finnish movie theatres in 1910. The popularity of a topic such as Belshazzar’s feast is of course not only related to an interest in apocalyptic subjects, but can also be explained by the interest in the exotic and the oriental around the turn of the century.

\textsuperscript{304} “[…] mutta alla olevan kaupungin suorat kadut näyttivät mustilta ja tyhjiltä kuin iankaikkisuuden ammottavat kuilut. Häntä puistatti. Kattojen päällä olevat sadat metalliset savutorvet, joiden liikkuvia, siivekkäitä päätä kevättuuli heilutteli edestakaisin, tuntuivat itse pahan mustiltä enkeleiltä. Ja etäännöllä kokeista tehtaiten pipuista nouseva musta savu liehui kuin hirvittävän suuret suruharsosta tehdyt liput...”
surrounding landscape – a way of reading the urban environment that will gain prominence in the inter-war period, as will be shown in the following chapter.

The nightmarish and apocalyptic experience of the city in the novels and short stories mentioned above is framed by the experience of the Great War, or, as in Leino’s Pankkiherroja, by the culminating strain of foreign crisis and a domestic economic bubble about to burst. In Tarvas’s Eri tasoilta, the Great War transforms the city into a frightening spectacle: the black tin roofs of Helsinki, bathing in the November moon light, resemble “extraordinarily large coffins” (Tarvas 1916a: 127), and in the sequel Kohtalon tuulissa, the atmosphere of fear caused by the Great War is described as “the dreadful scythe of sudden death” hanging over the city (Tarvas 1916b: 99). At the end of Niniven lapset, the sense of unavoidable doom as the First World War approaches is mirrored by the vision of threatening clouds that take the shape of coffins (Talvio 1915: 303).

5.4.1 NOCTURNAL OUTING TO THE FORTRESS

In Järnefelt’s novel Veneh’ojalaiset, intimations of the Apocalypse add a crucial layer of meaning to the novel. The basso continuo of millenarian undercurrents is related to this novel’s genre as a novel of revolution (see Isomaa 2009: 240–249; Freeborn 1982), but also attuned to the end-of-days rhetoric seeping into much of fin-de-siècle literature (see Lyytikäinen 1999). From the very opening pages onwards, there are elements present in Veneh’ojalaiset that point to a potential cosmic battle and an end of times (the pact with the devil, the battle with the heaven’s God; see above, section 5.2.). As the novel reaches into historical times, revealing instances multiply

305 “[…] tavattoman suuria ruumisarkkuja.” In Eri tasoilta, the view is not so much related to an external threat, but rather inspired by the pessimistic feelings of the protagonist.

306 “[…] äkkikuoleman kammottava viikate.”

307 Saija Isomaa considers Veneh’ojalaiset as a novel with generic features typical of the revolutionary novel (as defined by Freeborn 1982), but transformed through the infusion of comic undercurrents atypical of this genre (Isomaa 2009: 248). Isomaa argues that “to find models for this novel type, it is enough to turn one’s gaze to the East” (Isomaa 2009: 241), and the model provided by Freeborn is indeed exclusively that of the Russian revolutionary novel. It can be argued, however, that comic elements are not untypical of this genre, in particular in its early twentieth-century emanations (Bely’s Peterburg [Petersburg; 1916/1978], most notably), and in other literary traditions outside of Russia (see for example Conrad’s The Secret Agent [1907/2012]). The most interesting non-Russian novel, however, which has potential significance for understanding the revolutionary and apocalyptic framework underlying Veneh’ojalaiset is Charles Dickens’s A Tale of Two Cities (1859), which appeared in Finnish in 1903 in a translation by Arvid Järnefelt’s sister-in-law Saimi Järnefelt. Järnefelt had mentioned Dickens as an author he admires, alongside with Dostoevsky, in 1913 (see Niemi 2005: 164).
in which the streets of Helsinki are transformed through the prism of a near-apocalyptic vision.

A particularly significant occurrence is a journey at night by stolen rowing boat to the fortress of Viapori, undertaken by Hinkki and Hannes. Similarly to the introduction into the heterotopian space of the brothel described earlier, this scene (which is set immediately preceding the brothel scene in the novel), is structured as a descent into liminal space in which boundaries are transgressed and in which a potent secret of the city is revealed. Various elements give the description of Hannes’s and Hinkki’s journey a tense and eerie feel: night is falling, and the two boys in their stolen rowing boat are on a border zone between the Finnish city and the Swedo-Russian fortress, between day and night. The atmosphere of suspense is enhanced by a rather rare instance in the novel of extensive metaphorical language. Here, as in Juhani Aho’s novella Helsinkiin, the crossing of a border is indicated by an ever denser use of figurative language (see section 3.2.). Arvid Järnefelt generally uses similes and metaphors sparingly, but as Hannes’s and Hinkki’s boat leaves shore, the scene is described in vivid metaphoric language: “The sun had set and from behind the horizon of the sea, it glowingly transformed a long cloud into thousands of red swans, which, growing ever larger, rose unto the zenith” (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 58). The figure of a cloud transformed into thousands of red swans flying up in the setting sun adds to the young boys’ voyage the attributes of a descent into the netherworld: the swan is connected internationally to the journey to the next world, and in Finnish mythology and folk poetry, the swan is the mythical animal of the Netherworld, a taboo animal dwelling in the waters of “Tuonela”, guarding the passages from this world to the next.309

308 “Laskenut aurinko paistoi meren takaa pitkän pilven tuhansiksi punajoutseniksi, jotka yhä suurenevina kohosivat taivaan laelle asti.”

The scene is reminiscent of strangely lighted images of St. Petersburg found in Bely’s Peterburg, for example the following:

“An enormous red sun was fleeing over the Neva: and the buildings of Petersburg seemed to have dwindled away, transformed into ethereal, mist-permeated amethyst lace; the windows reflected the fiery golden glow; the tall spires flashed rubies; and fiery flares invaded the recesses and the projections and set the caryatids and the cornices of brick balconies ablaze...” (as quoted in Fanger 1976/1986: 471).

309 For the symbol of the swan internationally, see Cirlot 1971/2002: 322. In Finnish nineteenth-century literature, the swan has also been linked to the beauty of the fatherland, but it was not until 1981 that the swan was officially named the national bird of Finland (Biedermann 1989/1993: 94–95). The red swan appears in a number of fin-de-siècle paintings by Akseli Gallen-Kallela (amongst others in an early version of the painting of The Mother of Lemminkiäinen, as the red swan of the netherworld Tuonela, and in his painting The Girls of Tapiola). In Finnish literature, the image of the red swan in this period can be found in Aarni Kouta’s debut poetry collection Tullijoutsen ("Fire Swan"; 1905).

In a more international context, an eerily red sundown was used in literature and painting in connection to the fin-de-siècle sense of the ending of an era. Munch’s The Cry and Bely’s Peterburg are
In this twilight zone, the familiar world has become distorted: “A new,
strange world had appeared in front of him [Hannes] as if conjured up”
(Järnefelt 1909/1996: 58). The city, in particular, appears literally to have
turned upside down: “When the waves [of the boat] had calmed down, the
sea level became steady and the whole city was to be seen, turned upside
down at the bottom of the bay” (ibid.: 59). This strange vision affects
Hannes strongly, and in an allegory of apocalyptic destruction,
foreshadowing his future involvement with the revolution, he rocks the boat,
bewildered at the miraculous effects of his childish actions upon the city he
sees reflected in the water:

The whole city burst in its junctures, the parks drifted apart from the
ground, and the towers fell. The old customs magazines trembled, the
multilayered stone walls shook, the banks, hotels, even the Emperor’s
palace burst into red flames and the church with its cupolas and
golden crosses fell from its foundations. (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 59)

Hannes’s sudden crazed joy as he witnesses the destructive effect of his
playful movements is reminiscent of the earlier visions of his ancestors,
struggling with the gods and aiming at the destruction of cities (in the first,
epic part of the novel), and a foreshadowing of Hannes’s later inner struggles
in a revolutionary context, both in St. Petersburg and when he will have
returned to his home city Helsinki. The description of the scene is almost
Dickensian in the way it combines comic elements (two kids at play) with a
frightening vision of utter destruction that will gradually take further shape

probably the most well-known works of art featuring such renderings, that could have been inspired by
the blood-red sundowns caused in Europe at the turn of the century by the dust spread from volcanic
eruptions at Krakatau (1883) and Martinique (1902) (cf. the translators’ note in Bely 1916/1978: 314).
310 “Uusi, merkillinen maailma oli kuin loihtimalla nousut hänen eteensä.”
311 “Kun sen laineetkin tyytivyivät, silisi merenpinta ja koko kaupunki näkyi ylösalaisin
kääntyneenä lähden pohjasta.”

A similar image appears later in the novel, when Hinkki watches Helsinki from the rebellious
312 “Hajosi liitoksistaan koko kaupunki, puistot maasta erkanivat ja tornit kaatuvat. Horjuivat
vanhat tullimakasiinit, vavaheltivat monikertaiset kivimuureit, pankit, hotellit, itse keisaripalatsikin
sytyy punaliekkeihin ja kirkko kupuineen ja kulturistineen perustuksistaan sortui.”

313 Saija Isomaa has drawn the connection between such violent, visionary scenes and one
particular scene from the Finnish national epic: the arrival out of the sea of a little man with an axe,
who cuts down the majestic world tree which has grown so large as to block the rays of the sun (Isomaa
2009: 227). It should be noted, in the light of the presence of a comic touch in the passage quoted
above, that the scene from the national epic (Lönnrot 1849/1999: 6–7), combines distinctly comic
dialogue and description with what in effect is an instance of cosmic destruction.
Experiences of a Metropolis in Motion. Changing and Disappearing Helsinki

as the plot evolves.\textsuperscript{314} Although concrete in its descriptions – even the flames seem realistic, since they could be simply reflections on the water of the last, red rays of the sun – the scene is also profoundly allegoric. The buildings are without exception allegories for functions within society Hannes will want to overturn later in life, during his time as a revolutionary: the Emperor’s might, the churches’ sway, the economic system of banks, the regulating forces of customs and the military.\textsuperscript{315} The highly stylized and archaic language used in the quote above gives the passage an enhanced solemnity, reminiscent of the language of the Biblical poetry of the psalms and the prophets. The effect in the Finnish original is enhanced by having three subsequent clauses begin with the verb rather than the subject, something which is not altogether impossible in the flexible Finnish language, but which carries an archaic and unnatural ring, and this stylistic device is continued anaphorically throughout the passage for further effect.

Prendergast, in his study of Paris in the nineteenth century, argues that the fin-de-siècle sense of things falling apart results in “two of our most powerful narratives of the contemporary metropolitan condition: stories of end-time and stories of playtime” (Prendergast 1992: 207). In stories of playtime, as opposed to apocalyptic stories, “the emphasis on accelerated falling apart remains but is redirected from the catastrophic to the aleatory [...], from nightmare to fun, apocalypse to \textit{bricolage}, ruins to waste, to the view of the city as playground and its debris as the material for a kind of urban \textit{fort/da} game [...]” (ibid.). In Järnefelt’s \textit{Veneh’ojalaiset}, the description of the outing carries images from this aleatory \textit{fort/da} game, but there are undercurrents related to a very real and immediate threat. The fortress Hannes and Hinkki are approaching holds the key to the Finnish political and military situation, and functions as a threat to the Finnish capital as much as it constitutes an integral part of its defence. The deepening tension that accompanies the arrival of the two boys at the fortress unfolds in an unexpected and even playful manner: Hinkki steers the boat towards a threatening sentry, and in a swift exchange of goods, he gives the Russian soldier two boxes of cigarettes he has stolen earlier that day, and receives in return a bit of gunpowder. It turns out that the bored Russian soldiers scrape gunpowder from their grenades and exchange them for cigarettes and alcohol with Helsinki inhabitants brave enough to dare the trip. When Hannes realizes what is going on, he is suddenly overwhelmed.

\textsuperscript{314} For the mixing of comic elements with apocalyptic descriptions in figurative speech in Dickens, see Alter 2005: 43–61.

\textsuperscript{315} See section 1.6. for the allegorical aspects of Eino Leino’s 1899 "Helsinki sumussa" (Helsinki in the mist).

The intimations of the apocalypse in \textit{Veneh’ojalaiset} are closely connected to the utopian undercurrents present in Järnefelt’s work: “Järnefelt challenged the meaning of bourgeois institutions such as marriage and the church [...] and considered these to be instruments to exploit and control human dignity [...]” (Karkama 2010: 15).
with a feeling of being at ease amidst the walls: “In one blow, the solemn magic of the fortress shattered in the captain’s [Hannes’s] mind” (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 65).\(^{316}\)

The passage marks the waterfront as a pivotal space of transition and transformation that will gain symbolic meaning as the plot unfolds. Hannes will later take a hill overlooking the fortress as his favourite spot to contemplate the possibility of conquering the fortress Viapori. The decisive events at the end of the novel will be played out on this very same hill. Hinkki’s fate is equally bound up with this environment: he will drown fleeing from the rebelling fortress at the end of the novel. Helsinki, in this passage, takes the form of an enigmatic city, containing a number of thresholds and doors leading into a hidden secret. The scene gives a first indication of Hannes’s future destructive powers, and of the city as a place that may be destroyed as a side-effect of seemingly innocent actions, something which is also intrinsically visible in the symbol of the gunpowder Hinkki barters from the Russian soldier – a potentially lethal weapon, turned over for a few cigarettes to a kid in order to make a bit of mischief at school.

5.4.2 “ALL CULTURE IS SWAYING, ALL FORMS ARE INVERTED”

The Finnish capital around the turn of the century is a growing and expanding city, and in literature, the experience of this changing urban world becomes infused with the dystopian rhetorics that are in vogue internationally. This end-of-days rhetoric gains an acute sense of urgency in the early years of the twentieth century when real, violent death and wholesale destruction become an all-too-real possibility. For a character such as Aarne Ruokoranta in Talvio’s *Niniven lapset*, it is not much more than a frivolously expressed adherence to a decadent worldview when he quotes Baudelaire in a letter written to Otteli Ståhle, with whom he earlier had had an affair:

> All culture is swaying, all forms are inverted. Everything is in movement. ‘Je hais le movement qui déplace les lignes.’ (Talvio 1915: 172)\(^{317}\)

Aarne is a disillusioned and degenerate character, and the quotation from Baudelaire’s *Les fleurs du mal* (1857/1998) is firmly in tune with turn-of-the-century decadent sentiments. In the early twentieth century, the world is fast

316 “Ja yhdellä iskulla hajosi linnoituksen jylhä taika kapteenin mielessä.”
317 “Kaikki kulttuuri huojuu, kaikki muodot käännetään nurin. Kaikki on liikkueessä. ‘Je hais le mouvement qui déplace les lignes.’”
catching up with this kind of cosmopolitan decadence. Like his father, Old Man Säfstrand (see above, 5.3.), Aarne represents a world that belongs to the past. When the First World War breaks out, the first ship from abroad to reach Helsinki brings not only sad tidings, but a first corpse: that of Aarne, who, a relic of a bygone world, has died on the return journey home (Talvio 1915: 320–321).

Finnish literature drawing on decadent and symbolist currents tends to set images of the apocalypse in a mythical-historical context (Lyytikäinen 1999: 211), but the events of 1905 and 1906 as well as the outbreak of the First World War turns earlier apocalyptic visions into realities that had to be contended with. Starting from the Czar’s issuing of the 1899 February Manifesto, which aimed at a far-reaching Russification of Finland and its institutions, an acute sense that “all forms are inverted” and that “everything is in movement” became endemic (see section 1.6.). In 1905 the Russian Empire, Finland included, came to a halt during the Great Strike, an event that constituted a real caesura to people living through these days (see Haapala et al. 2008). When in the following year the soldiers at the Russian fortress Viapori rebelled, the fate of the Empire was again in the balance and a potentially devastating shelling of the Finnish capital belonged to one of the possible scenarios. Several novels in addition to Järnefelt’s Veneh’ojalaiset describe the events of these years: Eino Leino’s Jaana Rönty (1907/1998), Kyösti Wilkuna’s Vaieka tie (1915), amongst others.

In descriptions of the near-revolutionary events of 1904, 1905 and 1906, Helsinki appears no longer as a city that is merely in movement, but as a city that becomes fundamentally transformed. The first instance of acute apocalyptic sentiments in Veneh’ojalaiset appears when the news of Bobrikov’s murder (June 16th, 1904) spreads through the city (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 268–269). After the death of the Governor-General, Kerttu, the wife of Hannes in Veneh’ojalaiset, believes the end of the world must be near: “Everything, everything started becoming confused, and she did believe what the old Kustaava [Hannes’s mother] had whisperingly said, that all those novelties that had so suddenly filled people’s thoughts, were nothing else than premonitions of the end of the world” (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 276).318 To Hannes, however, these events are not the end of the world, but the beginning of a new and better one, a feeling which he expresses in distinctly Biblical terms: “A miracle has occurred, Kerttu, in one year’s time, a flowering city has come into existence in the desert!” (ibid.: 277)319

A change in focalization is one of the aspects of the narration which infuse the description of revolutionary Helsinki with a sense of disorientation. In the passage immediately following the news of the murder, the bewildering

318 “Kaikki, kaikki aloksi meni sekaisin, ja hän uskoi hyvin vanhan Kustaavan hiljaa lausuman arvelun, että kaikki tuo uusi, mikä nyt niin äkkiä oli täytäntöä ihmisten ajatuksista, ei ollut muuta kuin lähestyvän maailmanlopun enteitää.”

319 “– On tapahtunut ihme, Kerttu, erämaasta on yhdessä vuodessa syntynyt kukkiva kaupunki!”
atmosphere is rendered through a change of focalization to Hannes’s wife Kerttu, and when later, the onset of the Great Strike is described, this happens again largely through the focalization of a disoriented Kerttu (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 285). Contrary to Hannes, Kerttu is completely in the dark about what is going on, and she experiences the revolutionary atmosphere as something profoundly negative (see also Isomaa 2009: 249). As Mieke Bal points out, character-bound focalization brings about “bias and limitation”, and in particular when events are focalized through naïve or childish characters, the discrepancy between the focalizer’s view and the reader’s knowledge may create a special effect (Bal 2009: 150). In Veneh'ojalaiset, the change of focalization entails also for the reader a loss of direction, and like Kerttu, the reader is waiting for the “captain” to enter again the stage of the narration to give authoritative shape to the events. The sense of being provided with limited and unreliable information is further strengthened by a reversal of normal epistemological hierarchies in these moments of crisis. Knowledge of the events in the city is suddenly monopolized by members of the city population that until then had been underprivileged: Kerttu has to rely on her children and servants for information of what is happening (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 287, 290).

One of the elements that further enhance the sense of profound disorientation in this suddenly transformed Helsinki is the fog enveloping the city, into which Kerttu, afraid for her children and her husband, has ventured (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 291–292):

A dense fog hung on the street. It had begun to get dark. Here and there one could see people walking fast along the street or suddenly appearing from around the corners. The sound of clopping heels could be heard clearly, but no horses running. At the same time, however, the clatter of hoofs approaching at a dizzying pace began to be heard, and before Kerttu had the time to turn around, three Cossacks flew along the street past her so suddenly that her hands and face froze in horror. (ibid.: 292)

The motif of the fog enveloping a city in turmoil is reminiscent of one of the founding texts of St. Petersburg’s apocalyptic rhetoric: Pushkin’s poem “Mednyi vsadnik” (“The Bronze Horseman”; 1833/1998), in which the

[320] Similarly, in Niniven lapset, the focalization shifts to the youngest child of the Ståhle family, Daniel, as the crisis deepens (Talvio 1915: 119 ff.).

The equestrian statue of Peter the Great hunts a desperate and disorientated hero through the misty streets of the Russian capital. The poem is arguably also referred to in Eino Leino’s poem “Helsinki in the Mist” (1899), which was the first literary work to render the tense atmosphere in Helsinki after the publication of the February Manifesto, which heralded the beginning of the first period of Russian oppression (see section 1.6.). The apocalyptic rhetoric of St. Petersburg is vividly present in Veneh’ojalaiset: the first plan conceived by Hannes and his revolutionary friends calls for the flooding of St. Petersburg by opening the sluice gates of the Neva (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 175–176), which evokes an apocalyptic image from the mythology on St. Petersburg that was also strongly present in Pushkin’s poem (see Pesonen 2003).

The image of fog enveloping a city has been used to manifold effects in urban literature; the fog shrouding Bruges in George Rodenbach’s Bruges-la-Morte (“Bruges the Dead”; 1892/2007) symbolized in part the melancholy of the protagonist, while in one of the most famous foggy openings in literature, Dickens’s Bleak House (1852–1853/2003), the mist covering London could be interpreted as hiding from sight the capital’s legal institutions (Keunen 2007: 282). In Helsinki novels, fog repeatedly occurs as a symbol of the disorientation of the protagonist, conveying the sense of a brooding atmosphere, but also, as in Leino’s poem and the passage from Veneh’ojalaiset, as an image of political turmoil. In Veneh’ojalaiset as in other novels, fog adds an eerie and profoundly disorienting dimension to urban scenes, and enhances the impression that sudden and momentous reversals can happen at any given moment.

On the day that Kerttu goes looking for her husband and children in the city, Helsinki is transformed on several occasions, giving Kerttu little certainty to hold onto. Almost immediately following the frightening scene in the fog, she finds herself on an overcrowded Esplanade. When rumours of an

322 Järnefelt was intimately acquainted with St. Petersburg and Russian literature; he was born in St. Petersburg, studied at the University of Moscow (see Karkama 2010: 34), and his mother belonged to Russian (Baltic German) nobility; moreover, Järnefelt was not only a dedicated reader of Russian literature, but also a translator into Finnish of Tolstoy, amongst others.

323 If the first revolutionary plan calls for destruction by flooding, the second, with its focus on Helsinki, envisions a possible annihilation through fire. The plan carries strong undertones of earlier destructive events in Helsinki’s history. Helsinki was completely destroyed by fire in 1713 during the Russo-Swedish war and was under threat of foreign fire in 1855 in yet another war (the Crimean) between East and West.

324 In Appelsininsiemen (“The Orange Seed”; see Chapter 6), a much later Helsinki novel by Mika Waltari, fog covers the Helsinki streets when the political crisis related to the actions of the extreme right Lapua movement deepens (Waltari 1931: 354–357). Eros and Thanatos are both present in this fog scene, in which the newly engaged protagonists Irene and Ilmari are visiting Irene’s dying aunt, and in which the city, fearing possible clashes between the army and extreme-right elements, is enveloped in fog (1931: 357).
impending Cossack attack spread, the crowd panics and Kerttu is literally swept along, until she manages to get hold of electricity pole (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 293–294). When she eventually returns home, she finds her children safe and sound, but she goes again in search of her husband in the dead of the night. The city is once more transformed:

[...] a complete and dark emptiness reigned in the centre of the city. Here and there people were walking along the street, but in civilian clothes, with galoshes on their feet, stepping noiselessly. As if an invisible lion had suddenly stifled the whole city under its pawn, saying: silent, you little pups! The stone walls were gleaming like large, dark ghosts in the night, and here and there window lights were twinkling in the nocturnal fog. And the silence was so deep that you could have heard a pin fall. But not a single police officer could be seen who could have told Kerttu whether anything had been heard of anyone being imprisoned, or of any incidents. (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 297–298) 

Again, the fog gives the darkened city an eerie atmosphere, in which the walls are transformed into “large, dark ghosts”, and in which the city is described through unusual light effects (the walls “gleam” [kumottaa”], the window lights “twinkle” [“tuikahdella”]). The apocalyptic experience of the city results in a specific kind of aestheticization of the urban environment. In the analysis of Juhani Aho’s Helsinkiin, I noted the link between a particular kind of aestheticization of the city and the menacing undertones of a specific urban experience (see section 3.5.). In literary descriptions of the Great Strike and the Viapori Rebellion such as the one above, the urban environment is transformed by the use of particularly sensory description (with notable references to stark contrasts between darkness and sudden light) and the conspicuous use of figurative language. The “complete and dark emptiness” of the city centre is broken by twinkling lights and transformed by the fog, and the change of the environment is so total that it seems as if a giant, invisible force (“an invisible lion”) has stifled the city. 

During the near-revolutionary days of the Great Strike and the Viapori Rebellion, privileged and underprivileged see their rights to the city reversed. Kerttu is most surprised by the sudden darkness, the silence and the

---


326 The lion can be interpreted as a reference to the lion in the Finnish flag.
emptiness of the streets after the confused crowds and bustle she witnessed earlier the same day, but an additional and momentous change is constituted by the disappearance of police officers, who are replaced by men in civilian clothes. As David Harvey points out, money does not necessarily give the “freedom to roam the city streets without fear of compromise”, and “situations frequently arise where the least privileged in the social order have the greatest liberty in this regard” (Harvey 1989b: 182). The near-revolutionary days of the Great Strike and the Viapori Rebellion provide exactly such moments during which the “least privileged in the social order” have the greatest liberty to take to the streets. The men Kerttu sees on the streets belong to the civilian guards that have taken control of the streets, and that are in part directed by her husband, as she finds out to her surprise (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 299).

In almost all literary descriptions of the Great Strike and the Viapori Rebellion, changes concerning who is free to roam the city streets can be found. Jaana Rönty, whose right to move through the city had been challenged with eventful consequences (see section 4.3.), lives the days of the Great Strike as “in a fever”, and she joins the crowds of working-class people that throng the streets (Leino 1907/1998: 311). Baron Manfelt, in the same novel, on the other hand, the man who, when challenged at the Esplanade, had shouted “I will go when I want to” (ibid.: 224; see also section 4.4.), experiences these days very differently. At first he, too, becomes enchanted by the changed city, he “walks the streets from morning to evening” and talks to total strangers (ibid.: 305). For the first time, however, his freedom of movement is impeded, and he is ordered by a Russian sentry to turn back from the vicinity of a Russian barracks (ibid.: 306). At night, with the view of the blacked-out city from his window, his usual self-confidence is gone, and he asks himself: “Had time come to an end? Was this the beginning of eternity?” (ibid 307)

Baron Manfelt’s feeling that something of tremendous consequence is on the verge of happening, or has in fact already happened, is shared by several other literary characters. The events of 1905 and 1906 are experienced simultaneously as the apocalyptic end of the world, and the utopian beginnings of a new one. The simultaneous presence of utopian and dystopian impulses can be traced to a long and influential tradition in writing on the city. Elizabeth Wilson has even argued that utopianism constitutes

---

327 “[…] kuin kuumeessa […]”
328 “Minä menen silloin kuin minä tahdon […]”
329 “[…] pitkin katuja aamusta iltaan […]”

For the secondary character Veli Forsberg (who was based on V.A. Koskenniemi) in Wilkuna’s Vaikena tie, too, the Great Strike offers incentives for flânerie, and it presents even one of the few occasions in Finnish literature of this period of the word “flânerie” (“olen flaneerannut”; “I have been flâneuring”; Wilkuna 1915: 232).
330 “Oliko aika loppunut? Oliko iankaikkisuus alkamassa?”
such a central theme in nineteenth- and twentieth-century (theoretical) texts on modernity, that, especially in Marxist texts, the “urban scene comes to represent utopia and dystopia simultaneously” (Wilson 1992: 108). Dystopian literary (and other) representations of the city can be argued to be animated by “an utopian desire” (Prakash 2010: 2), and this is certainly the case for the way characters such as Hannes in Veneh’ojalaiset and Jaana in Jaana Rönty experience the revolutionary city. The sense that time is coming to an end, and that a new order is on the verge of being installed, is tangibly visible in the way Helsinki and its streets are transformed in these novels, and the contradictory implications this invokes are one of the reasons why the experience of the city during the Great Strike and the Viapori Rebellion is repeatedly described as a solemn, almost religious event. In Leino’s Jaana Rönty, the scene describing Jaana, during the Viapori Rebellion, watching the rebellious fortress from Observatory Hill is compared to a near-religious experience, touching on the sublime:

In the early morning, she was standing amongst a dense crowd on Observatory Hill. The sun was shining on the waters, still like a mirror, and on the straits, at both sides of which smoke puffs were rising up. Nature was enveloped in a deep silence. The cupolas of the temples of the main fortress glimmered under the cloudless sky [...] At first, it seemed to Jaana as if children were playing at war, or as if a joyful workers’ group was blowing incredibly large tobacco smoke spirals from its cheeks.

But the incessant roar in the air soon filled her soul with a holy shudder. The children of God were at war there, and the Grim Reaper was collecting his harvest. She felt as if she was surrounded by higher powers, and instinctively she crossed her hands and silently she prayed to herself: “Our father, who art in heaven.” (Leino 1907/1998: 320–321)³³²

³³¹ As Saija Isomaa points out, Hannes’s obsession with his visions of the future is profoundly at odds with the practicalities of his everyday life: “he causes the evil that he wants to erase” (Isomaa 2009: 237).


Mutta yhtämiittainen jyrinä ilmassa täytti pani hänen sienunsä pyhällä vahvistuksella. Jumalan lapset siellä kävivät sota, kuolen viikatemien siellä teki korjuutaan. Ja hänestä tuntui kuin hän olisi seisunut korkeampien voimien ympäröimänä, vaistomasesti hän risti käntänsä ja rukoili äänettömästi itsekseen: ‘Isä meidän, joka olet taivaassa.’”

181
The description of the rebellious fortress under siege accentuates the eerie calmness displayed by the natural elements, the sun, the waters and straits. There is the slightly surprising mention of the “deep silence” that “reigned in the nature” of the scene – a silence only interrupted by the roar of the cannon. The presence of a higher power is first insinuated by the “cupolas of the temple of the main fortress”, a reference to the Orthodox Church at Viapori. Similar to the nocturnal outing in *Veneh’ojalaiset* referred to above, the description of the fortress contains both elements of stories of end-time and those of playtime, in which, as Prendergast points out, one finds “the view of the city as playground and its debris as the material for a kind of urban *fort/da* game” (Prendergast 1992: 207; see above). Resembling the metaphor of the “invisible lion” in *Veneh’ojalaiset*, the smoke from the artillery guns looks to Jaana as if giant and invisible workers are blowing smoke rings. When Jaana recognizes, however, that she is not witnessing children at play, but “the children of God [...] at war”, she is overwhelmed by a religious sentiment, and, regardless of her anarchist sympathies, she clutches to the Lord’s Prayer. Similarly, Baron Manfelt turns to the national-romantic poems of Runeberg when staring into the frightening darkness of the revolutionary city (Leino 1907/1998: 309), and Kerttu and Kustaava in *Veneh’ojalaiset* turn to the Bible when oppressed by the thought of the confusion reigning in striking Helsinki (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 288–289). In *Jaana Rönty*, the effect of the view of the rebellious fortress on the other citizens standing silently around Jaana is experienced in equally religious terms:

The crowd of people around her was standing silent as on a hill during church service. This view affected them as if it were Holy Mass. One had to be very silent in order not to disturb it.

But in the evening, the landscape changed its nature. The sky was clouded, and steel-grey waves were beating heavily on the shoreline. Large war ships had appeared on the horizon, their sides were shining in the sharp and bluish light, roaring and glistening, they came from under the dark clouds to the rebellious fortress. (Leino 1907/1998: 321)

Similarly to the descriptions of the city during the Great Strike in *Veneh’ojalaiset*, the revolutionary city in *Jaana Rönty* is described as an environment subject to sudden and total changes: the sun and the stillness of
The waters are transformed into darkness and stormy waves as Russian war ships, come to quell the rebellion, appear at the horizon.

The view of the fortress in Jaana Rönty literally affects the city crowd “as if it were Holy Mass”. In Kyösti Wilkuna’s novel Vaikea tie (“The Difficult Road”; 1915), the atmosphere in the city during the Great Strike is similarly described as that of a holy festival day, not in the least because all noise usually heard in the city has silenced:

No whistles from factories or train engines, no squealing of the trams or rattling of carts could be heard. There was a feeling as of a great celebratory day in the air, and people had a festive expression of expectation on their faces, as they slowly passed by along the sidewalks [...]. (Wilkuna 1915: 200)

The Great Strike lends the capital a particular solemnity, and to the focalizer, the view of the city is one of conspicuous beauty. When Markus, in Vaikea tie, sees the view of the city from Observatory Hill, he is overwhelmed by the experience, and exclaims: “What a beautiful capital we have, after all!” The peaceful and silent atmosphere appears to him, like to the narrator of Jaana Rönty, like that of a great Church Festival in the countryside (ibid.: 205).

In Wilkuna’s novel, the city is repeatedly described as transformed dramatically, if only through the expressions of its inhabitants and through their increasingly hurrying steps (ibid.: 186–187). The Great Strike, which had come “like a great Tsunami from the East”, has thrown all of society into a “chaotic Urstate”, and the inhabitants of Helsinki are described as awaiting the consequences of these events with frightful expectation (ibid.: 185).

The descriptions in Vaikea tie of the nocturnal city, bereft of its usual lighting, but lighted by spasmodic flashlights emanating from the Russian fortress, is particularly revealing:

Hand-held gas lanterns were shimmering here and there like glow worms, and from time to time, the blinding beam from a Viapori searchlight swept over the city like the eye of fate, which restlessly followed the events in that city that had thrown off all its shackles, that had ended up in a bubbling state of fermentation and that was hiding

---

334 “Kaikki tavallinen suurkaupungin melu oli kokonaan vaiennut. Ei kuulunut tehtaiden ja veturien vihellyksiä, raitiotievaunujen vonkunaa tai rattaiden räminää. Ilmassa oli tuntu kuin suurena juhlapäivänä ja odottava juhailme oli ihmisten kasvoilla, heidän hiljalleen soljuessaan pitkin katukäytäviä [...].”

335 “Kuinka kaunis pääkaupunki meillä sentään onkaan! [...] Kaikkialla on niin rauhallista ja hiljaista kuin maalla jonakin suurena kirkkojuhlan.”

336 “[...] kuin mahtava hyökyaalto idästä [...]”; “[...] yhteiskunnan kaaokselliseen alkutilaansa [...]”
all its possibilities, that city which had veiled itself in darkness like a woman in childbirth. (ibid 189)337

Similarly to the Great Strike descriptions in *Veneh’ojalaiset*, the eerie atmosphere enveloping the city is rendered in *Vaikea tie* by reference to suddenly appearing unusual light effects (“hand-held gas lanterns shimmering here and there like glow worms”; “the blinding beam from a Viapori searchlight”), and the extraordinary situation is described by using metaphors that describe the giant forces at work in the city. To Markus, the protagonist in *Vaikea tie*, the city appears as a personified being that has “thrown off all its shackles” and that “was hiding all its possibilities”, and, perhaps the most striking simile to describe revolutionary Helsinki, as a city that “had veiled itself in darkness like a woman in childbirth”. The passages reverberates with threatening and frightful references (the “blinding beam” of the searchlight “like the eye of fate”), but also with intimations of hope and promise.

As the quote from *Vaikea tie* illustrates, the apocalyptic intimations felt by several literary characters in turn-of-the-century Helsinki novels function as vehicles for specific aesthetic experiences. This aestheticization is expressed through an increased use of metaphorical language, as well as by striking light and colour imagery. Infused with a menacing, near-apocalyptic sense of threat, the urban landscape is given shape through sudden flashes of light, producing an effect of disorientation. Suddenly appearing and disappearing illumination and bright colour effects have been seen as central to the experience of the modernizing city. Walter Benjamin, in “On Some Motifs in Baudelaire”, suggests that the invention of the match is one of the innovations “that contributed to the shaping of a new mode of staccato perception” (Benjamin 2006: 190–191; see Alter 2005: 98). Drawing on Benjamin, Robert Alter has pointed out the creative use of light effects in descriptions of urban scenes in early modern literature, arguing that the light in Flaubert’s prose, for example, is often “stroboscopic, flaring for a moment and then going out, like the match of which Benjamin speaks” (Alter 2005: 26). Creative use of sudden light effects is also typical of Bely’s early modernist rendering of the city (ibid.: 98).

Sudden appearances of bright lights similar to the shimmering “hand-held gas lanterns” and the “blinding beam from a Viapori searchlight” (Wilkuna 1915: 189) can also be found, for example, in the gloomy description of the Great Strike in *Veneh’ojalaiset* (“here and there window...”)

337 “Kuin kiiltomatoja vilkkui tuolla ja täällä käsiälyhtyjä ja välistä hulmahti kaupungin yli Viaporista suunnatin valonheitäjän häikäisevää sädekimppu kuin kohtalonsilmä, joka levottona seurasi tapahtumia tuossa kaikki siteneisiä katkoneessa, poreilevaan käymistolaiseen joutuneessa ja kaikkia mahdollisuuksia kätkevässä kaupungissa, mikä oli verhonnut itsensä pimeydellä kuin synnyttävä vaimo.”
lights were twinkling in the nightly fog”; Järnefelt 1909/1996: 297–298; see above) and in the menacing view of war ships in the Helsinki harbour during the First World War, illuminated “against a dark background like the giant fire letters painted by the hand at Belshazzar’s feast”, in Toivo Tarvas’s *Kohtalon tuulissa* (Tarvas 1916b: 69; see above). As these examples illustrate, the intense experience of a city under threat in literature of early twentieth-century Helsinki uses conspicuous use of light and colour effects to transform the way the cityscape is rendered. Such descriptions foreshadow the aestheticization of the city found in the Helsinki novels of Mika Waltari and others in the 1920s and 1930s. In such later representations, sudden light effects are typically used to render the view of the city at night, seen through the window of a speeding car (see section 6.3.).

### 5.4.3 THE WHORE OF BABYLON

Different novels present different dissolutions to the apocalyptic tensions that held Helsinki in its thrall in 1905 and 1906. The most harmonious dénouement is found in *Vaikea tie*, in which the protagonist, in the course of the events of 1905, returns to his natural political position in the fold of the Finnish bourgeois forces without breaking off his relationship with the working-class girl Olga, and with undiminished emotional attachment to Helsinki. By comparison, the climactic scene in *Jaana Rönty*, which describes the clash between red guards and Russian sailors, on the one hand, and the civil guard, on the other, at Hakaniemi, confirms the worst apocalyptic fears of Baron Manfelt, who witnesses the scene:

He saw a young woman with long plaits who was jumping in the street, and kicking dead Civil Guards, lying on the ground, in the face.

It was Jaana. She had not been able to restrain herself anymore. She had become crazed by the smell of blood and gun powder, the ecstasy of revenge held her in thrall, she was jumping up and down, dancing in the middle of the steaming bodies, and kicking them in the face, in the chest, everywhere, shouting, arms flailing about, blazing like a flame in her red dress.

There was something so frightening, something so primeval and beast-like in this sight that the old Baron Manfelt swaggered and was feeling helplessly in the air with his hands. It felt as if he had seen in front of his eyes the very Whore of Babylon herself and the dragon, dancing a
triumphant, frolicking dance of death on the ruins of a world going up in ashes. (Leino 1907/1998: 325–326)

Seen by Baron Manfelt, Jaana is described as the Whore of Babylon from the Book of Revelation, an image that linked age-old thinking concerning the evil nature of the city with one of the favourite symbols of turn-of-the-century decadent authors. Jaana appears as a Finnish version of Delacroix’s painting “Liberty Leading the People” (1830), transformed into a raving woman trampling dead White Guard soldiers underfoot – an incarnation of both Gustave Le Bon’s crowd psychology (1896/1983), and of the dormant, atavistic instincts of the uprooted common people in the city (see Knuuttila 1993). The vision amounts to a premonition of the end of times, and has been seen as symptomatic of the pessimistic view of the common people the Finnish intelligentsia started to harbour in this period (Lyytikäinen 1999: 212). The nightmarish sight so profoundly alarms Baron Manfelt that he has a heart attack. It is suggested that the Baron may well recover from the seizure, but for Jaana, the climactic events have fatal disruptive consequences. Immediately following the description of the Hakaniemi clashes, Jaana is described as broken:

Jaana was now moving fast on a downward track.

Her power of resistance was smashed. It was as if something in her was broken. (Leino 1907/1998: 328)

This is the beginning of the end: the events at Hakaniemi seal the fate of Jaana, in whose personal history the downward, entropic dynamics typical of naturalism have run their course. At the end of the novel, she has become utterly numb and degenerate.

338 “Hän näki nuoren, pitkä-palmikkoisen naisen hyppelevän kadulla ja potkivan kuolleita, maassa makaavia kunnalliskaartilaisia kasvoihin.

Se oli Jaana. Hän ei ollut voinut hillittää itseään enempää. Hän oli hullaantunut veren ja ruudin hajusta, koston hekkuma oli hänet haltioittanut, hän hypelli, hän tanssi höyryävien ruumiiden kesken ja potki niitä kasvoihin, rintaan, kaikkialle, huutaen, huitoen, leimuten kuin lieska punaisessa puussaan.

Oli jotakin niin peljättävää, jotakin niin alkuaikaista ja metsänpetomaista tässä näyssä, että vanha parooni Manfelt horjahti ja tapasi avuttomana käsillään ilmaa. Hänestä oli kuin olisi hän nänyt silmiensä edessä ilmi elävänä itse Baabelin porton ja lohikäärmeen, joka karkeloi riemuitsevaa kuolemantanssiaan tomuksi menevän maailman raunioilla.”

339 “Jaana meni nyt nopeasti alaspäin.
Hänen vastustusvoimansa oli murtunut. Oli kuin olisi hänessä mennytt rikki jotakin.”
In *Veneh'ojalaiset*, the events of the Great Strike turn eventually into a euphoric revelation for Kerttu when she learns that Hannes is in charge of affairs. The whole city is transformed into a homely place: “The streets seemed to be like her home, and all the people, both those outside and inside their homes, felt like familiar loved-ones” (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 300).340 The home of Kerttu, too, is transformed so totally that, together with Kustaava, Kerttu has to inspect all the rooms to see how they look after these great events (ibid.). In *Veneh'ojalaiset* the Great Strike constitutes not much more than the dress rehearsal for the truly pivotal events constituted by the Viapori rebellion, in which utopian urges and apocalyptic fear converge upon Hannes, who, as the leader of the rebels, is under pressure to shell the city as the ultimate means to safeguard the success of the revolution.

5.5 TOWARDS A SENSE OF BELONGING

In 1906, total destruction was avoided: the Viapori Rebellion lasted only 60 hours (Salomaa 1965). Seen through the perspective of the narration in *Veneh'ojalaiset*, the failure of the rebellion was in large part due to a feeling towards the city that is introduced in this novel for the first time with such far-reaching effects in Finnish-written literature on Helsinki: love. Pivotal is the scene in which Hannes, at that moment the leader of the revolutionaries, looks down at the city and at the fortress lying below him, knowing that he has the power, at last, to guide the fate of both (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 336–339). The scene is reminiscent of the ending of Balzac’s *Le pere Goriot* (1835/1995), in which Rastignac looks down at Paris from Père Lachaise, challenging the French capital. In Järnefelt’s *Veneh'ojalaiset*, the idea of conquering the city pervades the whole story from the first endeavours of forefather Heikki at setting fire to the “biggest village”, and culminates in Hannes, who devotes years of his life to studying the art of besieging, explicitly equating it with conquering a woman (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 218). On the hill overlooking the city, Hannes, invested with extraordinary power, has the possibility of changing the course of his home city, and of the whole nation. Dystopian and utopian possibilities converge upon him: here is not a man who is being led passively through the city, and who is changed by it, but on the contrary a protagonist who is able to destroy the city and then recreate it. Hannes, however, refrains from giving the fateful order. In an inner monologue, he begs his revolutionary mentor, Vasili, for forgiveness: “Have pity, Vasili! This is my home city...” (ibid.: 338)341

Saija Isomaa argues that the feeling that keeps Hannes from carrying out his plans is pity, and that the scene on the Hill should be read first of all as a

340 “Kadut muuttuivat ikäänkuin hänen kodikseen, ihmiset kaikkiki, sekä ulkona että sisällä olevaiset, tutuiksi omaisiksi.”

341 “Armoa, Vasili! Tämä on kotikaupunkini...”
struggle between the Tolstoyan and Nietzschean world views that dominates much of the novel (Isomaa 2009: 210, 250–257). One of the most important reasons for Hannes’s decision – or indecisiveness –, however, is the loving feelings he has for his home city. Throughout the novel, there are repeated references to the strong positive feelings Hannes, as well as his nephew Hinkki, have towards the capital. A loving attachment to Helsinki is present in Venehöjalaiset from the very beginning of the novel. When the narration shifts from the epic time frame to the historical present, there is a brief documentary passage, in which the narrator describes the city at some length, in particular the Observatory Hill (“Tähtitornivuori”; Järnefelt 1909/1996: 49–50). The narrator emphasizes the fact that it is a place loved by “a great many of the inhabitants of the golden capital” (ibid.). It is the favourite place of harbour workers, idlers, and of the pupils at the new Finnish lyceum, among whom Hinkki and the “captain” Hannes. The first emotion that is mentioned in relation to Helsinki, then, is love.

Hannes is the first complex character in Finnish literature who is born in Helsinki and who successfully establishes a family there. Both Hannes and his double Hinkki are cut loose, for the better or the worse, from their family’s mythic countryside past. They have no interest in the lost lands of the Veneh’oja: their loyalty lies with the city and the urban community they belong to. Both leave the city in the course of the novel, and both experience, upon returning to Helsinki, the most acute feelings of genuine homecoming and belonging. L. Onerva describes Venehöjalaiset as “the dark epic of a parvenu generation” (Onerva 1909: 397), and other critics, too, have emphasized the pessimistic experience of the city inherent to Järnefelt’s novel. This is to neglect the recurring passages in the novel in which Helsinki is referred to in a distinctly warm and loving tone, especially when focalized through the two protagonists. When Hannes returns from St. Petersburg to Helsinki, he walks “with joy in his heart [...] along those streets of his home town along which he had run as a school boy and where every corner and every turn were well known to him and felt cosy” (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 125). And when he later starts to develop plans to carry the revolution to Finland, he is described as thinking of the Viapori fortress islands opposite “the beloved shores of his home city” (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 201).

Hannes’s nephew, too, is described as having a profound love for his home city, although the consequences of this feeling are never as substantial. Like Hannes, Hinkki experiences an overwhelming feeling of homelessness when he returns to his home city, after long years at sea (Järnefelt

---

342 “[…] suuri joukko kultaisen pääkaupungin asukkaista jo silloin rakasti vuorta lempiäkkäkanssa.”

343 “[…] nousukaspolven pimeä eepos […]”

344 “[…] Riemu sydämessä […] hän asteli niitä kotikaupunkinsa katuja […] joista joka soppi ja käännö oli hänelle tuttua ja kodikasta […]”

345 “[…] vastapääätä kotikaupungin rakkaita rantoja.”
In the sentiments expressed by Hinkki and Hannes upon arrival, there is a contradictory experience of being at once at home in the city and at odds with one’s surroundings. Hinkki, for example, describes the streets of Helsinki as “homely, and yet become so strange” (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 239), before he lets himself be guided by an inner voice through the places he loves in the city.

Järnefelt’s *Veneh’ojalaiset* can be considered as a novel that is trailblazing in Helsinki novels written in Finnish for its description of clearly positive experiences of attachment, as opposed to the more typical dystopian tendencies found in literature of the turn of the century. Similar strong evocations of an experience of belonging to the city recur in a number of novels and short stories published during the decades following the appearance of *Veneh’ojalaiset*. Especially when characters return or leave the city, such strong feelings of attachment arise, although they are often mixed with a profound sense of loss. Urho in Toivo Tarvas’s *Eri tasoilta* (“On Different Levels”; 1916a), frantically walks the streets of Helsinki when he realizes that he will have to leave “this city that had become dear to him” (Tarvas 1916a: 206). His luck and his money have run out, but now, at last, he feels akin to his friend Albert Hagen, whose *flâneur* attitude has been discussed above (section 4.6.):

> Often he [Urho] walked the streets for hours and looked at the vivid scenes on the street. He had more and more begun to grasp Albert’s infatuation with the city. He had not always understood it, but at this point, he too, felt it as an inner feeling and urge [...] (Tarvas 1916a: 214)

An intriguing short story in Toivo Tarvas’s short story collection *Helsinkiläisiä* (“Helsinkiers”; 1919), aptly entitled “Kaupungin rakkautta” (“Love for the city”), turns the more traditional city-countryside dichotomy of nineteenth-century Finnish literature upside down. In this story, the parvenu character Josef Kyllönen sings the praise of the city and feels “unusually nervous” when he has to spend a few days at a summer mansion in the countryside, exclaiming to a friend: “You really do not seem to have any idea what a sacrifice this trip to the countryside means to me. I literally feel like crying when I have to leave this beloved city.” (Tarvas 1919: 21)

---

346 “[... k]otoiset ja sittenkin niin vieraiksi käyneet kadut.”
347 “[...] hänelle rakkaaksi käyneessä kaupungissa [...]”
348 “Usein hän kulki kaduilla tuntikausia ja katseli siellä olevaa elämää. Hän oli yhä enemmän ja enemmän alkanut käsittää Albertin iastusta kaupunkiin. Aina hän oli sen ymmärtänyt, mutta nyt se muuttui hänelle omaksi sisäiseksi tunteeksi ja pakoksi [...].”
349 “[...] tavattoman hermostunut [...]; ”Niin, et sinä taida tietääkö minkälainen uhri tämä maaleluto minun puoleltani on. Oikein itkettää kun täyttyy jättää tämä rakas kaupunki [...].”
Kyllönen is a comic character, and his love for the city is described satirically as a not very convincing pose, rather than as a genuine sense of belonging. A more sincere, if also more tragic, attachment to Helsinki is described in the short story “Lumottu” (“Enchanted”) in the same collection, which has been noted as an exceptional example of strong belonging to the city (Laine 2011: 152 ff.). In this sketch, love for the city is felt so acutely by the protagonist that it causes his untimely death. Niilo is a sensitive and young man who decides to study forestry. On the eve of his departure from Helsinki, he is seized by a desire to say goodbye to all places he loves in the Finnish capital. In a frenzy he runs through the city’s streets: “He hurried the one street up, the other one down. A secret fervour quickened his steps.” (Tarvas 1919: 91)\(^ {350}\) The prolonged stay in the wilderness of Lapland eventually drives him mad and he commits suicide at the end of a narrative that puts the more traditional plot structure of the young provincial descending into urban destruction on its head.

In Mika Waltari’s 1936 novel *Surun ja ilon kaupunki* (“City of Sorrow and Joy”), it is again imminent departure that makes Aarne, a young man with a working-class background (see also section 7.5.) feel an acute sense of belonging:

The Töölö bay glimmers like a pool of blood, and every one of the houses glowing like blood and gold is familiar to his eyes. A piercing feeling of loneliness and longing suddenly floods his mind, and intuitively he realizes for the first time in his life that he loves this great city. It is his home, it is his birthplace, its streets have been the background for his adventures and his disappointments, in the midst of it he has grown up, the city is what he knows, and he finds it difficult to leave. (Waltari 1936: 254)\(^ {351}\)

The view of a sundown over the Töölö bay carries menacing undertones: the bloody aspect of the water and the houses is inspired not only by the evening sun, but also by Aarne’s gloomy thoughts about the turn his life is taking. Blended with these dystopian sentiments, and intricately related to them, is Aarne’s sense of belonging and love for this city that is “his home, [...] his birthplace.”

In many of the more protracted descriptions of a character’s feelings of attachment to the city, Helsinki becomes personified: the city appears as a

---

350 “Hän riensi edelleen katuja ylös toisia alas. Salainen kiihko joudutti hänen askeleitaan.”

351 “Töölölähti loistaa verilammikkona ja kultaa ja verta hehkuvien talojen jokainen ääriivä on tuttu hänen katsellessaan. Repivä yksinäisyystä tuntuu ja ikävä vuotaa äkkiä hänen mieleensä, vaistomaisesti hän tajuaa ensimmäisen kerran elämäään rakastavansa tätä suurta kaupunkia. Se on hänen kotinsa, se on hänen synnyinpaikkansa, sen kadut ovat olleet hänen lapsuutensa seikkailujen ja pettymysten taustana, sen keskellä hän on kasvanut, sen hän tuntee, hänen on vaikea sitä jättää.”

190
separate entity with its own attributes, and made comprehensible through a more or less panoramic view. This is the case in the crucial scene in *Veneh’ojalaiset* when Hannes weighs the fate of the city “which with its thousands glimmering lights was laying under a brightly lit star heaven” (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 337). In a number of novels, Helsinki appears as an almost living organism, depicted as breathing, menacing, or waiting. This is the case most explicitly in several scenes from Toivo Tarvas’s *Eri tasoiita*, in which Helsinki is seen through the eyes of Albert Hagen. At the end of a long nocturnal walk, Albert notices how the city gradually awakens to morning activities: “The silent city awoke from its dreams” (Tarvas 1916a: 57). Albert is saddened by the spectacle: he had wanted to cultivate the silent understanding he has with the sleeping city, which is now disturbed: “Albert thought it was sad that the city’s quiet peace was disturbed, but when a large city awakens, it yawns audibly like a fairy-tale giant” (ibid.: 58). In a later conversation Albert has with his friend Urho, Albert’s love for Helsinki is the subject, and Urho explicitly states that Albert’s sentiments cause him to think of Helsinki as a living being:

– No, Albert, try not to be dishonest, clearly your attachment to this city is the kind of admiration and adoration of the city that is out of the ordinary, because you have invented the city for yourself as if it were a living being, whose company you keep. (Tarvas 1916a: 74)

Albert Hagen’s attachment is indeed out of the ordinary, and rare in literature of Helsinki written in Finnish around the turn of the twentieth century. He enunciates a profound feeling of adoration in relation to the city, which runs counter to the continuous pessimistic undercurrents that inform the experience of the city both in *Eri tasoiita* (“On Different Levels”; 1916a) and its sequel *Kohtalon tuulissa* (“The Winds of Fate”; 1916b). In addition to this – and in this he is very different from Hannes and Hinkki in Järnefelt’s *Veneh’ojalaiset* – Albert actively and in part consciously aestheticizes the urban spectacle surrounding him, turning the city into a poetic construct of his own making. The word used by Urho to describe Albert’s aestheticizing attitude can be literally translated as poeticize (“runoilla”), to transform or conjure in a poetic manner. Here, we find already the creative, subjective and aestheticizing attitude to the city that arguably finds its most explicit

---

352 “[…] joka tuhansine tuikkivine valoineen lepäsi kirkkaan tähtitäivaan alla.”
353 “Hiljainen kaupunki heräsi unestaan.”
354 “Albertista tuntui ikävältä, että kaupungin hiljainen rauha tuli häirityksi, mutta kun suuri kaupunki herää, niin se haukottelee kuuluvasti kuin sadun jättiläinen…”
355 “– Ei, Albert, älä koeta nyt olla epäreellinen, kyllä sinun kiintymyksesi tähän kaupunkiin on tavallisuudesta poikkeavaa kaupungin ihailua ja sen palvomista, sillä sinä olet runoillut kaupungin itsellesi ikäänkuin eläväksi ollenoksia, jonka kanssa sinä seurustelet.”
emanation in *Suuri illusioni* (“The Great Illusion”; 1928) by Mika Waltari and in Helvi Hämäläinen’s *Städyllinen murhenäytelmä* (“A Respectable Tragedy”; 1941), novels that will be analysed in the following chapter.

### 5.6 A FULLY-FLEDGED HELSINKI NOVEL

In the literature of the early twentieth century, Helsinki appears as a multi-layered city in motion. The complexity evoked by this changing and expanding city is most clearly visible in Arvid Järnefelt’s kaleidoscopic novel *Veneh'ojalaiset*, in which Helsinki appears as the catalyst of modernization. For Järnefelt, modernization is a force which, as Pertti Karkama points out, “results in alienation, which is not only a psychological phenomenon, but also an ethical one” (Karkama 2010: 14). The dystopian experience of Helsinki as a tentacular city feeding on the countryside is complemented with an experience that is relatively new in literary prose on Helsinki: a strong feeling of attachment that in some cases is described as outright love. Dystopian and apocalyptic urges, caused by social and political evil that lie at the root of society, erupt in the events of the Great Strike and the Viapori Rebellion. In the way these events are narrated in *Veneh'ojalaiset*, it is a positive sentiment towards the city, compassion, but also loving attachment, that restrain Hannes from giving the fatal order to shell the city.

In all possible respects, Järnefelt’s novel constitutes the kind of fully-fledged Helsinki novel V.A. Koskenniemi would call for five years later in *Runon kaupunkeja*: a novel that describes the various social layers of the city, a compelling narrative that gives an account of some of the most central characteristics of the Finnish capital, its geographical range and its history, as well as the people that inhabit it. If Koskenniemi and others did not read *Veneh'ojalaiset* as such, this was in part due to a blind spot when it comes to the genre of the city novel in Finnish literary critique. *Veneh'ojalaiset* has not been read predominantly as a Helsinki novel or as a city novel by most of the literary critics and scholars that have commented upon it during the century since its appearance. This includes also the reading by Saija Isomaa who, in her study on the genre of Järnefelt’s social commentary novels, reads *Veneh'ojalaiset* as, inter alia, a novel of revolution and a novel of awakening, but not as a city novel (Isomaa 2009: 210–271). The same can be said of the other novels discussed in this chapter: Eino Leino’s *Jaana Rönty*, Olli Suurpää, and *Pankkiherroja*, Toivo Tarvas’ *Eri tasoilta* and *Kohtalon tuulissa*, Maila Talvio’s *Niniven lapset* and *Kultainen lyyra* – they all have been predominantly read as representatives of other generic categories than the city novel.

As my readings above have demonstrated, many of these texts can be conceived as city novels in at least two respects: they thematize the city, and they construct the plot around the unfolding relationship between the
protagonist(s) and the city. These novels can also be approached with the help of the city novel taxonomy proposed by Blanche Gelfant in her study of the American City Novel.\textsuperscript{356} The three kinds of novels Gelfant discerns are the portrait novel, which centres on a single protagonist’s development in the city; the synoptic novel, which aims at giving a kaleidoscopic view of the city, and the ecological novel, which looks at a particular environment within a city (Gelfant 1954: 11–14). The portrait novel closely resembles the Young Man/Woman from the Provinces novels (see Chapter 3);\textsuperscript{357} the ecological novel is most typical of neighbourhood-centred novels that start to appear in the inter-war period (in description of the working-class literature, for example). The synoptic novel is rare in Finnish literature of this period, although Mika Waltari’s \textit{Surun ja ilon kaupunki} (“City of Sorrow and Joy”; 1936, see Chapter 6) is a notable exception, and Tarvas’s \textit{Kohtalon tuulissa}, with its recurrent changes of perspective, is another possible candidate. \textit{Veneh'ojalaiset} bears traits of all these categories. As a description of a family moving from the countryside to the capital, and also in the way it renders Hannes’s coming-of-age, it resembles the portrait novel. As a novel moving from the well-to-do to the wooden shovels of working-class slums, from St. Petersburg to Helsinki, and from an epic past to a near-apocalyptic present, it also bears some traits of the synoptic novel. And as a depiction of a particular urban neighbourhood (Punavuori and its immediate surroundings), it also has some characteristics of the ecological novel.

\textsuperscript{356} Gelfant’s taxonomy has been praised as a helpful tool (Pike 1981: 10), but it has also been criticized for simplifying highly complex city representations in literature, that often represent intermingling combinations of Gelfant’s qualifications (Freeman 2007: 48–49).

\textsuperscript{357} “The portrait novel belongs in the literary tradition of the novel of initiation – that is, a novel tracing a young hero’s discovery of life and growth to maturity. In the portrait novel, the hero is typically a naïve and sensitive newcomer to the city, usually a country youth […]” (Gelfant 1954: 11).
Experiences of a Metropolis in Motion. Changing and Disappearing Helsinki

HELSINKI AROUND 1930
1. Railway Station
2. Long Bridge
3. Market Square
4. Senate Square
5. Hakaniemi Square
6. Observatory Hill

OLD TOWN / VANHAKAUPUNKI
KÄPYLÄ
KUMPULA

VALLILA

SÖRÄINEN

KALLIO

TÖÖLÖ

TOÖLÖ

KRUUNUNHAKA

LAPINLAHTI

RUOHOLAHTI

PUNAVUORI

HIETALAHTI

KAIVOPUISTO

KATAJANKOKKA

SUOMENLINNA
6 AESTHETIZING THE CITY. THE INTERNALIZATION OF A NEW HELSINKI

The Helsinki which presents itself to the reader in most of the novels that appeared in the 1920s and 1930s is distinctly different from the Helsinki in turn-of-the-century novels. This is in part due to the drastically changed political context. Helsinki was no longer the provincial capital of a semi-independent Grand Duchy incorporated in the Russian Empire, but the proud political centre of a new and triumphant nation, giving an added aura to the way in which the city is represented in literature. In terms of the built environment, too, Helsinki changed considerably in these decades, and it is indeed a physically “new Helsinki” which, in the form of the modern district of Töölö, is repeatedly foregrounded in the literature of this period. What is most striking is the extent to which many of these texts show an explicit interest in everything urban and modern: Helsinki is not necessarily presented as more complex or more multi-layered than before (indeed, in some cases rather the opposite), but the city as a subject matter, and more specifically, the experience of urbanity and modernity, become gradually more explicitly thematized.

The thematization of urbanity and the concomitant interest in modernity in the literature of this period are well attested, especially in relation to the work of the group of authors which became known as the Torch Bearers.358 In the context of this study, the inner circle of this literary movement, which debuted in the year 1924 in and around the magazine *Nuori Voima*, is of limited interest, since it was a group that consisted primarily of poets.359 In Finnish prose literature the city attains a more privileged position only slightly later, in the works of authors who published towards the end of the 1920s and in the early 1930s, and who partly drew on the existing discourse initiated by the Torch Bearers. Apart from Mika Waltari, prose authors from this loosely interconnected generation include Arvi Kivimaa, and Unto Karri (see Paavolainen 1932: 14–15 ff.; Mauriala 2005: 239). The thematization of the city in the prose of these authors is a well-established fact; what this thematization entails for the way in which the experience of the city is given

358 The cultural impact of the Torch Bearer movement has been discussed extensively (see Saarenheimo 1966, 1969; Laitinen 1965; Lassila 1985, 1996; Hapuli 1995; Mauriala 2005). This literary movement, a group of young authors with a particular interest in everything exotic, modern, speedy and international, wanted to “open the windows to Europe”. Most research has focused on the Torch Bearer authors and on the way their work (poetry, in particular) reflects the age. Little research has been carried out, in comparison, on the prose literature written in the 1920s and 1930s in the wake of the Torch Bearer movement, and on the way this literature renders the experience of the city.

form in Finnish prose texts in these decades, however, has remained largely unstudied, and this will be the main research question addressed below.

This chapter analyses one particular approach towards the city which is strikingly visible in a number of prose texts from the late 1920s on: the internalization of the urban experience, and the related aestheticizing manner in which the narrator and/or literary characters experience Helsinki. The interiorized and aestheticizing experience of the city will be analysed by drawing on the work of Richard Lehan and Bart Keunen, in particular their thoughts concerning an “inward turn” (Lehan 1998: 72–73) and an “aestheticist turn” in urban imagery (Keunen 1995, 1999: 429). One particular topos, central to the experience of urbanity in literature of this period, will be analysed in detail: the nocturnal car drive through the deserted city, with its suggestions of geographical, temporal and moral boundary transgressions.

Mika Waltari’s debut novel Suuri illusioni (“The Great Illusion”; 1928), which can be considered the cult novel of its age (see Koskenniemi 1928: 496; Laitinen 1965: 459, 1982: 336; Koskela 1999b: 275), will serve as a starting point and will be linked to relevant later novels and short stories. In the second part of this chapter, a different although related way of experiencing the city in literature will be addressed: the aestheticization of Helsinki, in relation to the built environment as well as to specific natural elements within the city, which appears in Helvi Hämäläinen’s Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä (“A Respectable Tragedy”; 1941). The landscape in Hämäläinen’s complex novel is filtered through the awareness of highly sensitive protagonists who attach their powerful sense of loss and longing to the objects and localities surrounding them.

The new experiences of Helsinki in this period invite a number of contextualizations. In the background of the new discourse on the city, a whole new era comes into view: the gay twenties, with its jazz dance halls, its discussion concerning a new kind of woman, and the exciting nightlife of more than a decade of Prohibition (see Koskela 1999b). The pronounced interest in everything modern and urban and the accompanying enchanted view of the city is also in part related to an optimistic feeling that permeated (up to a certain extent) the 1920s in Finland, and which was related to the experience of belonging to a distinctly new generation, separated from the old world by the terrible caesura constituted by the Great War, and in the Finnish context, the Civil War of 1918. 360 In Finland, this experience was

360 It would be problematic to imply a shared and common experience of the 1920s in Finland, since the Civil War of 1918 had created a sharply divided nation. The victors of the war dominated the cultural institutions and the media during the following decades, and the triumphant tone of their rhetoric was not necessarily shared by the less visible working-class authors and intellectuals (see Maironiemi 1992; Koskela 1999b; Roininen 1999).

Many of the authors discussed in this chapter and in the following one were drawn into the political polarization of the 1920s and 1930s. A pivotal moment was constituted by the so-called
further enhanced by the knowledge that this new generation was also the first one growing up in the newly independent Republic.\footnote{On the importance of the sense of belonging to a new generation in relation to the Torch Bearers, see Lassila 1996; Krogerus 1999: 213; Koskela 1999b: 266–272; Mauriala 2005: 49. The Civil War also constitutes a clear caesura between two generations of Finnish authors in terms of social networks. Before the war, authors such as Eino Leino, Juhani Aho, Arvid Järnefelt, L. Onerva, V.A. Koskenniemi and Maila Talvio were connected through close professional and personal ties. Maila Talvio and V.A. Koskenniemi were exceptional in that they continued to influence Finnish literature circles for decades after Finnish independence, but by that time, they had become part of a firmly established, and in many respects reactionary, elderly generation. The most important authors thematizing Helsinki during the late 1920s and 1930s (Mika Waltari, Olavi Paavolainen, Helvi Hämäläinen, amongst others) were, again, closely connected to each other.}

Much of the writing of the 1930s, in turn, is grounded in the pessimism of a world profoundly at odds with itself, in the throes of economic depression, and dominated by a pessimistic climate further exacerbated by domestic and international threats of political radicalization. The central events related to this historical period in Helsinki (1918–1940) are covered in the introductory section 1.6. In this chapter, I will refer to the cultural and historical context only insofar as necessary for a reading of the prose texts under discussion.

\section{6.1 THE INTERNALIZED URBAN EXPERIENCE IN MIKA WALTARI’S \textit{SUURI ILLUSIONI} (1928)}

The smell in the broad, dark staircase flew in our face. It was the smell of the city, – cold, washed stone; dust; musty air and something else, something which you cannot explain, which you immediately become used to so that you don’t even notice it, but which, if you return from the countryside, always has its own special effect.

I had come to the city in the early days of August, because it was too hot in the countryside and because there were arguably some things that I could use as excuses for my return. In fact, I missed the city, the smell of asphalt, metal dust and gasoline, – that nervous longing that...
wanders the quiet streets in the darkening evenings (Waltari 1928: 7).362

In the much-quoted opening lines of Mika Waltari’s debut novel *Suuri illusioni*, two important ways in which the city is described in this period are immediately visible: the thematization of the city, as well as the internalized and aestheticized way in which Helsinki is experienced.363 The importance of the city in this novel is not only highlighted by placing the description of arrival in the city (or more specifically: the return to the city) at the very beginning of the narration, but the city is also presented as the instigator of the protagonist’s decision to interrupt his holidays in the countryside. Longing for the city is the feeling which sets in motion the events unfolding in the first pages of the novel. In *Suuri illusioni*, the explicit foregrounding of the city can be linked to Waltari’s ambition to break away from the perceived dominance of rural thematics in Finnish literature. A discussion at the beginning of the novel, in which one of the characters claims that he is “fed up with the smell of sweat and of the dunghill” (ibid.: 17) in Finnish literature can be seen as programmatic in this respect: using the city as subject matter was for Waltari and others a means of setting themselves apart from a perceived Finnish mainstream literature.364

In *Suuri illusioni*, the foregrounding of urban phenomena does not result in particularly rich descriptive references to the built environment or to the geographical features of the city.365 Instead, the narration focuses on how the

---

362 “Leveän, pimeän rappukäytävän tuoksu löi meitä vastaan. Se oli kaupungin tuoksu, – kylmää, huuhdeltua kiveä, tomua, ummehtunutta ilmaa ja jotakin muuta, jota ei osaa selittää, johon tottua aivan heti, niin ettei sitä huomaakaan, mutta maalta tullessa on sillä aina oma erikoinen voimansa.

Olin tullut kaupunkiin elokuun alkupäivinä, koska maalla oli liian kuuma ja koska oli olevinaan joitakin asioita, jotka kykenivät olemaan tekosynä. Tosiasioissa ikävöin kaupunkia, asfaltin, metallitomun ja bentsiinin tuoksua, – sitä hermostunutta kaipauta, joka pimenevinä ilmoja kaipauta, joka pimenevinä ilmoja kiertää hiljaisia katuja.”

363 Mika Waltari (1908–1979) was only 20 in 1928, when his debut novel *Suuri illusioni* appeared, and in the following years, he established himself as one of the most popular Finnish authors. He wrote a large number of Helsinki novels and short stories, many of them still in print, and also made his mark as an author of detective stories, drama, and even movie scripts. He achieved lasting fame as the author of highly successful historical novels, amongst which *Sinuhe* (“The Egyptian”; 1945) is the most well-known. He is the second literary author writing about Helsinki in Finnish who was also born in the Finnish capital, and he is, incidentally, distantly related to Toivo Tarvas, who was the first in this category (see Waltari 1980: 5; Laine 2011: 151).

364 “Minä ainakin olen kyllästyntyt hien ja tunkionhajuun [...]”

365 Silja Laine notes that *Suuri illusioni* has fewer detailed descriptions of the built environment than Waltari’s later Helsinki novels (Laine 2011: 147; see also Laurila 1965: 450). Critics have typically seen Waltari’s evolution as a Helsinki author as a maturing process, starting from the superficiality of *Suuri illusioni* to a more mature and distanced, descriptive and almost documentary approach. This is
protagonist experiences the surrounding cityscape. What is described are personal sentiments and sensations, filtered through the highly subjective sensitive awareness of the protagonist. This is the case from the very first lines of the novel: Suuri illusioni begins in medias res, with the description of a specific smell, described by a homodiegetic narrator. The protagonist grapples to define the characteristics and meaning of this smell, and in the course of this introspective investigation, the reader is told how he (the journalist Hart; his name and profession are given only much later) has just returned from the countryside, and how he has coincidently met an old friend, Korte. Both men are now on their way to a private party at the mysterious Mrs. Spindel’s apartment, where Hart will meet the two characters with whom he will form the fatal love triangle central to the plot’s development: Hellas, a refined but mentally unstable author, and the unruly Caritas, the chain-smoking embodiment of the 1920s “new woman”.

exemplified in Aarne Laurila’s overview of Waltari’s production (Laurila 1965). In a later article on Waltari, Laurila discerns two Helsinki writers in Waltari, the recorder (“tallentaja”) and the annalist (“kronikoitsija”): the author of Suuri illusioni, Appelsiininsiemen and Surun ja ilon kaupunki, and the author of the trilogy Isästä poikaan, respectively (Laurila 1982a). In his own writing, Waltari encouraged the view that his debut was not much more than an artistic error of youth. In the preface to the fifth edition, for example, he calls Suuri illusioni “childish, underdeveloped, sentimental” (Waltari 1968/1995: 7).

366 Waltari can be considered one of the pioneers of the first person narrator in Finnish prose (see Valkama 1960/1983: 261).

367 “Spindel”, of course, is the Swedish word for spider; like a spider in her web, Mrs. Spindel is the sphinx-like character lurking at the centre of the urban labyrinth. The names of the protagonists are all more or less symbolic. “Hart” would seem to refer to the “hard” and matter-of-fact allure the young journalist wants to exhibit; “Caritas” is a somewhat ironic reference to the mothering nature the novel’s femme fatale seems to lack, and which both male, boyish protagonists seem to be in dire need of. The name “Hellas” seems to underscore Hellas’s old-fashioned sense of beauty and art; fascinated by modernity, Hellas nevertheless seems to belong more to an earlier time frame. In many ways he resembles oversensitive and/or decadent secondary characters in Finnish literature of this (and the immediately preceding) period, characters such as Aarne Ruokoranta in Talvio’s Niniven lapset (“Children of Nineveh”; 1915), Ruudi Winkler in Talvio’s Kultainen lyra (“The Golden Lyre”; 1916), Kurt Waldhof in Waltari’s Appelsiininsiemen (“The Orange Seed”; 1931), Armas Aarni in Waltari’s Palava nuorus (“Burning Youth”; 1935), amongst others. Waltari himself claims that the title of Ivalo’s novel Hellas may have been one of the unconscious reasons why he chose this name, but he also states that Hellas was modelled on Olavi Paavolainen, while Hart has been seen as modelled on Arvi Kivimaa (Waltari 1980: 185–186). The name Hellas can also be related to the character’s feminine, perhaps even bisexual nature – again, a feature shared with some of the oversensitive characters mentioned above. Armas Aarni, in Waltari’s Palava Nuorus, for example, is said to have been modelled on the author Toivo Tarvas, who was homosexual (see Waltari 1980: 262–263; Rajala 2008: 53; Laine 2011: 152).

368 In the novel Caritas defines herself explicitly as a modern woman:
The first pages of the novel are for the most part an analysis of what a particular smell signifies for the protagonist. The choice to describe a smell, rather than outward features, puts added emphasis on the fact that the reader is not presented with an objectified or distanced description of space, but with a personal and highly intimate experience. As Henri Lefebvre argues, “if there is any sphere where [...] an intimacy occurs between ‘subject’ and ‘object’, it must surely be the world of smells and the places where they reside” (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 197). For the protagonist in *Suuri illusioni*, this certainly holds true: the smell which welcomes Hart and his friend as they enter the staircase leading to the apartment of the mysterious Mrs. Spindel’s becomes a gateway to unfolding past and present worlds, not entirely unlike Proust’s proverbial Madeleine cookie. It provides the olfactory background for the future meeting of the central characters of the novel, but to Hart, it is also brings to mind a pivotal experience from his past: “an unclear memory from my childhood, which the smell from the staircase had awakened from oblivion” (Waltari 1928: 8–9). The smell reminds Hart of the day of his father’s funeral, an experience to which, paradoxically, no sorrow or regret are linked, on the contrary: that smell “had been from that moment on [...] dear to me, for it symbolizes the city and everything unknown” (ibid.: 9). Unlike so many Young Men/Women from the Provinces novels, in which the death of the father seals the protagonist’s profound rootlessness, unrest and economic distress, for Hart his father’s death symbolizes the city at its most enchanting: excitement, freedom – the promise of new possibilities. The late 1920 protagonist is not concerned with the past, but with the expanding and fragmentary time of a radical here and now.

The opening lines of *Suuri illusioni*, with their emphasis on personally experienced urban space, are indicative of a move in city representations towards a subjective and internalized urban experience, a move which Richard Lehan has called the “inward turn” in the literature of the city (Lehan 1998: 72–73). This subjective view of the city is characterized by the foregrounding of personally experienced impressions drawn from (public)
urban space. It can already be found in the works of E.A. Poe and, of course, Charles Baudelaire, in whose texts an observer typically notices in the city streets or crowd “an object that triggers his imagination or memory and thus is internalized” (Lehan 1998: 72). As indicated above in relation to the opening pages of Waltari’s debut, this subjective and interiorized manner in which the city is described entails a marginalization in *Suuri illusioni* of direct descriptions of the built environment. Most of the descriptions of the city are renderings of images or even after-images that are described as they are imprinted in the consciousness of the protagonist:

I walked up the stairs, within my consciousness still the flickering image of the autumnal city evening: the bright rows of street lamps, the fire of the neon lights, the green electric flames of the trams, the screaming of the car horns. (Waltari 1928: 130)372

What is described above is not the moment when the protagonist sees the city, but the moment, occurring slightly later than the act of seeing, when the cityscape is being processed in his consciousness. As a consequence, the elements that are selected do not constitute the kind of totalizing, panoramic view that would result from a stable viewpoint (from a window, for example, such as in the opening passage in Arvid Järnefelt’s *Veljekset* [“Brothers”; 1900]; see section 5.1.). Instead, they form a series of detached impressions, suggesting a viewpoint that is in motion rather than fixed.

What Richard Lehan describes as an “inward turn” in literary representations of the city is essentially a radical change in the perception of reality; “[a]s the mind moves inward, the physical world, including the city, becomes a subjective reality” (Lehan 1998: 121). Bart Keunen has described this inward turn in terms of an “aestheticist turn in spatial imagery” (Keunen 2001: 429), an attitude of the narrator which can be summed up in a quote from Charles Baudelaire’s *Le Spleen de Paris*: “all these things think through me, or I think through them” (Baudelaire 1869/1989: 4; see Keunen 2001: 429). One narrative method identified by Keunen in relation to this “aestheticist turn” is the “correspondence method”, in which an aestheticizing observer reads his own mood and consciousness into the city texture and vice versa. In his prose poetry, Baudelaire was a master in exploiting this technique (Keunen 1999: 365–366; see also Scott 1976/1986: 210–211).

In *Suuri illusioni*, the city and the protagonist’s mood are repeatedly described in unison, and it becomes increasingly unclear where to draw the border between the outward appearance of the city and the inner mood.

---

372 “Astuin portaita ylös tajunnassa vielä väliätelevä kuva kaupungin syksyllästä: katulyhtyjen kirkkaat jonot, reklamien palo, raitiotievaunujen vihreät sähköliekit, autoturvien huuto.”
swings of the protagonist. Juxtaposing city and individual was, of course, nothing particularly new: in turn-of-the-century texts set in Helsinki, the cityscape had been contrasted with characters’ inner feelings (see section 4.1.), but this had not entailed an invasion of the protagonist’s consciousness by spatial experiences or vice versa. In Waltari’s debut novel, the description of gloomy morning light, a rainy autumn day or l’heure bleue tell the reader as much about the mental state of the characters as they tell about the physical aspects of the city. The mention of the “red fog of a frozen sun” outside a Helsinki café (Waltari 1928: 171), for example, relates as much to the wintery cityscape as to the protagonist’s gloomy feelings of foreboding after his friend and adversary in love, Hellas, has left the city in search of the woman they both love.

In later novels by Mika Waltari and some of his contemporaries, the experience of the city is often similarly described as profoundly in tune with the emotions of the characters, so much so that it becomes impossible to separate them from each other. More often than not, the effect of this “correspondence method” was to render a sense of melancholy or depression in and through the cityscape as Baudelaire did in his prototypical prose poems, whose very title, Le spleen de Paris, had identified personally experienced melancholy with the aspect of the French capital (see Keunen 1999: 365–366). In Waltari’s Helsinki novel Appelsiininsiemen (“The Orange Seed”; 1931), the view of the crematorium from the window of Kurt Waldhofer’s home apartment, for example, resonates strongly with the feelings of transience experienced by this decadent character on the morning following a party (Waltari 1931: 51), while the feelings of loneliness overwhelming Ilmari, the protagonist Irene’s fiancé in the same novel, are described as being in unison with the deserted city streets through which he wanders (ibid.: 145–148). Perhaps the clearest example of a synergetic city experience in this novel can be found in the following extract, which locates the growing erotic tension between Irene and Ilmari in the darkening cityscape:

[...] evening came, one of those quickly darkening, heat-radiating evenings, when the whole city feels as if it is shuddering with a

373 Interesting early examples can be found, for example, in Juhani Aho’s Yksin (1890/2003). When the protagonist walks through Helsinki in a mood of extreme despondency, the trees of Bulevardi are described as a “gloomy vault” (“synkkänä holvina”; Aho 1890/2003: 4). The following day, however, the protagonist feels more cheerful, and watching the view of the Helsinki harbour, he notes that “[t]he landscape seems purified like after a rain, and me, I feel as if I am inwardly brightened up.” (“Maisema on kuin sateen jälkeen puhdistunut ja minä itse ikäänkuin sisällisesti kirkastunut” [Aho 1890/2003: 33]).

374 “[...] pakkasauriong punainen usva [...].”
passionate anticipation, and when the street lamps shine more and more brightly above the burning streets (Waltari 1931: 271).^375

Similar examples from novels and short stories from this period can be multiplied at will. Several revealing examples can be found in Arvi Kivimaa’s novel *Epäjumala* (“Idol”; 1930), which is considered, together with *Suuri illusioni*, to give a particularly vivid reflection of the atmosphere of 1920s Helsinki (see Laitinen 1965: 459), and which was hailed by contemporary critic V.A. Koskenniemi as “the long-looked for Helsinki novel” Koskenniemi had already called for in 1914 (as quoted in Nieminen 1974: 118).^376 The protagonist of *Epäjumala* is the sensitive stage director Markus Saari, who cultivates a particular interest in modernity and urbanity, and who is an avid observer of the city spectacle, both in Helsinki and abroad. Markus’s thoughts are repeatedly described as being intertwined with an interiorized view of the city, in particular when he feels most depressed:


In passages such as the one above, the manner in which the spatial description is rendered as a reflection of the character’s inner feelings gives the narration characteristics of stream of consciousness. The highly elliptic clauses with their enumeration of successive nouns suggest that these are the almost unmediated thoughts of the protagonist who is simultaneously probing his own feelings and the view of the city outside. This narrative technique is in essence a further development of the “impressionist style” that had been pioneered in Finnish prose by Juhani Aho, in particular in renderings of modern and urban phenomena such as railway or tram movements (see Nummi 2002: 142–143, 2003a: xv–xvi; Riikonen 2007: 847). In her study of urban space in Arvi Kivimaa’s early works, Reetta Nieminen draws attention to the “impressionist glimpses” in Kivimaa’s *Epäjumala* (Nieminen 1974: 119). The style of Mika Waltari’s prose, *Suuri illusioni* in particular, has also repeatedly been referred to as impressionist.

---

375 “Kunnes ilta tuli, tuollainen nopeasti hämärtävä, lämmintä huokuva ilta, jolloin koko kaupunki tuntuu vavahetelevan kiikheää odotusta, ja lyhyt palavat yhä kirkastuvampina polttavien katujen yläpuolella.”

376 For Koskenniemi’s call for a great Helsinki novel, see section 1.1. Koskenniemi’s review of Kivimaa’s novel in 1930 can be considered as indicative of how much the critic had become out of touch with his material, given the fact that several great Helsinki novels had appeared in the early twentieth century (see also the conclusion to Chapter 5).

by contemporary critic Koskenniemi (1928: 500) as well as by later critics such as Aarne Laurila (Laurila 1982a: 76). In the French impressionist style, one of the most important characteristics had been a distinctive nominal structure: the domination of nouns over adjectives or verbs (see Scott 1976/1986: 219). Although the Finnish language and its sentence structure are highly different from Indo-European languages, nominal structures are one of the striking stylistic features in Helsinki novels drawing on the impressionist tradition, such as the texts by Kivimaa, Waltari and others discussed here.

Amongst 1930s Helsinki prose, Iris Uurto’s texts take up a special position in the way they make effective use of the correspondence technique. In Uurto’s debut novel *Ruumin ikävä* (“The Longing of the Body”; 1930/1931), mathematics teacher Olli Lassila takes to walking the city at night after he has been deceived and left by his wife. The nocturnal city is described in terms that also reflect this character’s loneliness and despondency. His walks are occasionally described in considerable geographical detail; one example is one long walk along the waterfront of the district Eira, which ends, by way of the street Punavuorenkatu, at the square Fredrikintori:

A boundless gloominess lay reposing on the roofs. The desolate street felt as if it had sunk down into the ground from sheer fatigue. On the small square, a car was standing melancholically in the light of a lonely street lamp. (Uurto 1930/1931: 193–194)³⁷⁸

In this extract, the depressed sentiments of the protagonist transform the way in which the environment is rendered, and the gloominess of the focalizer is located in the urban landscape around him (“boundless gloominess”; “desolate street”; “a car standing melancholically”; “a lonely street lamp”). In Iris Uurto’s following novel, *Kypsyminen* (“Maturing”; 1935), gloomy feelings again take shape in an almost synergetic link between the male protagonist, Lauri, and the city. In terms of genre, this novel is a 1930s version of the student novel, and it reuses prototypical elements from this turn-of-the-century genre, although infused with references to the economically dire conditions of the 1930s and concerned with the protagonist’s psychology, rather than with the social or political

---
³⁷⁸ “Rajaton harmaus lepäsi kattojen päällä. Autio katu tuntui uponneen alas maan sisään väsymyksestä. Pienellä aukiolla seisoi eräs auto haikeana yksinäisen lyhtypatsaan valossa.”

Several other examples can be found in the novel, in which the mood of Olli Lassila, or other characters, is described through the spatial environment in which they move (Uurto 1930/1931: 197, 226, 315, 337).
consequences of his actions. Helsinki features extensively in this novel, and the cityscape is repeatedly described in unison with the mood of the main character. In a crucial scene, rendered in a long descriptive passage (of which only a fragment is included below), the protagonist Lauri, utterly depressed and lovesick, wanders the streets at night, and the deserted cityscape mirrors Lauri’s inner despondency in the extreme:

The city was empty as if it had died; the lamps were shining to themselves [...]. The streets were barren, without snow, the mighty stone buildings were lying along the street as if they were fallen and crouching, petrified sentries. (Uurto 1935: 222)

In Iris Uurto’s and Unto Karri’s novels mentioned above, as in Waltari’s later Helsinki novels, the closely felt bond between protagonist and city is only a secondary narrative strategy, but in Suuri illusioni, the unreal and strongly internalized nature of the city is linked to the overall thematics in the novel. As the title of Waltari’s debut (“The Great Illusion”) suggests, the literary characters in this novel consider life to be no more than an illusion, a succession of dream-like images and fantasies. This conception of reality fills the literary characters with a sense of profound insecurity, the unsettling symptoms of which are a blasé attitude and neurasthenia – typical diseases of modernity and the urban condition. Nevertheless, this insecurity also offers the appealing possibility of participating playfully in constructing and de-constructing the illusions that create the sensory world. Throughout the novel, the characters are continuously referred to as playing roles, as carrying masks, and they view the phenomenological world with suspicion. The protagonist Hart considers that his very being is not so much about

379 The interiorized manner in which 1930s authors described the highly personal emotions and sensations of their protagonists caused critics to talk of a “revolt of the instincts”, in which a considerable role was played by the heightened interest in psychology (see Laitinen 1982: 338). Vaistojen kapina (“Revolt of the Instincts”) was also the title of Tatu Vaaskivi’s psychoanalytically inspired cultural critique of the modern age (Vaaskivi 1937).

380 “Kaupunki oli yhtä tyhjää kuin olisi se kuollut, lamput loistivat itsekseen [...]. Kadut olivat paljaat, lumettomat, mahtavat kivistä olivat niiden varrella kuin kyykkyn pudonneet, jähmettinen vartiosotilaat.”

381 The theme of life as one big illusion appears in other novels of the same period. It is hardly a coincidence that amongst the new professions of literary characters during these decades, we find not only the journalist and the architect, but also the stage director (for example, in Kivimaa’s Epäjumala). The image of life as one giant masquerade also returns in Helvi Hämäläinen’s Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä (“A Respectable Tragedy”; 1941), but here, it is expressly the kind of masquerade brought about by bourgeois values and morals, which desperately tries to give a measure of respectability even to profound human tragedies.
conscious thoughts, but about illusory and fleeing impressions (Waltari 1928: 185–186).

### 6.2 CITY ARCHAEOLOGIES

The city in Suuri illusioni permeates everything, but it would be more exact to speak in this context of cities in the plural. Suuri illusioni is a novel which moves between two capitals, Helsinki and Paris, but numerous other cities, real and imagined, are present. On a first and most obvious level, this is the case for the mesmerizing existence of far-away cities acutely felt by all three protagonists in the novel. In Hellas’ room, Hart notices a large map of Europe on the wall, and on the table he sees a Baedeker, which exerts an immediate and almost synesthetic effect on him: “in a flashing sensation, I felt in my ears the feverish clamour and honking of cars of the metropolis” (ibid.: 53). As Paul Fussell notes in his study of inter-war British travel writing, the “very word Baedeker […] is alone almost sufficient to connote the special travel atmosphere between the wars” (Fussell 1980: 62): an atmosphere that made a considerable mark on the literature of this period.

The importance of other European cities – Paris in particular – for the experience of modernity and urbanity in 1920s and 1930s Finnish prose literature thematizing Helsinki can hardly be exaggerated. These decades saw a growing interest in international travelling and a proliferation of travel literature, which extended its influence to fiction (see Juutila 1984; Lappalainen 1990: 79). Finnish literature written in the wake of the Torch

---

382 “Pöydällä oli Baedeker, ja ohivilahtavana aistimaksena tunsin korvissani suurkaupungin kuumeisen hälinän ja autojen huudot.”

383 This is not to say that Paris had not exerted a great influence in Finnish literature of the turn of the century, as K.A. Tavaststjerna’s Barndomsvänner (“Childhood Friends”; 1886), Juhani Aho’s Yksin (“Alone”; 1890), L. Onerva’s Mirdja (“Mirdja”; 1908) and Inari (“Inari”; 1913), and Joel Lehtonen’s Punainen mylly (“Moulin Rouge”; 1913; see Perttula 2010: 97–100) show. In the 1910s, a character (in this case, in a novel by Kersti Bergroth, Aptit [1914]) could exclaim: “We are no longer Swedish, we do not want to become Russian, let us become Parisians” (as quoted in Pedersen 2007: 208) – echoing the famous, early nineteenth-century saying attributed to A.I. Arwidsson (“We are no longer Swedish, we do not want to become Russian, let us be Finns”).

In several of the Parisian novels mentioned above, the protagonist does not, however, merely travel to Paris, but he or she tries to build a life there. Most prominently amongst the literary works taking up this theme in Finnish literature features Juhani Aho’s Yksin (Alone; 1890/2003). In this long novella, Aho sets the tone for decades of Finnish literary imagination on the city at large, and Paris in specific. The protagonist’s voyage is presented as a pilgrimage on a double scale (see Nummi 2002: 129). On the one hand the protagonist is on a mission to the centre of the modern world, hoping to bring back to his home country new ideas. The protagonist, however, is also on a personal mission to come to grips with the problems, artistic, moral or mundane, left behind in his home country. The aim to bring back from the journey some lessons in life and art extends not only to the protagonist, but also
Bearers tended to include a trip to Paris as a means for the protagonist to come to grips with the problems he/she had left behind in Helsinki, a topos that followed an example that had been set by Juhani Aho in *Yksin* ("Alone"; 1890/2003; see Nummi 2002: 154). A prototypical example of such a journey can be found in Unto Karri’s *Sodoma* (1929), a novel which can be considered symptomatic of Finnish prose written in the wake of the Torch Bearer movement. *Sodoma* is, like several other Helsinki novels of this period (Iris Uurto’s *Kypsyminen* ["Maturing"; 1935]; Matti Kurjensaari’s *Tie Helsinkiin* ["The Road to Helsinki"; 1937]), a text that bears considerable resemblances to the student novel. It is also, however, a novel concerned with dissecting the moral evils of the times, a Spengler-inspired vision of a modern Europe on the verge of collapse. In the novel, the protagonist goes on an extended visit to Paris, and there are descriptions, too, of a terrifying, “animalistic” Berlin (Karri 1929: 244).

Several other Finnish novels of this period align the experience of Helsinki with a journey to one or more European capitals. Joel Lehtonen’s *Henkien taistelu* ("The Battle of the Spirits"; 1933), a novel which will be discussed in detail in the following chapter, shapes a literary Helsinki by juxtaposing it with Paris, and the novel sets out with a pivotal event in the French capital. In Arvi Kivimaa’s *Epäjumala* ("Idol"; 1930), the experiences of Helsinki are literally framed by visions of other cities, since the novel opens with the return of the protagonist from Europe (Berlin, amongst others), and ends with his return from the Soviet Union; in between, he has also had time to journey to the Netherlands.\(^{384}\) In Elsa Soini’s *Uni* ("Dream"; 1930), a considerable part of the novel is taken up by the European travels of the protagonist, which include a visit to Paris. Internationally, the 1930s has been considered the “golden age of travel writing” (Fussell 1980; see also Thacker 2003/2009: 193), and part of the fascinating spatiality in novels such as the ones above is related to the way these create a complex (and often jumbled) image of modernity by juxtaposing Helsinki with other European cities in novels that mix the superficial tourist observations typical of travel on a larger scale, to the whole novel itself, which becomes an endeavour to infuse Finnish literature with new influences; as Jyrki Nummi puts it "Yksin is a research trip into European literary life, from which it brings back contemporary topics and material, as well as a form, in which the cultural and artistic rupture of the era is crystallized” (ibid.).

\(^{384}\) The travel descriptions in the novels by Karri and Kivimaa have been criticized in some of the most sarcastic comments in Paavolainen’s *Suursiivous* ("Cleaning out the House"; 1932). To Paavolainen, the trip abroad by so many Finnish protagonists in the late 1920s and early 1930s novels had become no more than a superficial and staple motif (Paavolainen 1932: 78). Several Finnish authors writing in the 1920s and 1930s, Mika Waltari and Olavi Paavolainen among them, published travel books in addition to literary works. A particularly interesting case is Waltari’s *Yksinäisen miehen juna* ("A Lonely Man on the Train"; 1929), a non-fiction travel report of Waltari’s journey to Constantinople and back, which draws on a range of motifs and literary techniques that can also be found in *Suuri illusioni*.\(^{384}\)
with fictional elements from more traditional genres.\textsuperscript{385} In \textit{Palava nuoruus} ("Burning Youth"; 1935), the last part of his Helsinki trilogy (1933, 1934, 1935), Mika Waltari describes, with the benefit of hindsight, the fascination for travelling to Europe and its cities during the 1920s. The protagonist of \textit{Palava nuoruus}, Juhani, desires to travel abroad “to find modernity, of which life in Helsinki was no more than a lukewarm, Northern shadow” (Waltari 1935: 316)\textsuperscript{386}, and he finds it, like so many others, in Paris and its café Le Dôme.

One important generator of a sense of international urban simultaneity was the radio transistor, which literally enabled the people of the 1920s to tune into the everyday reality of far-off cities. Hart, in \textit{Suuri illusioni}, notices how his little brother, a radio amateur, listens to the voices of far-away cities (Waltari 1928: 81), and in Iris Uurto’s \textit{Ruumiin ikävä} (1930/1931), it is the radio broadcasts from distant cities that give the first indication of Paula’s profound longing towards a reality different from her conventional middle-class marriage. While listening to the radio broadcast, Paula dreams out loud of being in Berlin, walking along Broadway Boulevard, and seeing Kiki in Montmartre. When the rather conventional family friend Valjakka disagrees with Paula, the conversation turns to the contemporary interest in travel in Finnish literature:

> But literature – which is supposed to be the mirror of an era – literature is clearly seized by travel fever. One only reads about car trips, D-trains, Honolulu and eastern lands. (Uurto 1930/1931: 31)\textsuperscript{387}

This statement, which refers back to a particular kind of literary programme, goes a long way in framing what is on the verge of happening in the novel. Paula is seduced by the architect Thorpe (also present at the conversation mentioned above) during exciting outings in his private automobile; she runs off with him and they consume their adulterous relation in a hotel room in London.

\textsuperscript{385} The mixing of the literary genre of the city novel with passages that look reminiscent of international city guides, in inter-war Finnish Helsinki novels, is not only indebted to the popularity of 1920s and 1930s travel narrations, but also to a growing number of Helsinki tourist guides, history books and coffee-table books on Helsinki (see Lindberg 1931; Rancken 1932). One of these publications, \textit{Hyvä Helsinki} ("Our Good Helsinki"; Janson & Kivijärvi 1926), written by two authors who were also producing fiction featuring Helsinki, was described by a contemporary reviewer as providing a “totally European” image of Helsinki (Finck 1927), something which was clearly perceived as desirable. Mika Waltari wrote several non-fiction books on Helsinki (Waltari 1937; Waltari & Blomberg 1941).

\textsuperscript{386} “Hän tahtoi […] löytää nykyajan, josta Helsingin elämä oli vain laimea pohjoisen varjo.”

\textsuperscript{387} “Mutta kirjallisuus, jonka pitäisi olla aikakauden kuvaisin – se on ainakin matkakuumeneessa. Ei saa lukea muuta kuin automatkoista, D-junasta, Honoluluusta ja itämaista.”
In *Suuri illusioni*, the synchronic existence of Europe’s metropolises is but one layer of imagined cities through which the protagonists read their immediate Helsinki environments. In this novel, it is possible to find embryonic characteristics of the modernist view of the city, the idea that “one city leads to another in the distinctive aesthetic voyage into the metamorphosis of form” (Bradbury 1976/1986: 101). In *Suuri illusioni*, Hart and the other protagonists sound their environment using a much more diachronic way of reading urban space than a simple juxtaposition with existing and far-off foreign places. Seeing the exotic in the everyday has become a conscious endeavour for these characters, and also one of the incentives to use stimulants, as is illustrated by the following words, spoken by the journalist Korte to the protagonist:

> Have you ever tried cocaine? – No, you haven’t. – Then a first-class experience has remained out of your grasp. – Do you want to feel you are smart, strong, young, untiring, pure and innocent? Do you want to see, in the light of a street lamp, the shimmering gate of paradise? (Waltari 1928: 85)

In *Suuri illusioni*, the literary characters are seen at work superimposing the everyday urban landscape around them with historical layers and fantastic mirages, and inventing imaginary geographic points of reference with which to read the city. The novel shares this tendency to read the urban landscape through imaginary and often diachronic layers of meaning with a number of international city novels, in which the city is increasingly seen as a conglomerate of overlapping and simultaneously present layers of time. In Charles Dickens’s *Bleak House* (1852–1853/2003), the narrator relates how he would not be surprised to meet a Megalosaurus in the thick London fog, and in the opening pages of Joseph Conrad’s *Heart of Darkness* (1899/1994), the bygone presence of Roman legionaries adds a measure of uncanny brooding to the Thames riverscape. In high modernist texts such as T.S. Eliot’s *The Waste Land* (1922/1971) and James Joyce’s *Ulysses* (1922/1993), the overlaying of the contemporary cityscape with complex mythical layers becomes central to the composition. As Richard Lehan points out, it is a technique that amounts to “the literary complement to what was happening in archaeology – the discovery of layered cities, the realization that different cultures were superimposed upon each other in time” (Lehan 1998: 111; see also Alter 2005: 115–117; Gere 2009: 141–146).389 Seeing the

---

388 “Oletteko koskaan ottanut kokaiinia? – Ette. – Silloin teiltä on jäänyt ensiluokkainen vaikutelma saamatta. – Tahdotteko tuntea olevanne älykäs, voimakas, nuori, väsymätön, puhdas ja viaton? Tahdotteko nähdä katulyhdyyn valon paratiisin säkenöivänä porttina?”

389 For Joyce and D’Annunzio, the major inspiration was formed by the discoveries made by Heinrich Schliemann (1871) and Arthur Evans (1876) (see Lehan 1998: 111); in the case of Mika Waltari and other authors belonging to his generation in Finland, the discovery of the tomb of Tutankhamen
city as a series of overlapping temporal frames, as “a kind of archaeological site”, was one consequence of the way in which (early) modernist authors filtered the narration through the consciousness of the protagonist; a device which, as Robert Alter argues, “facilitates this archaeological perception of the city because the consciousness, though constantly impinged upon by present stimuli, can also exert great freedom in reverting to the cultural past” (Alter 2005: 115).

In *Suuri illusioni*, the simultaneous existence of different temporal layers in the city never takes on such a programmatic or complex form; the modernism of *Suuri illusioni* is only relative (see Karkama 1994: 200, 203). Several scenes in the novel, however, can be read in the light of an aestheticist poetics which draws attention to the city’s imaginary layers, and amongst these, one scene set at the Helsinki waterfront is particularly revealing. In this scene, the transformation of the everyday cityscape through the fanciful way in which the characters comment upon it is taken to extremes. During a nocturnal outing, Caritas and Hart take a walk to Kaivopuisto, a park situated at the southern edge of the Helsinki peninsula. Caritas, who has invited Hart to accompany her, gives as her reason for the excursion “that we are going to make a nocturnal raid on the castle of the Emperor of Beijing, and you shall bring his head to me on a golden platter” constituted the pivotal point (see Saarenheimo 1969). Mika Waltari had become fascinated by the image of ancient cities at an early age (see his poem “Kuolleet kaupungit” [“Dead Cities”], published in 1928, the same year as *Suuri illusioni*), and he had a particular interest in archaeological findings and ancient history, as can be witnessed from his later highly successful historical novels. Mika Waltari was one of the two editors of the Finnish translation of J.A. Hammerton’s overview of archaeological finds, *Wonders of the Past* (1923; published in Finnish as *Muinaisajan ihmeet* in 1934 and 1935). An archaeological find also features in Waltari’s short story “The New Construction Site” (“Uusi rakennusmaa”; 1943, but written in 1936), in which a construction crew finds a Viking grave on a building site in Töölö. Under pressure to complete the job, the crew almost completely destroys the find, and the stones of the grave are turned into gravel for the new roads. To one of the workers, however, the find triggers a feeling of insignificance, but also a realization of the temporal depth of the city in which he lives. Olavi Paavolainen, in *Nykyaikaa etsimässä* ("In Search of Modern Times"; 1929/2002), imagines future archaeologists going through the ruins of New York and Berlin (Paavolainen 1929/2002: 454).

Interest in archaeology can, of course, be found in Finnish literature in earlier years, too. Maila Talvio’s *Niniven lapset* (“Children of Nineveh”; 1915) refers in its title to the idea that an ancient city is underlying present-day Helsinki, and one of the minor characters in the novel is, in fact, an amateur archaeologist, whose return from a journey in the Middle East is described in some detail.

390 The quintessential archaeologically experienced city in Western literature is, of course, Rome; the experience of this city as a giant repository of cultural (and personal) memory has been ingeniously analysed in Freud’s *Das Unbehagen in der Kultur* (Civilization and its Discontents; 1930/2002), but also in Goethe’s experience of the eternal city (see Bakhtin 1986/2004: 39–45).
The playful addition of an Oriental map to Helsinki’s geography can be read as a foreshadowing of the disturbing things to come – after all, Hart, Hellas and Caritas are becoming progressively more entangled in a triangle relationship that will end with Hellas’s suicide, and the “Emperor of Beijing” is clearly identifiable with Hellas. Later on during the same evening, Hart takes up the playful suggestion of Caritas, reading the map of Helsinki as if it were a Silk Road oasis: “I suggest that we go for a short walk to Kaivopuisto to look for the golden road to Samarkand,” I said. ‘At the same time, I shall have the opportunity to cut off the head of the Emperor of Beijing and to offer it to the princess...’” (ibid.: 56)

The mention of the “gold road to Samarkand” can be read as a revealing programmatic statement and as an intertextual reference to the 1925 collection of essays Ny Generation (“The New Generation”) by the Finland-Swedish author and literary critic Hagar Olsson. The first essay of the collection, entitled “Dikten och illusionen” (“Poetry and Illusion”), has as its motto the verse “we make the Golden Journey to Samarkand” from James Elroy Flecker’s poem “The Golden Journey to Samarkand” (Flecker 1923: 144–145). Olsson’s essay calls for a new kind of literature, driven by the notion of “illusion”, and Olsson names the modernist authors subscribing to such a programme “Journeymen to Samarkand” (“Samarkandfararna”; Olsson 1925: 10). The fact that Waltari entitled his debut novel “The Great Illusion” serves as a first indication that the author wanted to follow the road indicated by Olsson. In Waltari’s novel Palava nuoruus (“Burning Youth”; 1935), which is in part a commentary of the author’s personal involvement in the 1920s literary scene, the protagonist, clearly modelled on the young Waltari, is described as being greatly affected by his reading of Olsson’s Ny generation (Waltari 1935: 290).

In Suuri illusioni, the outing to Kaivopuisto does not end in Samarkand or Beijing, but in a nocturnal swim in the sea: Hart and Hellas (who has joined the other two) both go for a swim, while Caritas remains to guard their clothes. The scene, set on the border of night and day, city and sea, contains elements of a journey to the netherworld, in particular when it becomes clear that Hellas is contemplating suicide. There is much more to the scene, however: the Helsinki waterscape, the gleam of the city lights reflected onto the sky, and the roles of the protagonists receive added depth through the imaginary and historical layers of meaning that are attached to the cityscape. Caritas is left with Hellas’s match box and is asked to light a match so that both men will be able to find their way back; a motif which is reminiscent of the internationally widespread tale of the Schwimmersage, which in turn can...
be traced to the classical love story of Hero and Leander (see Gillian 1957).  

And when Hellas and Hart return, Caritas calls them Vikings returning from seducing mermaids.

In this passage, the Helsinki waterfront at the Kaivopuisto park appears as multiple intersecting historical and imaginary layers: the road to Samarkand and the palace of the Emperor of Beijing become intertwined with the Dardanelles (the original setting of the myth of Hero and Leander) and with Nordic medieval history. Significant is also what is not visible amongst these various layers: the fortress of Suomenlinna, which is situated directly opposite the beach of Kaivopuisto, and which could have evoked clear political associations. Politics, however, plays no role in how the characters read their surroundings in Suuri illusioni. As Caritas exclaims at the beginning of the novel, political issues have no part in this world: “Silence! [...] Not a word about politics!” (Waltari 1928: 17)

The aestheticizing way in which the protagonists try to read references into an imagined world in their immediate and everyday environments (Kaivopuisto as a gateway to Samarkand, for example), is in part rooted in the turn-of-the-century symbolist movement. In Suuri illusioni, characters refer directly to G.K. Chesterton and (most probably) to his novel The Ball and the Cross (1910). The same Chesterton, in his “A Defence of Detective Stories” (1902), had claimed that every element constituting the city is a sign, a deliberate symbol: “There is no stone in the street and no brick in the wall that is not actually a deliberate symbol – a message from some man, as if it were a telegram or a post card” (as quoted in Freeman 2007: 81). This vision was typical of the way the detective came to see the city, but also for a more widely-spread approach towards the city, found in decadent and symbolist poetics, which not only retreated “from the material world into realms of imagination”, but also went actively looking for the “signs, omens, messages that are delivered in queer ways and queer places” in the turn-of-the-century city (Arthur Machen [1924] as quoted in Freeman 2007: 168). This attitude – to look for signs “delivered in queer ways and queer places” – is in many respects a view that permeates the way in which the protagonists in

393 As pointed out in chapter 5 (section 5.4.), the match suddenly lighting up in the darkness is one of the quintessential elements of the modern and urban experience in literature (see Alter 2005: 98).

In Waltari’s Suuri illusioni, illumination which suddenly appears and disappears plays a particular role in constructing the modern city’s atmosphere.

394 “Hiljaa! [...] Ei mitään politiikkaa!”

395 In its imagery, the waterfront scene in Suuri illusioni draws clearly on the symbolist repertoire of the turn of the century: the image of the Emperor’s head on a golden platter reads Caritas as a modern version of Salome, who was one of the most popular figures of symbolism. Olavi Paavolainen, in his 1932 Suursiivous (“Cleaning out the House”), touches on an important point when he claims that many of the “modern” Finnish authors of the late 1920s and early 1930s are looking back to the literature of the turn of the century, rather than looking forward (Paavolainen 1932: 76).
Suuri illusioni look at the city: in search of traces of another, parallel universe. It is an approach to the urban environment that can be traced to the seminal work of Baudelaire. Mika Waltari had read Les paradis artificiels (Artificial Paradises; 1860/1967) in 1927 (Waltari 1980: 191), and the journalist Korte’s urge in Suuri illusioni to use cocaine to be able to see “in the light of a street lamp, the shimmering gate of paradise” (Waltari 1928: 85–86, see above) can be interpreted as a direct reference to Les paradis artificiels.

The complex superimposition of various layers onto everyday urban space performed by the characters in Suuri illusioni is relatively rare in Finnish Helsinki novels of this period, but similar scenes do occur. I mentioned earlier how, in Iris Uurto’s novel Ruumiin ikävä, the female protagonist Paula imagines herself to be in Berlin, New York and Paris while listening to foreign radio broadcasts. In the same novel, Paula tries to imagine she is walking in Paris during a promenade through Helsinki; she looks at the Swedish theatre as if it were the Grand Opera in Paris (Uurto 1930/1931: 63). In Toivo Tarvas’s short story “ Yöön mustat varjot” (“The Dark Shadows of the Night”; 1920), the protagonists belong to a youth gang in a working-class district in Helsinki. Profoundly impressed by a regular intake of popular movies, they refer to their everyday urban surroundings as a Wild West scene, identifying themselves with Indians whose hunting grounds are being encroached upon by the Whites (Tarvas 1920: 66–67).396

The way in which the Helsinki coastline is described in Suuri illusioni as a pivotal environment with mythical dimensions bears relevance to the way this little-studied part of Helsinki – the waterfront – is constructed in literature. Helsinki is one of the few European capitals situated at the open sea, and it has an extensive coastline.397 One way in which this particular cityscape is given shape in Finnish literature is by recourse to pastoral imagery, but this is by no means the only mode in which the Helsinki waterfront appears in literature. The scene in Suuri illusioni in which all three protagonists go for an outing to Kaivopuisto is one in a whole range of passages in early twentieth-century literature which transform the shoreline of the Finnish capital into a liminal setting with mythical undercurrents, in which different frontiers of the city come together in order to be transgressed. This had been the case in Arvid Järnefelt’s Veneh’ojalaiset (“The Family Veneh’oja”; 1909), in which a nocturnal journey by stolen rowing boat to the fortress of Viapori/Suomenlinna, undertaken by the two young protagonists, constitutes a pivotal passage, structured as a descent

396 The identification of urban gangs with “Apaches” has, of course, a tradition extending into late nineteenth-century Paris, and Helsinki slang, too, knows the word “apassi” (“apache”) to refer to gang members (Paunonen 2000: 61). The reference to the “Apaches” of the Sörnäinen district is also made, amongst others, in Joel Lehtonen’s novel Henkien taistelu (Lehtonen 1933: 360).

397 By way of comparison: the Helsinki shoreline today is almost twice as long as that of my native country, Belgium.
into liminal space in which boundaries are crossed and in which a potent secret of the city is gradually revealed (see section 5.4.).

In several other novels from the first half of the twentieth century, the Helsinki sea shore carries connotations of a threshold, in which the menace of death looms large.\textsuperscript{398} In Helvi Hämäläinen’s Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä (1941), one of the two protagonists, Tauno, is contemplating suicide on the ramparts of Kaivopuisto (Hämäläinen 1941b: 179–181). In the short prose and poetry collection Tulta ja tuhkaa by Iris Uurto (1930), several references to suicide by drowning in the sea can be found in relation to the Helsinki waterfront, amongst others in connection to a long urban walk that includes Kaivopuisto (Uurto 1930: 12, 32).\textsuperscript{399} In Mika Waltari’s Helsinki novel Appelsiininsiemeen (“The Orange Seed”; 1931), which was written some years following Suuri illusioni, the waterfront at Kaivopuisto is again related to death, this time the death of a minor character – the brother of one of the protagonists – who died from pneumonia after playing around on thin ice in front of Kaivopuisto (Waltari 1931: 149). All three novels of Waltari’s Helsinki trilogy include life-threatening storms situated on or near the Helsinki seashore, which take on increasing symbolic potential. The first novel of the trilogy, Mies ja haave (“A Man and his Dream”; 1933), features a scene of a storm over Helsinki, in which the protagonist’s boys are at sea while the worried parents look on helplessly at the frightening scene from the safety of the Kruununhaka shore; the passage constitutes a pivotal moment in the life of the protagonist, Elias, who turns to God (Waltari 1933: 320–325). In the subsequent Sielu ja liekki (“The Soul and the Flame”; 1934), the protagonist Toivo is surprised by a sudden storm while hunting birds on the islands in the vicinity of Helsinki (Waltari 1934: 268–271). The final novel, Palava nuoruus (“Burning Youth”; 1935) ends with an apocalyptic storm over Helsinki, which foreshadows the coming world fire.

\textsuperscript{398} The Helsinki harbour functions also, of course, as the scene of arrival or departure, and as a threshold between the domestic and the foreign, for example, in the opening scene of Leino’s Pankkiherroja (“Bank Lords”; 1914) and in the harbour scene in Waltari’s Suuri illusioni (1928: 82–101).

\textsuperscript{399} The motif of a girl committing suicide by drowning in the sea has its roots in Finnish folk poetry and the Kalevala. In the Finnish epic, young Aino escapes the arranged marriage with Viinämöinen, the warrior-shaman hero of the Kalevala, by drowning in the sea. It is a story which could be considered as an intertext for Iris Uurto’s “Gretan päiväkirjasta” (“From Greta’s diary”; 1930: 5–18), in which an unmarried woman, pondering society’s expectations of women, considers suicide by drowning as she wanders along the Helsinki waterfront. The motif of the drowning maiden is a recurrent one in Finnish literature, and appears, for example, in Minna Canth’s short story “Ompelija” (“The Seamstress”; 1894).
6.2.1 THOUGHTS BREAKING OFF IN MID-SENTENCE

As has become apparent when discussing the “correspondence method” and the “inward” or “aestheteicist turn” above, the urban experience in *Suuri illusioni* and other Helsinki novels of its time is not only visible on the level of subject matter that is thematized, but also on the stylistic and formal level. In Waltari’s debut novel, the city attains such a prominent position that it begins to exert a direct influence on the way in which the protagonist expresses his experiences.\(^{400}\) The sentence structure repeatedly reflects the fragmentary spatial perception of the protagonist in the form of elliptic clauses, and the protagonist states explicitly that it is the city which is responsible for the fragmentary way in which he talks and thinks. The following fragment, in which Hart has just heard that Hellas has fallen severely ill after a nocturnal swim clearly modelled on their earlier, joint swim, deserves a closer look:


We got a taxi, and the bustle in the street brought me back to my normal state of mind, that of the nervous inhabitant of the metropolis who is unable to think his thoughts to their end, and whose sentences are short and break off in the middle. (Waltari 1928: 122–123)\(^{401}\)

The opening sentences of the quotation above render the fragmentary thoughts of the protagonist, who has just heard the news that Hellas is severely ill. These disconnected images relate to at least three separate, but intertwining time frames: they are images of what the protagonist remembers of earlier events (their joint swim in the sea), what Hart imagines to have happened during the night of Hellas’s solitary swim, and the city

\(^{400}\) In fragments which evoke the daily work of the modern journalist, the experience of a fragmentary reality is reflected most explicitly in elliptic clauses (see Waltari 1928: 67). More generally, the newsroom, with its hectic atmosphere and the reference to elliptic sentences, becomes a new motif in urban literature from this period. For similar staccato descriptions see the publishing-house scene in Talvio’s *Niniven lapset* (“Children of Nineveh”; 1915: 148–156), and the newsroom scene in Kivimaa’s *Epäjumala* (“Idol”; 1930: 168)


Saimme auton, ja katujen vilinä sai minut jälleen tavalliseen mielelläni, suurkaupungin hermostuneeksi asukkaaksi, joka ei kykene ajattelemaan ajatuksiaan loppuun asti, jonka lauseet ovat lyhyitä ja kesken katkeavia.”
images seen simultaneously by the protagonist while he considers these things. In this short fragment, the overlapping of images and experiences related to different moments in time is fairly complex, and rendered, moreover, in a narration that jumbles the chronological order of the narrative. The chronological order of the described events is as follows: Hart hears of Hellas’s illness, after which he leaves his home and takes a taxi. In the taxi he returns again to his “normal state of mind, that of the nervous inhabitant of the metropolis” who thinks in fragmented sentences. At this point, images flash through his mind – things Hart simultaneously remembers, imagines and notices. In terms of the order of the narration, the chronology is disrupted. Firstly, the narrator gives a selection of disparate images in elliptic sentences (“Dark, autumnal night...”). In the following paragraph, the narrator recounts how he takes a taxi, and reflects on the way in which the city influences his thoughts and verbal capacities (“We got a taxi ...”). It is in this second paragraph that the narrator partly explains the fragmentary images in the preceding paragraph: these are the impressions of an inhabitant of the city, thoughts that are unfinished, sentences that break off in the middle.

The quoted passage illustrates the point it makes: that the city has a disruptive influence on the capacity of the protagonist to place and voice his experiences. Moreover, it is a passage which is exemplary of the consequences of the “correspondence method”, the narrative method used to describe the city through an interiorized consciousness (“the pale, fragile light of the street lamps”). During the shortest possible moments of observation, a whole world of memories, images and descriptions is opened up, and the time experience becomes that of a Bergsonian “expanding internal time (durée)” (Keunen 1999: 365–366; cf. Bergson 1889/1910: 100–139; see also Lehan 1998: 80, 134).402

The influence of the city is not only visible in the sentence structure, but also in the figural language used in the novel. The metaphors and similes used in Suuri illusioni draw repeatedly on the semantic fields of urban and technological concepts. In Finnish prose literature from the turn of the twentieth century the urban experience had been commonly expressed in metaphors drawn from a rural context: characters moving to the city are described as uprooted trees, and the confused environment of urban night life is rendered in terms of river rapids and a maelstrom (see Chapter 3). Even an author such as Toivo Tarvas, born in Helsinki and taking urban material as his subject, typically describes urban phenomena using figural language taken from nature, rather than the other way round. In Waltari’s debut novel, however, the impression of a café enters the protagonist’s

402 Frederic Jameson sees the modernist sensitivity to what he calls “deep time” as a result of the different temporalities that came into existence due to the uneven development of modernization. In this reading, the distinct sense of temporality in modernist texts must be understood as the expression of incomplete modernization (Jameson 2003; see also Jameson 1991/2003: 310).
consciousness “bitter like cocaine” (Waltari 1928: 194); a beloved woman is extolled as “the light of car lamps and the red eye of a watchtower over the dark sea” (ibid.: 66); a sudden new emotion is described as “a rhythm [that] began to resound in my soul like the jangle of metal hammers” (ibid.: 76), and the Helsinki city air is described as “a blend of raw spirits and lemon soda” (ibid.: 81).\footnote{403} When Hart and Caritas immerse themselves in Paris nightlife, they are pictured as being “taken along by the metropolitan night like particles of metal dust swept in the mouth of a giant vacuum cleaner under the arc lights of an industrial workshop” (ibid.: 225–226).\footnote{404}

According to Hart, the rumble of the metropolis “numbs all the senses and destroys thoughts, creating fragmentary clauses” (ibid.: 186),\footnote{405} and under the influence of the city, he literally begins to speak the language of the city, using figural language taken from the domain of urbanity and technology to express his feelings and observations. Similarly, in works written in the wake of \textit{Suuri illusioni}, the urban reality is described using technological and urban metaphorical terms: in Kivimaa’s \textit{Epäjumala} (“Idol”; 1930), for example, the love of a woman is described as an airplane (Kivimaa 1930: 315–316).

The metaphors from the urban and technological field above are related to what has been called the “machine romantics” of the Torch Bearer generation, which has been discussed mostly in relation to poetry (see Lappalainen 1990: 95–97). The romanticizing vision of machinery in Finnish texts of the 1920s was mostly concerned with devices of locomotion, such as trains, cars and airplanes, and at least partly symptomatic of an optimistic view of society’s progress and of a global humankind (Koskela 1999b: 270). A residue of the 1920s machine romantics can still be clearly seen in Waltari’s \textit{Appelsiininsiemen} (1931), for example in the excited associations evoked by cars (Waltari 1931: 8, 97), but in \textit{Palava nuoruus} (1935), which in part is an autobiographical commentary on Waltari’s own involvement with the 1920s

\begin{itemize}
  \item \footnote{403} “Kirpeänä kuin kokaini […]”
  \begin{quote}
    “Sinä olet autolyhtyen valo ja majakan punainen silmä pimeän meren yllä.”
  \end{quote}
  \begin{quote}
    “Jokin rytmä alkoit sialussani niinkuin teräsvasarain kalke.”
  \end{quote}
  \begin{quote}
    “Ilma oli kuin sekoitus raakaa spiriitä ja sitruunasoodaa.”
  \end{quote}
  \item \footnote{404} “Suurkaupungin yö vei meidät mukanaan niinkuin konepajan kaarilamppujen alla jättäisimuri tempaa kitaansa metallihiukkaset.”
  \item The difference between these images in \textit{Suuri illusioni} and earlier descriptions of the city in Finnish literature can be illustrated by a comparison with Juhani Aho’s \textit{Yksin}, in which Paris is also described as having a gaping mouth that swallows people (in this case, arriving at the railway station), but in which the mouth is compared to the bottle neck of river rapids – a traditional image from Finnish nature (Aho 1890/2003: 43).
  \item \footnote{405} “[…] suurkaupungin pauhu, joka turruttaa kaikki aistimet ja hävittää ajatukset, tehdent lauseet katkonaisiksi.”
  \item In this instance, Hart is speaking of Paris. Not surprisingly, many of the urban and modern metaphors in \textit{Suuri illusioni} appear in relation to Paris.
\end{itemize}
literary movement, the narrator distances himself from the superficiality of the Torch Bearers’ exoticism (Waltari 1935: 243–246).

6.3 THE NOCTURNAL CAR DRIVE

As part of the new urban aesthetics expressed in the literature of this period, a new pivotal urban experience appears: that of the city at night seen from the window of a speeding car. In several novels and short stories, the nocturnal car drive functions as a node with various functions. As a liminal space, part private, part public, it performs the function of a space of transgression, with clear sensual and sexual undercurrents. In such scenes, the closed car takes on the function – similar to the city as a whole – of a transitory space of sexual possibilities. Characteristically, the automobile is described in Arvi Kivimaa’s novel Epiäjumala (“Idol”; 1930) as “the modern magnet”, and the owner of a car is, by consequence, “always surrounded by girls” (Kivimaa 1930: 65). Again in Karri’s Sodoma, the car is seen as symptomatic of a new, modern relationship between men and women, for whom “the scene [for lovemaking] could be as easily a taxi as anything else” (Karri 1929: 102).

The nocturnal car drive functions as a crucial symbol of speed and urbanity, through which the experience of the city is filtered. When the protagonists are transported by taxi through the dark city, the view of Helsinki becomes symbolic of modern urban life itself: defined by speed, and by the sudden appearance of disparate impressions that fade away as fast as they have appeared. The effect is one of disorientation, and the specific characteristics of this mode of transport affect the protagonist’s capacity to read the urban environment. In Unto Karri’s Sodoma (“Sodom”; 1929), for example, the speeding car has a drugging effect on the protagonist, who “felt that he was sinking down, as if in ether or in infinite space” (Karri 1929:

406 In many other respects, too, the trilogy Isästä poikaan is critical of the city and of modernity; as Kai Laitinen points out, it was written in the years 1933–1935, “when the earlier ideals of the Torch Bearers made way for more robust, national-traditional values” (Laitinen 1982: 336). The three novels follow a family that gradually takes root in the Finnish capital. The family farm is at one point lost, but then again retrieved, and significantly, this countryside home forms an important symbolic kernel for the family in times of crisis. When under pressure, a temporary return to the roots, literally to strengthen oneself, is described as possible and even necessary; the city itself is, in this sense, not (yet) an autonomous entity, and is presented as unable to provide its inhabitants with stability and physical well-being. In this sense, Helsinki appears here in a different light than in other novels by Waltari (such as Suuri illusioni, Appelsiininsiemen, and Surun ja ilon kaupunki), in which the city constitutes a more self-centred and almost autarchic entity.

407 “Hänen ympärillään pyörii tyttöjä, koska nykyaikaisen magneetin nimi on auto.”

408 “Näyttämöksi kelpaa yhtä hyvin taksa-auto [..]”
The description of the city seen through the window of a speeding car tends to emphasize the experience of speed and the fragmentary and fleeting nature of the observations, and the resulting experience is repeatedly described in what can be called an “impressionist”, elliptic and predominantly nominal style.

The nocturnal car drive in Finnish prose literature can be considered, like the walk along the Esplanade in earlier decades, as a highly programmed bourgeois ritual. The view seen from the car window tends to include particular geographical highlights, such as the scenery of the Töölö Bay and the clock of the central railway station. The events unfolding in the privacy of the car typically follow a more or less predictable order. From the moment a man and woman enter the car, the sense that moral borders are about to be transgressed, together with spatial and perhaps even social boundaries, becomes evident, and more often than not, they eventually embrace each other.

In Toivo Tarvas’s 1916 novel *Eri tasoilta* (“On Different Levels”), all prototypical elements of the car drive are present. In a pivotal scene, two of the protagonists, Martta and Albert, take a taxi through Helsinki at night. In the preceding passages, tension had been building up between the two of them; Martta is in love with Albert, while Albert is frustrated in his love for another girl, Ebba. Both know that Ebba is, at the very same moment, in a second taxi together with their common friend Urho, and the knowledge of what might be happening there adds extra suspense to the scene. The car’s speed and the flashes of light seen through the window create a profound feeling of disorientation: “The street lamps flashed by as if they were fiery balls in space. He could not see anything else, because the speed was so high that everything else changed into a fuzzy chaos” (Tarvas 1916a: 101). Amidst this disorientation, moral restraints fade, and Martta kisses Albert.

Significantly, the journey ends in the private apartment of Martta at Museokatu, in Töölö, an apartment which exhibits an exotic atmosphere similar to the one found later, in *Suuri illusioni*, in Mrs. Spindel’s apartment.

In *Suuri illusioni*, the nocturnal car drive constitutes the first intimate encounter between the protagonist Hart and the femme fatale Caritas. As the guests at Mrs. Spindel’s party run out of alcohol, they take a taxi to a working-class district to buy illegal alcohol. The depiction of the nocturnal drive contains all the elements typical for such scenes. The drive entails a crossing of spatial divides, partly along the fault lines of the city’s social geography: the street name mentioned is Vladimirinkatu (present-day Kalevankatu), but reference is made also to “a half-shaded row of lights at the other side of the Long Bridge” (Waltari 1928: 21).

409 “[…] hän tunsi vaipuvansa syvälle – niinkuin etteriin tai äärettömään avaruuteen.”
410 “Katulyhdyt vilahotelivat ohimennessä niinkuin tuliset pallot avaruudessa. Muuta ei hän nähtytkään, sillä vauhti oli siksi kova, että kaikki muuttui epämiäräiseksi kaakokeksi.”
411 “Pitkänsillan tuolla puolen välkähti näkyyviin himmeä, puolivaloinen lyyhtrivi.”
the lower class districts in this context is not related to moral or social indignation: the lower class characters and interiors are pure scenery, serving the fantasy of the protagonists who look at their journey to the working-class district as if they were “slumming” (see also section 7.5.). The speed of the car, the sensuous atmosphere brought about by the suggestive light effect, the jostling movement the two people are subjected to, their physical closeness – Caritas is described as “becoming squeezed almost against me” (Waltari 1928: 21) – all lead to the almost inevitable outcome, and they kiss. The way in which the journey is experienced highlights the illusory aspect of what is happening, and the extent to which it is created by the fragmentary impressions of the outside, nocturnal world, filtered through the window of the speeding car: “the light of a street lamp flashing by brought a strange gleam to her eyes” (ibid.: 24).

A variety of novels appearing in the 1930s contain similar experiences. In Waltari’s Appelsiininsiemen (1931), the protagonists Irene and Ilmari let themselves be driven aimlessly in a taxi through Helsinki by night. In a certain respect part of the drive is programmed – the tour around Eläintarha and the Töölö Bay can be found already in Leino’s “Päivä Helsingissä” (“A Day in Helsinki”; 1905), which featured a nocturnal drive in a horse-drawn carriage through Helsinki. The experience of the city as seen through the perspective of the window of a moving car is rendered in a particular stylistic register, with elliptic clauses and an enumeration of successive nouns:

The clock showed almost half past four; she could see it in the jolting corner of the street Kluuvikatu, the shiny black street, puddles, autumn lamps, like endless, terrifying balls, in the tossing and turning buzz of the car. (Waltari 1931: 332)

---

412 “Caritas puristui melkein kiinni minuun autossa.”
413 “[…] ohvilahattavan katulyhdyyn valo loi hänen silmiinsä kummallisen kiillon.”
414 In many respects, the nocturnal journey by horse-drawn carriage in Leino’s fascinating short story “Päivä Helsingissä” (“A Day in Helsinki”; 1905) prefigures thematics that would become more prominent in the 1920s and 1930s. It is in part a narrative about the petty party struggles of the turn of the century, but it is also a tale of modernity, in which decadent youngsters drink absinth in shady cafés, in which the newspaper is called the theatre of the modern age, and in which the café is called “the most beautiful fruit of modern popular culture” (Leino 1905: 66, 72) (“nykyaikaisen kansanvaltaisen kulttuurin kaunein hedelmä”). One of the minor characters, the former Don Juan Tauno Tavela, is being teased by the blasé female student Aino into eloping with her, and Tauno, catching the bait, orders a horse carriage with which they are to leave the city. When Tauno’s courage fails him, what should have been an exciting and adventurous journey is turned into a short nocturnal drive around the Töölö Bay.
415 “Kello alkoi olla puoli viisi, hän näki sen Kluuvikadun heilahtavassa kulmassa, kiiltävää, mustaa katua, lääkköjä, syksyisää lyhyjä, loppumattomina, hurjina palloina, auton heittelehtivää surina.”
Particular modes of transport can have considerable importance also for the literary techniques rendering the urban environment: the experience of the tram, most typically, has given rise to a particular, almost syncopated, description of the modern urban experience (see Thacker 2003/2009: 7–8, Alter 2005: 127–128; Freeman 2007: 145). The same can be said of the experience of the nocturnal car drive. One of the interesting effects of the style Waltari used to describe it is the dominance of nominal constructions (“black street, puddles, autumn lamps” etc.), which continues in the rest of the passage, and recurs later in the novel.416 In the subsequent passage, which continues from the description of the car drive quoted above, the excitement felt by Irene, and the succession of her transitory impressions, are all expressed by an enumeration of nouns in a sentence that lacks a verb: “A car running wild in the street at night, the invisible autumn sky, lamps flashing by, the brightness of alcohol in her brains.” (Waltari 1931: 333)417

Often, one of the few stable references to the physical surroundings is the mention of lighted public clocks in highly visible places, which offers a rare anchoring point in time and space. In Suuri illusioni, too, the protagonist Hart notices the clock of the railway station tower:

“The lighted clock dial of the railway square had flashed past us, and had imprinted upon the retina of my eye its yellowish after-image.

“The moon of a modern landscape,” I said. (Waltari 1928: 22)418

In the early decades of the twentieth century, the synchronized movement of the urban masses, directed by universally timed clocks, exerted a powerful influence on writers and filmmakers alike (see Prakash 2010: 3). In passages such as the one above, however, the clock would seem to function as a symbol of something different: it is an indication of the extent to which the protagonists, during the nocturnal car drive, are actually outside of the normally timed routines. Public clocks had functioned as important benchmarks in the life of the earliest flâneurs, too, and they had been indicative of the flâneur’s interest in new technology and of the increasing importance of accurate time keeping (Wilson 1992: 94). In passages such as the one above, there is a further important dimension to the mention of the railway clock: what is highlighted is not so much the image of the clock itself, but that of the railway station and its tower, two of the penultimate images of

416 A staccato, impressionistic style with an enumeration of successive nouns appears, for example, in the passage where Irene is going to the railway station (Waltari 1931: 484–485).

417 “Hullaantunut auto yöllisellä kadulla, syksyn näkymätön taivas, vilisevät lyhdyt, alkoholin kirkkaus aivoissa.”

418 “Asematorin valaistu kellotaulu oli vilhahtanut ohitsemme ja painanut silmän verkkokalvoon kellertävän jälkikuvansa.

‘Modernin maiseman kuu,’ sanoin minä.”
urbanity and of the city’s drive towards verticality and speed (see Laine 2011).

In a similar scene in the novel Epäjumala (“Idol”; 1930), the protagonist Markus takes a taxi together with Marcelle, the woman he has become infatuated with, and they drive aimlessly through the city. The female character is described as in charge of the situation: it is Marcelle who has given the order to the taxi driver to make a detour. In several novels discussed above, the woman seems as much, if not more, the instigator and seducer as the man; in Tarvas’s Eri tasoiIita, for example, Martta takes the active part. During the car drive in Epäjumala, furtive lights shine in through the window, and there is a vision of the railway station tower clock. Tension builds up, and they kiss (Kivimaa 1930: 81–87). Here, as in the other excerpts discussed, the scene is drenched in a sensuality that is in part rooted in the idea that the closed car presents a semi-public, semi-private environment which facilitates the transgression of moral borders.

In almost all cases (Ilmari and Irene in Appelsiininsiemens are the exception), the love between the man and woman involved is illicit; this is particularly true for Kivimaa’s Epäjumala, in which Markus’s beloved Marcelle is already committed. Similarly, in Kivimaa’s slightly later short story “Irja” (“Irja”; 1931), the taxi is the spatial environment in which the protagonist seduces Irja, the woman he has loved long ago, but who has since married another man. The passionate feelings of the protagonist are described in part through a description of the urban environment and the swinging movement of the car, and here, as in Kivimaa’s Epäjumala, the sensuous atmosphere is juxtaposed with a dense fog as they drive near the Kaivopuisto waterfront (Kivimaa 1930: 116, 1931: 112).

There is another illicit dimension to the transitory bond created between man and woman in the confined space of a speeding car: in several texts, there is a considerable class difference between both. In Appelsiininsiemens the man, Ilmari, can be seen as something of a social riser, while the social divide is most explicit in Eri tasoiIita (“On Different Levels”), which by its very title accentuates the inseparable differences of social class, imprinted in culture as well as in genetic outlook. In this novel, the intimacy between Martta and Albert is described as socially and culturally impossible, but in the illusory setting of the speeding car, such restraints can temporarily be put aside. In Epäjumala, the divide that is crossed in the taxi is the cultural and political abyss opening up between people from different nationalities. Especially for people who have no private spaces at their disposal, the taxi offers an opportunity to indulge in a rare intimacy. In Unto Karri’s 1929 novel Sodoma (“Sodom”), the two protagonists Alli and Martti have no place

419 In Arvi Kivimaa’s Epäjumala, there are in fact several separate scenes in which Markus and Marcelle take a taxi together. In a final scene, the enclosed chamber of the taxi functions as a liminal space that frames their inevitable separation, and when Marcelle has gone, Markus imagines he will throw himself in front of the cars driving behind his taxi (Kivimaa 1930: 227–228).
to go, since they both share apartments with other people; for them, the car becomes a refuge, and within it, they become as if “outside of the whole society, people without home and without position” (Karri 1929: 121). The car here becomes a surrogate for the home that is out of reach of the protagonists. Amidst the rocking movement and the feeling of rush brought about by the car, Alli and Martti fall asleep together (ibid.: 123).

The motif of illicit love performed in the closed confines of a carriage moving aimlessly through the city is, of course, much older than texts from the 1910s, 1920s and 1930s: one of the most famous instances can be found in Flaubert’s *Madame Bovary* (1856/1996), and, as Angela Moorjani has pointed out in relation to this novel, the carriage as “a vehicle of seduction” has a long tradition as “one of the most persistent codes of erotic literature” (Moorjani 1980: 50). More generally, as Mieke Bal points out, events that are set in “vehicles of transportation, such as trains, boats, carriages, airplanes [...] temporarily suspend the safe predictability and clarity of the social order” (Bal 2009: 222). Different kinds of vehicles convey, of course, different connotations: there are considerable differences between the images evoked by the kind of horse-drawn and typically closed carriage in nineteenth-century literature, and the speeding cars of the inter-war period, with their windows conspicuously opened to the outside urban world. In inter-war Helsinki novels, the sensuous atmosphere in a speeding car moving through the city at night entails a profound longing for a somewhere else, and an acute sense of being part of a new time frame. As he embraces Marcelle, Markus in *Epäjumala* feels that his world is set loose from that of an earlier generation: “Their world was dead, Markus’s world was moving, flying; every moment it conquered something new and borderless” (Kivimaa 1930: 85). In the image of the car speeding through the city night, two urges come together: the transgression of moral boundaries in a sensuous and illicit encounter, and the desire to embrace a world in relentless motion of which the city had become the symbol.

Little wonder that car outings were frowned upon by Helsinki citizens trying to uphold old-fashioned moral standards. More than a decade before Waltari’s *Suuri illusioni*, Maila Talvio’s novel *Niniven lapset* (1915) presents an image of private car outings as a symbol of moral evil. In the novel, Daniel, the youngest of the family Stähle (see Chapter 6), imagines he is a present-day Jonah, who has been called upon to warn the citizens of modern Nineveh to renounce their sins. One of the ways in which Daniel carries out this mission is to try to prevent the inhabitants of “Metropolis” (the name given to Helsinki in this novel) from taking Sunday trips to the countryside; in his effort to stop their cars on the roads leading out of the city, he is almost

---

420 “He olivat kuin koko yhteiskunnan ulkopuolella olevia, joilla ei ollut kotia eikä mitään asemaa.”

421 “Heillä oli kuollut maailma, Markuksen maailma liikkui, lensi, voitti joka hetki uutta ja rajaonta.”
run over (Talvio 1915: 284–287). Interestingly, Daniel is also concerned with the sensuous atmosphere that reigns in the crowded public-space-in-motion of the tram. When he sees what he interprets to be a young girl flirting with a ticket salesman on the tram, he tries to interfere in a dramatic attempt to ward of God’s impending anger with the city (ibid.: 316). In Waltari’s *Appelsiininsiemen* (1931), too, the tram is linked to loosening sexual morals. The novel’s protagonist, young Irene, thinks of the nearness of the unknown people around her as arousing (Waltari 1931: 8). In the description of her awakening feelings of lust, the reader also learns that in the public and crowded space of public transport, even respectable-looking men give loose rein to their instincts: “And those men, often so old and looking so respectable, that you never would have believed that they are the kind that moved their hands around and touched her in a manner that disgusted and petrified her” (ibid.: 96).422

### 6.4 AESTHETICIZING “NEW HELSINKI” AND HELVI HÄMÄLÄINEN’S SÄÄDYLLINEN MURHENÄYTELÄ

In Helsinki literature of the 1920s and 1930s, which aestheticizes the urban landscape, the literary descriptions focus not so much on Helsinki as on a limited and very specific part of the Finnish capital: the district of Töölö. This relatively new part of the city was widely seen as the quintessential scene of a triumphal architectural march towards modernity, in part since it was laid out on the basis of the very first urban planning competition in Finland (Bell & Hietala 2002: 163).423 Several narrators in this period feel it necessary to explicate (often repeatedly) that their characters live in Töölö. In Arvi Kivimaa’s *Epäjumala*, for example, the narrator recounts even at a late stage in the novel that the protagonist Markus “left his Töölö apartment” (Kivimaa 1930: 252). Several novels of this period begin with a scene set in Töölö: at the beginning of the novel *Uni* (“Dream”; 1930), by Elsa Soini, the protagonist is introduced as an independent woman, living on her own in a two-room apartment in Töölö; Arvi Kivimaa’s novel *Hetki ikuisen edessä* (“A Moment before Eternity; 1932) opens, after a prologue, with a description of the protagonist standing at a tram stop in Mehelinkatu in Töölö (Kivimaa 1932: 21). At the beginning of a later novel by the same author, *Viheriöivä risti* (“The Blooming Cross”; 1939), the protagonist, a young medical student, is living in a flat in Töölö.

422 “Ja ne herrat, monta kertaa niin vanhat ja arvokkaan näköiset, ettei mitenkään olisi voinut uskoa heistä sellaista, jotka liukuttivat käsialan ja koskettelivat vastenmielisellä, jäykistyttävällä tavalla.”

423 For the development of Töölö, see also Heiskanen & Santakari 2004: 112–113.
Mika Waltari’s Helsinki, in particular, is anchored in this new part of Helsinki (see also Laurila 1982a: 80–81, 1982b: 42–43). Regardless of the fact that his characters journey through all parts of the capital, they almost invariably come home to Töölö. *Suuri illusioni*, of course, opens with the scene at Mrs. Spindel’s salon, which most readers could be expected to situate in Töölö. In Waltari’s consecutive Helsinki novel, *Appelsiininsiemen* (1931), the protagonist Irene grows up in Töölö, and when she marries Ilmari, the young couple acquires a double-roomed flat in the northern part of Töölö, “exactly as they had planned” (Waltari 1931: 363). In *Palava nuoruus*, the recently married couple Juhani and Kyllikki self-evidently move into an apartment in Töölö, in Mechelininkatu (Waltari 1935: 417), a street which is mentioned by Ilmari in *Appelsiininsiemen* as an example of successful modern architecture in Töölö, and along which, in the same novel, the apartment of the degenerate Kurt Waldhof is also situated. Aarni, the protagonist of Kivimaa’s *Hetki ikuisen edessä*, also lives in Mechelininkatu, and he shares with Kurt Waldhof and Irene in *Appelsiininsiemen* a view of the Helsinki crematorium, which, like Töölö itself, was an architectural reminder of modernizing attitudes.

Töölö is repeatedly described as a new city, in tune with the modern age, and befitting a young nation. Literary descriptions of this part of the capital tend to focus on experiences of acute novelty, such as in Kivimaa’s *Viheriöivä risti* (1939), set in the late 1920s, which describes Töölö as “full of white walls that had just risen up, full of scaffolding and the rattle of machines” (Kivimaa 1939: 24). The experience of modern architecture and city planning was not unambiguously positive, however. In Kivimaa’s *Hetki ikuisen edessä*, Töölö is also described as “cold and lifeless”, and as “a messily created environment” – little wonder the main character, who considers the city “the murderer of real life”, does not thrive there (Kivimaa 1932: 76–77). An elderly character such as the professor in Waltari’s *Appelsiininsiemen* sees Töölö as part of a whole litany of modernity, and as one of the many recent rationalizing processes that aim to make life more practical:

424 There was a strong autobiographical element to this symbiotic relation between Töölö and Waltari’s Helsinki novels: like the writer character in *Surun ja ilon kaupunki* (“City of Sorrow and Joy”), Waltari lived in Töölö (see Envall 1992).
425 Concerning Spindel’s salon and the factual salon of Mrs. Craucher, see Waltari 1980: 159–167; Rajala 2008: 130–135; Selén 2010: 87 ff.
426 “[…] niinkuin olivat suunnitteleetkin.”
427 Typical in this respect is Aino, the young, liberal and provocative woman in Eino Leino’s “Päivä Helsingissä” (1905), who is an advocate of cremation.
428 “[…] täynnä juuri kohonneita valkeita seinää, rakennustelineitä ja työkoneiden räminää.”
429 “[…] eloton ja kylmä […]”; “[…] tähän hutiloiden luotuun kaupunginosaan […]”; “[…] oikean elämän surmana […].”
Cars had come, and new, American trams, Töölö was born. Central heating, central kitchens, two-room apartments, the civil guard, conscription, compulsory education, small farmers, childless marriages, divorces, Prohibition, the black market, criminality, knife fights. All those things that one could endlessly enumerate. The socialization and rationalization of life. (Waltari 1931: 88)

The list of the professor is surprisingly heterogeneous, but for an understanding of how Töölö was experienced, the first three concepts mentioned in immediate succession are of considerable interest: “Central heating, central kitchens, two-room apartments”. The buildings of Töölö were designed for a new generation, for young couples who did not keep a maid (hence the central kitchen, from which all inhabitants could order their meals); they were smaller than the traditional bourgeois homes, but considerably better furnished and larger than the working-class homes. Töölö was indeed the architectural embodiment of the “socialization and rationalization of life”, or as Olavi Paavolainen described it in the highly ironical poem “Helsinki by Night”, Töölö was as much as “the ideal-mechanic-machine-rational-city”, the highlight of any touristic tour through Helsinki (Paavolainen 1929: 40–41).

The specific nature of Töölö as a “New Helsinki”, in the sense both of a new architectural totality and of a new living style, is evoked in detail in Helvi Hämäläinen’s Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä. Töölö is literally described in the novel as the New Helsinki (Hämäläinen 1941a: 30–31), and its typical characteristics are given in a long passage, of which here only a fragment:

New Helsinki is full of whims, but it is cheerful and funny in comparison to the old and heavy Helsinki of the last century, which

430 “Autot olivat tulleet, uudet, amerikkalaiset raitiotievaunut, Tööö oli syntynyt. Keskuslämmitykset, keskuskeittiöt, dublettijärjestelmä, suojeluskunnat, asevelvollisuus, oppivelvollisuus, pienviljelijät, lapsettomat avioerot, avioerot, kieltolaki, salakauppa, rikollisuus, puukotukset... Kaikki tuo, jota saattoi luetella äärettöminä. Elämän yhteiskunnallistaminen ja käytännöllistäminen.”

431 ”Ihanne-mekaanis-koneellis-asiallinen kaupunki.” The full reference to Töölö in the poem, which is structured as a touristic tour through Helsinki, reads as follows:

”And now, the highlight of our trip – do you hear the symphony of our century: the ringing of automatic telephones, the news from divorce agencies, the rich rumble of water closets, the wheeze of radios, the scratch of nightly needles on gramophones... This is Töölö. The ideal-mechanic-machine-rational-city. Deus ex machina. The only reminders of ancient times: kids and bedbugs.” (Paavolainen 1929: 40–41: “Ja nyt retkemme clou – / kuuletteko vuosisatamme / sinfonian: / automaattipuhelimien soi- / ton, uutiset avioerotoi- / mistoista / WC:iden vuolaan kohinan, / radiotvien korahotelun, / yöneulojen kitinän gramo-/foneista... / Se on Tööö. / Ihanne-me- / kaanis- / koneellis- / asiallinen / kaupunki / Deus ex ma- / china. / Ainoat mui- / naismuis- / tot: / lapset ja lutikat.”)
This new part of the city, where the female protagonist Naimi lives, is described later in the same passage as the “New Helsinki of the ’30s, which has opened up like a garden flower, joyfully coloured, sunny, practical and impractical, in love with everything that is new this very moment, and with what it thinks to be surprising” (Hämäläinen 1941a: 32). Töölö is described as a part of the city that has come into being together with the new generation whose lifestyle it makes possible. Young couples from the educated class, like Irene and Ilmari in *Appelsiininsiemen*, could move to small and comfortable apartments, and for the new generation of independent white-collar women working out of the home, Töölö provided better housing conditions than the oversized bourgeois houses in the centre, or the overcrowded houses in working-class districts.

Amongst the novels thematizing Helsinki in Finnish literature of this period, Helvi Hämäläinen’s *Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä* (1941) occupies a special position. The narrator describes Töölö in the passage quoted above, but it is suggested that at least part of the observations are filtered through the perspective of the female protagonist Naimi. The city is described from a perspective that is detached, and includes comments on the historical, aesthetical and social features of “New Helsinki”, but as the narration evolves...

---

432 “Uusi Helsinki on täynnä päähänpistoja, mutta se on iloinen ja hauska vanhan raskaan viime vuosisadan lopun Helsingin rinnalla, joka [...] oli synkkä, pimeä, epäterveellinen, teki jyrkän eron suurten kaudeksan huoneen ja pienten yhden tai kahden huoneen huoneistojen välillä. [...] Vanha Helsinki ei lainkaan tunne näitä pieniä iloisia, puhtaita ja mukavia huoneistoja, jotka täyttävät uuden Helsingin, mutta vanha Helsinki ei tuotenut sitä ihmislajiakaan, joka niissä elää, itsensä elätyvä sivistyneistonaisia tai aviopareja, jotka molemat työskentelevät jossakin virassa kodin ulkopuolella.”

433 “[…] Mutta tuossa kolmiykkymenluvun uudessa Helsingissä, joka on auennut kuin puutarhakukka iloisen värikkäään, aurinkoisena, käytännöllisenä ja epäkäytännöllisenä, rakastuneena kaikkeen tämän hetken uuteen, jota se pitää yllättävänä [...]”

434 Controversies surrounding the novel delayed its appearance, scheduled for 1939, until 1941. The adulterous relationship at the heart of the plot, which was based on a real-life story involving easily recognizable people of Helsinki society, was considered particularly problematic. Parts of the manuscript were censored, including a critique on Hitler (see Juutila 1989: 427; Vaittinen 1995; Schoolfield 1998: 171). The sensuous and baroque-like style was criticized by some, although others, notably Tatu Vaaskivi, extolled Hämäläinen’s novel and her “copiously flowing imagery” (Vaaskivi 1941: 326).
and gradually moves more firmly into Naimi’s perspective, a personal and emotional attachment with the city becomes equally apparent. The city is conceived as the creation of, and in part a commentary upon, current socio-economic conditions (the buildings of Töölö as signs of a new kind of middle class), but also as a personally experienced, cherished environment. Throughout the novel, there is a constant play between a view of the city as seen through a filter of temporal and aestheticizing distance, and the more immediate and often intimate experience of everyday city walks.

Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä recounts the story of several reclusive characters, Naimi Saarinen and her brother Tauno, and their respective spouses, Artur and Elisabet. From the perspective of Helsinki experiences, Naimi and Tauno are the most interesting characters. Both are out of tune with their time, and they feel more connected with the values of an earlier era. This, however, does not keep them from indulging in an eagerness to aestheticize their immediate surroundings, which include the “New Helsinki” of the Töölö district they both inhabit. Naimi has never recovered from an intense love relationship which ended twenty years earlier, and which involved Artur, the man to whom she is still married. The part of the narration told from Naimi’s perspective can be read as the attempt of an aging woman to come to terms with her memories and to find ways in which she can reconcile the past, which she wants to conserve, with the present that imposes itself upon her. Naimi’s brother Tauno is an archaeologist employed in a museum, whose respectable marriage gradually falls to pieces when he becomes infatuated with the neighbours’ maid. The girl becomes pregnant and Tauno tries desperately to uphold a sense of respectability by attempting to separate the high-minded world of his senses from the reality posed by the formalities of his marriage, and the consequences of his extramarital affair. Both Naimi’s and Tauno’s quest is not only to live through the “respectable tragedy” of marital relationships running aground, but to weld together the radiant world of their vivid imagination and memories with prosaic and everyday realities.

To a large extent, the relationship between literary characters and the city is rendered in Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä by way of the “correspondence method”, the mode of spatial emplotment discussed earlier in this chapter (see above, section 6.1.), by which the protagonist’s inner mood is described through his/her spatial surroundings. In the opening pages of the novel, for example, the city street is described in terms that are attuned to the uncertain feelings of expectation experienced by Tauno, an elderly man with a doctorate in the arts, as he turns a corner with the aim to see the girl he has secretly fallen in love with. The street, which the doctor is well acquainted with, appears suddenly “strangely real”, and “odd and slender shadows” are

---

435 This aspect of the plot has been repeatedly read in the light of autobiographical information concerning the relationship between Helvi Hämäläinen and Olavi Paavolainen (see Palmgren 1989: 154; Mauriala 2005: 104).
seen on the walls and the asphalt (Hämäläinen 1941a: 17). In a more explicit passage, Tauno’s wife Elisabet reflects on how her surroundings have changed after she received the news that Tauno’s mistress is pregnant:

Elisabet was afraid to look around [...] so that she did not have to feel the terrible wound in her heart [...], due to which the landscape of her soul had changed so much that her everyday surroundings, where she had until now happily moved about and onto which she had projected her inner self, had become painful, and incorporated with every step a terrible suffering, memories of her marriage and of love [...].” (Hämäläinen 1941b: 31–32)

The everyday surroundings of Elisabet are explicitly described as environments onto which she projects her “inner self”, a landscape that is intimately intertwined with the “landscape of her soul”. Changes in her inner landscape radically transform her everyday surroundings, which become “with every step” an embodiment of the betrayal of her husband. In other scenes, too, the mood of particular characters in the novel is similarly reflected in the description of elements from the city’s surroundings: Naimi, for example, thinks her brother’s family life resembles the well-organized rose garden at the Helsinki Botanical Garden: “far too perfectly beautiful and silent” (Hämäläinen 1941a: 85). Lauri Viljanen has pointed out that in Hämäläinen’s novel, the voluptuous description of characters’ surroundings functions as a technique similar to that of the stream of consciousness: “a highly sensuous and particularly visual artist, she [Hämäläinen] ‘plucks’ sensations from her characters’ environment, from their rooms, streets, and from their gardens especially, and projects these unrelentingly and continuously onto their soul” (Viljanen 1959: 197).

The interaction between inner mood and outward space is not only invoked by the narrator, but also, and repeatedly so, by the characters themselves, in particular by Naimi. In Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä, the main characters consciously construct the spatial surroundings as repositories of their memory: the apartment Naimi inhabits is arranged as a personal museum landscape, reminiscent of her lost love, and the countryside home of Naimi’s beloved Artur is a similar artificially conserved space. Most of the lengthy and meticulous spatial descriptions in the novel

436 “[...] oudon todellisena [...]” “talojen seinämillä ja kadun asfaltilla oli kummallisen hentoja varjoja [...]”

437 “Elisabet pelkäsi katsoa ympärilleen [...] jottei olisi tuntenut sydämessään kauheata iskua [...] jonka vuoksi hänen sielunmaisemansa oli niin muuttunut, että jokapäiväinen ympäristö, jossa hän tähän asti oli onnellisena liikkunut ja heijastellut sisästä itseään, oli tullut hänelle tuskalliseksi ja sisälsi joka askeleella kauheata kärsimystä – muistoja avioelämästä ja rakkaudesta [...]”

438 “[...] liian kokonaan kaunista ja hiljaista.”
Aestheticizing the City. The Internalization of a New Helsinki

focus on elements that evoke the aging world of the protagonists, their bygone values, memories, stories and objects. The city is only one of the many elements that are aestheticized through the idealizing veil through which the protagonists view their surroundings: objects, plants, furniture, as well as the built and natural spaces of Helsinki are described in painstaking detail, half-imaginary spaces in which the protagonists wilfully retreat. “And everything that used to be feels precious” – the narrative comment when Naimi hears and sees her beloved Artur for the first time in twenty years – can be considered as one of the guiding principles in this novel (Hämäläinen 1941a: 166). The undertone is that of a powerful sense of loss that is retained in the objects and landscapes surrounding the literary characters: “lost, forever lost, the golden polish of the sand beneath” (Hämäläinen 1941b: 214), as Artur’s aging mother thinks when considering how her life, which is nearing its end, has run its course.

Particular buildings, panoramas and parts of the city act as reminders of times gone by, while others are symbolic of the modern age which has in part swept past the protagonists, and in part taken them along. Töölö takes on a very special role in this novel, not only because it is the part of the city in which both protagonists live (Naimi and Tauno), but also due to its typical buildings, the style of living it represents, and its spatial planning. On the one hand, Töölö exemplifies a new and modern way of urban life (see, for example, the quote above, in which Töölö is described as a New Helsinki), while on the other hand it symbolizes bourgeois moral values, and the ideal of a particular kind of decent middle-class life with its strict moral boundaries, and the “respectability” of bourgeois marriage, despite the tragedies that are played out behind these façades.

Tauno’s and Naimi’s sense of urban space is formed according to daily walks in their immediate surroundings. In the case of Tauno, these give form to a limited geographical world, focused on the short daily walk in the little park in Topeliuksenkatu, a street situated in Töölö (Hämäläinen 1941a: 57); Naimi, on the other hand, is a more avid city walker, who exhibits a keen interest in her immediate surroundings, and who displays an intimate knowledge of the city. The walk around the Töölö Bay, in particular, constitutes one of her crucial spatial routines. Her relationship with the urban surroundings, and the way in which Naimi sees objects as referring to another time, is aptly summed up in the following passage, which describes the Karamzin Mansion, on the south-eastern edge of Töölö:

She knew it [the mansion] in all of the variety brought about by changing weather or light. When passing by, she rejoiced if the moonlight caressed its yellow walls or rested on the black roof; the building was alive to her in rain and in sunshine. It was the only

439 “[…] kaikki entinen tuntuu kallisarvoiselta.”
440 “Poissa, ainhaaksi poissa, tuo pohjahiekan kultahoko […]”
building in Helsinki which seemed to her filled with soulful shadows: she looked at it as if it were an object which the dead had left on the earth [...]; the building enclosed, untouched, a life gone by, whose events and whose thread nobody possessed any longer. It was to her the box of life, which has to be lost. (Hämäläinen 1941a: 82)\textsuperscript{441}

Naimi reads this old building as if it were “an object which the dead had left on earth”; a box for her to open, a world to rejoice in, but also something that will inevitably be lost. Naimi does not feel outright love for Helsinki – she describes Helsinki as lacking a soul, a city that seems “too barren and hard” (see above, Hämäläinen 1941a: 78)\textsuperscript{442} – but she does find meaning in the city. The detailed description of Karamzin’s mansion illustrates that her knowledge of the city is based on walks in every season, day and night, and in all weather conditions (“She knew it [the mansion] in all of the variety brought about by changing weather or light”). Naimi even occasionally acts as a guide to the city: she mentions in passing that she has shown a Romanian journalist around in the Finnish capital (ibid.: 168). Naimi Saarinen is one of the few characters in the literature of this period who combines a detached panoramic vision of the city with the kind of engaged and everyday view that is enacted on ground level, a double epistemological approach that is expressed in the following:

There were no buildings in Helsinki which she would have loved – but she loved the profiles of Helsinki, the one in which the black needle of Töölö’s church thrust its narrow spike up in the air, or the one which opened up above the playground at the end of Hesperiankatu, during a moment when the air was pregnant with blue and grey; profiles in which Helsinki showed her its face differently, and always uncovered new features. And then she loved Helsinki’s trees, the parks at Observatory Hill and Kaivopuisto were a thing apart, but she loved the poplars in Hesperia park, the larches and bird-cherries, especially the

\textsuperscript{441} “Hän tunsi sen kaikkien säiden ja valojen vaihteluissa. Mennessään oli hän iloisit, jos kuutamo hyväili sen keltaisia seinää tai lepäsi mustalla katolla; se eli hännelle sateessa ja aurinkopaisteessa. Se oli Helsingin ainoa rakennus, joka täyttyi hännelle lihattomilla varjoilla; hän katseli sitä kuin esiintiä, jonka vainajat olivat jättäneet maan päälle [...]; se rakennus sulki koskemattomana menneen, elämän, jonka tapahtumia, jonka nauhaa ei enää kukaan omistanut. Se oli hännelle elämän lipas, joka on kadotettava.”

Aurora Karamzin (1808–1902) was one of the most famous women of nineteenth-century Helsinki, and a celebrated philanthropist. The Karamzin Mansion, better known as Hakasalmi Villa (Hakasalmen huvila), is today one of the localities of the Helsinki city museum.

\textsuperscript{442} “Helsinki, joka hänen mielestäään muuten tuntui sieluttomalta, ikään kuin liian paljaalta ja kovalta [...].”

\textsuperscript{441} “Hän tunsii sen kaikkien säiden ja valojen vaihteluissa. Mennessään oli hän iloisit, jos kuutamo hyväili sen keltaisia seinää tai lepäsi mustalla katolla; se eli hännelle sateessa ja aurinkopaisteessa. Se oli Helsingin ainoa rakennus, joka täyttyi hännelle lihattomilla varjoilla; hän katseli sitä kuin esiintiä, jonka vainajat olivat jättäneet maan päälle [...]; se rakennus sulki koskemattomana menneen, elämän, jonka tapahtumia, jonka nauhaa ei enää kukaan omistanut. Se oli hännelle elämän lipas, joka on kadotettava.”

Aurora Karamzin (1808–1902) was one of the most famous women of nineteenth-century Helsinki, and a celebrated philanthropist. The Karamzin Mansion, better known as Hakasalmi Villa (Hakasalmen huvila), is today one of the localities of the Helsinki city museum.

\textsuperscript{442} “Helsinki, joka hänen mielestäään muuten tuntui sieluttomalta, ikään kuin liian paljaalta ja kovalta [...].”
one which was close to that only soulful building, the Karamzin Mansion. (Hämäläinen 1941a: 81)

Although the narrator states that there are “no buildings in Helsinki which she would have loved”, the experience of Helsinki’s built environment is not lacking in positive emotions, as the mention of the Karamzin Mansion makes clear. It is not so much buildings with which Naimi experiences a strong bond, however: she does love what she calls the “profiles” of Helsinki, and what are in effect mini-panoramas in which she sees the ever-changing face of Helsinki. Naimi returns repeatedly to this idea of Helsinki as a face that shows different profiles she feels strongly attached to; and these again are mostly related to Töölö. Immediately preceding the passage above, she describes several Helsinki profiles in detail (ibid.: 80–81), and a reference to one of her favourite profiles across the Töölö Bay is made again later in the novel (ibid.: 145).

6.4.1 HELSINKI AS URBAN PASTORAL

One of the most striking features of the experience of the city in Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä is the strong attachment to particular, often individualized natural elements in the city, a literary experience of the city that can be described as “urban pastoral”. The term “urban pastoral” has been used to describe a variety of approaches to the city in literature, referring, *inter alia*, to Wordsworth’s poetry (Steinman 2012), to a movement of New York poetry (Gray 2010), and to the experience of London in Virginia Woolf’s *Mrs. Dalloway* (Alter 2005: 103–121). Here, my use of the term urban pastoral closely resembles Robert Alter’s use of the term in his reading of *Mrs. Dalloway* (1925), in which he notes that instances of urban pastoral appear when the “urban experience, seen quite vividly in its abundant particularities, can provide the sense of invigoration, harmony with one’s surroundings, and enraptured aesthetic revelation that is traditionally associated with the green world of pastoral” (Alter 2005: 105). In the context of Helsinki novels, urban pastoral provides a useful concept for describing the particular kind of experience of the city to which a sense of natural cyclicality is restored. In texts drawing on realism and naturalism, nature and the city had become separated from each other, and it was in part in this

---

443 “Helsingissä ei ollut rakennuksia, joita hän olisi rakastanut – mutta hän rakasti sen profiileja, sitä, jossa Töölön kirkon musta neula piti ohuen pikkinsä ilmaan, tai sitä, joka aukeni mustaksen päältä, hetkenä, jolloin ilma tihti sään ja hämärää, profiileja, joissa Helsinki näytti hänen kasvonsa erilaisina ja paljasti niitä aina uusia. Ja sitten hän rakasti Helsingin puita – Tähtitorninmäki ja Kaivopuisto olivat asia erikseen, mutta hän rakasti Hesperian puiston poppeleita, lehtikuusia ja tuomia, erityisesti sitä, joka oli likellä tuota ainoaa henkevää rakennusta, Karamsinin huvilaa.”
violent separation that the sense of alienation experienced by turn-of-the-century characters in the industrialized city was rooted. Disconnected from more traditional cyclical processes, characters were forced to surrender to a linear movement of progress, which in individual cases tended to entail an entropic and downward trajectory.

In a novel such as Mika Waltari’s *Suuri illusioni* (1928), the aestheticizing experience of the city substitutes a new mode of temporality for the lost natural cyclical. As Bart Keunen points out, in self-referential urban texts, space “often loses its ‘natural’ and cyclical character [...] to make way for an internal cyclicality of the recurrent and repeatable psychic processes of observing and remembering” (Keunen 2001: 428). In *Suuri illusioni*, a single moment of observation opens up a whole number of temporal dimensions, past and present, without, however, restoring the lost sense of attachment to natural cycles. As the urban experience in *Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä* illustrates, however, an aestheticizing approach to the city could also restore the kind of intimate relationship with one’s surroundings typical of the pastoral.

In the glimpses of urban pastoral visible in *Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä* and a few other Finnish prose texts in this period, the retreat, on the part of the protagonist, from the exigencies of the linear time of modernity is commensurate with a strong attachment to the cyclical, pastoral elements in the city. For most of the characters in *Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä*, the predominant sense of time is one detached from the modern, accelerating space of the “New Helsinki” in which they live. The repeated reference to clock towers in Hämäläinen’s novel is an explicit reminder of the temporal difference between Naimi’s experience of time and the modern city’s time: Naimi, who visualizes herself as a kind of “bell tower” (Hämäläinen 1941a: 78–87), tries to keep a bygone time from receding beyond memory, while simultaneously, “in the clocks of the railway station and the Main Church, time was adrift” (Hämäläinen 1941a: 140). Similarly, for Tauno’s wife Elisabet, who has become aware of her husband’s infidelity, time is a dangerous element, and as she ponders their disintegrating lives, time in the city moves on relentlessly: “outside, the heavy soft thumping of cars’ rubber tires on the street, and the shrieking of brakes could be heard – the twentieth century was speeding forward, walking, making wheels crackle” (ibid.: 229). All characters, Naimi and Tauno, as well as Artur and Elisabet and Artur’s mother, live mummified lives in which they try to keep time from flowing. But if they aim to be detached from the temporalities set by the industrializing and modernizing city, these characters, and Naimi, in particular, have found ways to attach themselves to another kind of cyclicality: that of nature within the city. Through her intimate knowledge of

---

444 “[…] aseman ja Suurkirkon kellossa vaelsi aika […]”
445 “[…] kadulla kuului autojen raskaiden pehmeiden kumipyörien massahtelu katuuun ja jarrujen vinkuna – kahdeskymmenes vuosisata kiitä eteenpään, käveli, ratisutti pyöriä […]”
the natural components of the city – specific trees, parks – Naimi’s experience of the city restores a measure of attachment to nature’s cyclical processes that seems to have been irretrievably lost in the modern city. Henri Lefebvre suggests that city gardens and parks essentially function as “a utopia of nature [...] against which urban reality can situate and perceive itself” (Lefebvre 2003: 26; see also Steele 2012: 182), and nature and city can be and often have been understood as radical opposites. However, as Richard Lehan points out, the city is also, paradoxically, “the place where man and nature meet” (Lehan 1998: 13), and, as all city dwellers know, intimacy with the city is not only expressed in knowledge of its built environment, but also in a familiarity with its physical features and natural elements.

In Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä, the main characters are not at odds with the urban environment in which they live, in part because they connect with the cyclical, natural time underneath the city’s asphalt and stone. To Naimi and Tauno, trees and parks are not anonymous or interchangeable; they become individualized and are linked to their own personal life stories. A particular group of birch trees in a small Helsinki park in Topeliuksenkatu constitutes a favourite place, a kind of “landscape of the soul” for Tauno, who compares it with a landscape by the symbolist Finnish painter Hugo Simberg (Hämäläinen 1941a: 64). When Naimi walks along the Töölö Bay, her dignified steps take her along a road with “a large, familiar poplar”, whose “luminous form of its top and yellow light-green stem were well-known to her from many morning and evening walks” (ibid.: 80–81). When she walks to Observatory Hill, the trees in the park are not just trees, but described with precision as “birch trees and maples” (ibid.: 146).

The intimate and detailed knowledge literary characters have of their city environments, often in relation to the natural environment (flowers, trees, parks) is one of the many urban topoi (in addition to flânerie, and a strong sense of attachment to the city) that were pioneered in Helsinki literature by Toivo Tarvas, and subsequently taken up by authors such as Iris Uurto, to reach a climax in Helvi Hämäläinen’s Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä. In Toivo Tarvas’s 1916 novel Kohtalon tuulissa, the protagonist Albert and his daughter walk through an enchanting summery Helsinki, and the various parks, with their abundance of flowers and specific smells are described in rich detail: the chestnut trees in the yard of the University Library, amongst others, and the lilac bushes of Kaivopuisto (Tarvas 1916b: 314–316). The narrator compares the view with that of the gardens of countryside vicarages – one of the central pastoral environments in Finnish literature (see Schildt 1912), to which the Finnish capital is favourably compared here. When, in Tarvas’s story “Lumottu” (“Enchanted”; see section 5.5.), the protagonist

---

446 “[…] jotakin sielunmaisemaa […]”

447 “[…] tutun suuren poppelin […]”; “Töölölahden rannalla kasvavan poppelin valoisan latvan muoto ja keltaisen vaaleanvihreä runko oli hänenelle monielta kävelyiltä aamuisin ja iltaisin tuttu.”

448 “[…] Tähtitornin koivuja ja vaahteroita […]”
Niilo takes a long walk through Helsinki at night to say goodbye to all the places he loves, special mention is given to the birch tree in the yard of his former school (Tarvas 1919: 90–92).

Even trees and natural elements that are no longer physically present can add meaning to the spatial experiences of literary characters, such as in a short story by Elvi Sinervo, in which a working-class woman goes for a walk with her daughter to the centre of the city and shows her the place where they used to live, and where there once stood a large mountain ash; the daughter tells her that she still remembers the tree and its suffocating smell in the summer (Sinervo 1937: 168). Depictions of the attachment to urban nature from the perspective of working-class characters, such as those found in Sinervo’s collection of short stories Runo Söörnäistä (“Poem about Sörnäinen”; 1937) tend to function as counter-currents to an otherwise alienating experience of the city: through a personally known natural element, the city becomes a personally lived and experienced place regardless of its dystopian characteristics.

In the Helsinki prose of Iris Uurto, the aestheticized attitude towards the city and the strong sense of emotional attachment exhibited by the protagonists is similarly visible in the description of trees. In Ruumiin ikävä (“The Longing of the Body”; 1930/1931), the enumeration of disparate elements rendering the feeling of a beautiful spring evening in Helsinki is completed with the mention of a “girl and a boy beneath the first linden tree of Bulevardi” (Uurto 1930/1931: 241). Trees in the novel are described as acting like human beings, “stretching their bodies, opening their eyes” and seeking each other’s intimacy (ibid.: 348). In Uurto’s subsequent Helsinki novel Kypsyminen (“Maturing”; 1935), there is a long description of a particular tree well-known to the protagonist Lauri; He knew the large bird-cherry, which was leaning over the street and the passers-by; in the spring it would take pleasure in silently dangling its fruit clusters while trams and cars were speeding past and its strong smell wafted through their open windows. Now the surface of the bird-

449 Such examples of urban pastoral, in which the natural environment (trees, flowers, parks) gives an added dimension to a distinctive urban experience, must be separated from the kind of natural environments to which urbanites retreat when turning their back on the city. Such environments include, in the case of Helsinki, the islands in front of the capital, and the forested fringes of the city. In literature depicting working-class everyday life, idyllic natural environments feature frequently as this kind of spatial retreat radically set apart from grey urban reality, for example, in Sinervo’s short story “Sunnuntai” (“Sunday”) in the collection Runo Söörnäistä (1937). The forest environment close to the railway running northwards from the Helsinki Central Railway Station, which offers a refuge for the protagonists in “Sunnuntai”, also features in remarkably similar terms in Uurto’s novel Kypsyminen (“Maturing”; 1935: 94).

450 “Tyttö ja poika Bulevardin ensimmäisen lehmuksen juurella.”

451 “[…] puut venähyttelevät vartaloaan, raottavat silmiään […]”
cherry was black, it looked barren; Lauri noticed how it was desperately swinging its stiff branches in the wind. (Uurto 1935: 139)

The emotions Lauri attaches to the tree are symptomatic of his own inner misery (“black”, “barren”, “desperate”), and the way in which the individualized tree reflects the literary character’s inner feelings is entirely similar to comparable instances in the same novel and in contemporary texts (see above, 6.1.), in which the urban environment resonates with the protagonist’s mood. The intimate attachment to the city in such scenes is one of the more striking urban experiences in Helsinki novels of this period, and also one of the least recognized. It is a sense of attachment that does not make characters immune to dystopian or pessimistic experiences of the city, but that is nevertheless symptomatic of the more involved relationship with the city experienced by natives to Helsinki in this period, and that seems to be out of reach to the newcomers that had dominated prose texts from the turn of the century.

6.4.2 CONCLUSION

In Finnish literature of the 1920s and 1930s, a “New Helsinki” is celebrated, evoking new architectural forms and new modes of living, but also new experiences of the urban environment. What is most striking in many of the Helsinki novels that appeared in the late 1920s and 1930s is the new stylistic and thematic paradigm in which these experiences of the modern city are couched. Mika Waltari’s *Suuri illusioni* is in many respects prototypical: set for the most part in Töölö, reverberating with distant and ancient city images, it is also a novel that describes characters’ emotions through impressions of their spatial surroundings. It evokes a modern urban world by way of a fragmentary sentence structure and metaphors drawn from the urban and modern realm. The innovative formal features with which the city is rendered aim to evoke the experience of modernity, which is typically characterized by the “transient and ‘fugitive’ nature of encounters and impressions made in the city” (Wolff 1985: 38). In Waltari’s debut novel, Helsinki is experienced as a constantly shifting palimpsestic text consisting of both real and imagined layers, and symptomatic of a conscious aestheticizing and internalizing approaches to the city. The result is a fragmentary and kaleidoscopic mindscape, in which the literary characters’

452 “Hän tunsi suuren tuomen, joka kumartuu pitkälle yli kadun ja kävelevien ihmisten, keväisin se hiljaisesti hekumoiden riiputti terttujaan raitiovaunujen ja autojen kiitäessä ohi ja niiden avoimiin ikkunoihin lemahdi sen voimakas tuoksu. Nyt oli tuomi mustapintainen, paljas, Lauri huomasi sen epätoivoisesti huiskivan jäykkiä oksiaan tulessa.”
memories, fantasies and sensitive experiences become entangled with the city’s mythical, historical and imaginary layers of meaning.

It is worth reiterating that many of the “new” literary experiences of Helsinki in this period were initiated in the literature of the preceding decades. In Toivo Tarvas’s *Eri tasoilta* (1916a), one finds the kind of erotically charged nocturnal car drives, as well as *flâneur*-like city walks that would become more typical for 1920s and 1930s Helsinki literature. Similarly, a kind of “thrill of arrival” related to the return of the protagonist to the Finnish capital, which was typical of Helsinki novels of this period, was already present in the opening scene of Eino Leino’s 1914 novel *Pankkiherroja* (“Bank Lords”). A second observation is that the fascination with the city in Finnish prose texts in the wake of the Torch Bearer Movement is far from identical with an optimistic experience of the city. Even *Suuri illusioni* can be and has been read as a particularly gloomy reflection on the city (Liuttu 1950: 79–80; Koskela 1999b: 275), and the work of Arvi Kivimaa and Unto Karri shows both optimistic and distinctly pessimistic experiences of Helsinki (see Korsberg 2008). The experience of Helsinki continues to be one that includes both positive views, as well as near-apocalyptic views of a “degenerate city threatened by a flood of sin”, to quote one critic of Martti Merenmaa’s 1926 Helsinki novel *Nousuvesi*, a novel that shares traits with *Suuri illusioni* and *Sodoma* (“High Tide”; 1926; see Nieminen 1927: 388–389). One distinct trait of the urban experience in the Finnish literature of this period, and in Helvi Hämäläinen’s novel *Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä* in particular, is the evocation of a sense of urban pastoral. In this particular kind of aestheticizing and interiorizing experience, the protagonists are reconciled to natural cyclicality through a profound attachment to the city.
The novel *Rakastunut rampa* ("A Cripple in Love"; 1922) by Joel Lehtonen\(^{453}\) begins with the description of a disconcerting view, bordering on the grotesque. On a road at the outskirts of the Finnish capital, an animal-like being is slowly progressing:

A strange being is walking along the road. Walking... or rather, moving. Leaping on all fours... He is like a dog or a hare.

The road, lined by sombre fir trees, is receding into Autumnal fog, so that from afar, it is not possible to see him clearly. The only thing you can see is that it is some kind of being... a being that is hopping clumsily. (Lehtonen 1922/2006: 3)\(^ {454}\)

Seen from a distant vantage point, the narrator describes the appearance of the novel's eponymous protagonist: the poor and crippled Bolshevik Sakris Kukkelman, whose romantic love and Nietzsche-inspired high-minded ideas of self-fulfilment are doomed to tragically fail. Written only a few years after the end of the Finnish Civil War, the image of the deformed Bolshevik, cumbersomely but stubbornly making his way forward, must have struck some readers as distinctly *unheimlich* – a reminder of something repressed which reappears out of a strangely familiar landscape. But as Irma Perttula points out, the novel is not only about a rupture in describing the common people – a thematic that Lehtonen addresses repeatedly in his works – but also about a "new kind of aesthetics" (Perttula 2010: 104). Irma Perttula, in her study of the grotesque in Finnish literature, has given an extensive analysis of the figure of Sakris Kukkelman as an example of the "subjective

---

\(^{453}\) Joel Lehtonen's (1881–1934) oeuvre started out in the early twentieth century within a symbolist frame of reference (also referred to as neo-romanticist; see Schoolfield 1998: 133), but his work written in the 1920s and 1930s is much harder to categorize. Most famous for *Putkinotko* ("Putkinotko"; 1919–1920), a novel that firmly belongs to the Finnish canon, and which is set in the countryside, he has also written travel stories and he was a prolific translator. Perhaps more than any other Finnish author in the inter-war period, Lehtonen was oriented towards a carnivalesque and profoundly pan-European literary tradition.

\(^{454}\) "Tietä pitkin kulkee omituinen olento. Kulkee... tai paremminkin liikkuu. Loikkii nelinkontin... Hän on niinkuin koira tai jänis.

Synkkään kuusien reunustama tie hukkuu syksyiseen sumuun, niin ettei häntä kauempaa tarkasti eroita. Huomaa ainoastaan, että jokin olento se on ... olento, joka hyppii kömpelösti."
“grotesque” (Perttula 2010), and other studies, too, have tended to concentrate on the novel’s main character (see, for example, Hellaakoski 1950; Hannula 1998; Turunen 2006; Perttula 2006). As contemporary critics noticed, this novel not only introduced a new kind of character to Finnish literature, but also a new kind of environment: the suburbs of the Finnish capital (Hellaakoski 1922/2006: 240). From the perspective of the experience of urban space, two elements in the description in the opening scene of Rakastunut rampa are of particular interest: the corresponding manner in which the unattractive physical features of both landscape and protagonist are described, and the cumbersome manner of the movement of the protagonist through the fringes of the city. Both are indicative of a new aesthetics in relation to descriptions of urban experiences – an aesthetics rooted in the grotesque, and profoundly determined by questions of class, but also bearing reflections on the moral state of society in this period.

This chapter will focus on experiences of Helsinki in the urban margins. The first part of this chapter will present an analysis of the dystopian landscape of Krokelby, an imaginary environment which was introduced by Joel Lehtonen in Rakastunut rampa and further developed in Henkien taistelu (“The Battle of the Spirits”; 1933), which would remain Lehtonen’s final novel. With this imaginary environment, Joel Lehtonen has constructed a locality that is at once one of the most disturbing and one of the most original landscapes to be found in Finnish literature of the last century: a deformed landscape, made up of a disconcerting natural environment and crooked houses, and intertwined with the grotesque characters living there. One of the most interesting features of this imagined landscape, in particular in Joel Lehtonen’s final novel, is that it appears as a spatial environment with universalist dimensions: an imago mundi, representative of all of Helsinki, and by extension, of society at large.

I will first analyse the description of physical features of the suburban landscape and its built environment. This will be followed by an analysis of how the movement of characters through this landscape is repeatedly described as severely hampered. In literature of this period, not only are the peripheral urban landscape and the characters moving through it described in pessimistic terms – also the characters’ movement through the landscape is repeatedly depicted as distorted and impeded. A subsequent section will examine one of the most striking new developments in how the experience of urban space is pictured in Finnish literature: the symbolic emptying of the centre and the appearance of the city as a centrifugal space, as urban representations begin to flee the centre. The analysis of Krokelby will be supplemented with images of the urban margins from other relevant novels of the same period, amongst others Helvi Hämäläinen’s Katuojan vettä (“Water in the Gutter”; 1935), Elvi Sinervo’s collection of short stories Runo Söörnäisistä (“Poem about Sörnäinen”; 1937), as well as Ruumiin ikävää and Kypsyminen by Iris Uurto (“The Longing of the Body”; 1930/1931; “Maturing”; 1935).
Towards the Margins. Cumbersome Movement through the Urban Fringes

7.1 KROKELBY IN JOEL LEHTONEN’S RAKASTUNUT RAMPA (1922)

In Rakastunut rampa, the novel with which Joel Lehtonen introduces the imaginary suburb of Krokelby, all the central characteristics of Krokelby that will be further developed in Henkien taistelu can already be found. The reader receives a fairly good idea of Krokelby’s outward appearance, but also of where this suburban village is situated in relation to the Finnish capital: Krokelby lies to the north-east of Helsinki, near the mouth of the river Vantaa and the Vanhakaupunki area. Although Krokelby can be related to existing neighbourhoods, it is by definition a fictional area, and as a consequence, it can be considered as the everyman amongst the Helsinki suburbs: the imaginary and prototypical model through which all separate marginal areas of the Finnish capital are measured.

Like Sakris Kukkelmann, the eponymous “Cripple in Love” who inhabits the suburban margins of the Finnish capital, Krokelby is described as a deformed amalgam of heterogeneous and contradictory elements. The most fundamental characteristic of the suburban landscape in Rakastunut rampa is that of deformity; of being unnatural, diseased, crooked, and crippled. The link between Krokelby and deformity is a semantic one to begin with: the name of this imaginary environment is made up of the suffix -by, a common Swedish suffix in toponyms, which today has the meaning “village”, added to the root Krokel. Krokel resembles the Swedish word krokig, meaning “bent”, “crooked”, “hooked”. The Swedish word krokryggig means “hunchbacked” and this relates the name to the literary character described in terms of near-symbiosis with his environment: Sakris Kukkelmann.

In Rakastunut rampa, deformity is described first of all in relation to the eponymous cripple, but also in the way the built environment is rendered in

455 The Vanhakaupunki or “Old Town” area is the location of the original Helsinki settlement of 1640 (see section 1.6.). Krokelby has been identified on various grounds with a number of existing Helsinki suburbs, notably with Oulunkylä, Kumpula and the western Helsinki area of Haaga-Huopalahti (see Laurila 1967: 105; Pulkkinen 2004; Kallinen 2011; Tarkka 2012: 208–209; see, however, Hellaakoski 1950: 96). The desire to locate Krokelby on the map is in part rooted in a wish to read Lehtonen’s own life into his writings: the author had moved to Haaga/Huopalahti, a community at the western fringes of Helsinki in the 1910s, and continued spending time there until his death. Although both Rakastunut rampa and Henkien taistelu unequivocally place Krokelby at the eastern fringes of the Helsinki peninsula, several critics have identified Krokelby with Huopalahti (Ahokas 1973: 200; Palmgren 1989: 103). Ironically, over the past few years, different parts of the Finnish capital have claimed a stake on the dubious legacy of Krokelby: both Oulunkylä and Kumpula, two districts in eastern Helsinki, claim they are depicted in literature as Krokelby (see Pulkkinen 2004; Kallinen 2011).

456 The same suffix is, of course, visible in English toponyms with Nordic roots.

457 The Swedish krok, from which krokig is derived, means “hook”. It has also been argued that Krokelby is derived from the Swedish avkrok, which means “remote district” (Niklander 2003: 14).
the narration. The buildings of Krokelby are portrayed as unsuccessful stylistic mishmashes that aim to represent social codes they are unable to fulfil. The deformity of the buildings is explicitly linked to the upward social drive of the parvenu inhabitants, and indicative of the unrealistic expectations lying behind this drive. The following extract is representative of many of the descriptions of the built environment found in Rakastunut rampa:

Over there, someone had built a slender tower on top of the far end of a wooden shed: a little shelter balancing on top of four high pillars... as if it were the bell tower of a countryside mansion. But the anchoring of the pillars had been carried out badly and they were bent out of shape, and with them, so had the whole structure... (Lehtonen 1922/2006: 7–8)458

The deformed architectural structure is described as the result of the builder’s ill-warranted attempt to mimic the building style of an upper class countryside mansion – a hubristic attempt at architectural verticality doomed to fail. The same can be said of the deformity of many things in Krokelby, of its inhabitants as well as of the landscape as a whole. Misshapen by their desire to rise socially, the characters and the environment they inhabit have turned into caricatures of both themselves and their professed examples. Significantly, like so many characters in Finnish literature from the 1910s on, Sakris is occasionally employed as a construction worker, and he is, in other words, actively involved in shaping the built environment.459

The natural landscape, too, is described in terms of deformity. From the opening lines of the novel, the protagonist and his surroundings are described in unison: in this gloomy environment, enveloped in “autumnal fog”, with a path lined by “sombre fir trees” (see above), the approaching cripple seems markedly at home. The natural landscape is repeatedly described in despondent terms and in relation to descriptions of adverse climatic conditions (rain, fog, dirty smoke), and even a pine tree is described as “twisted and trimmed at the top” (Lehtonen 1922/2006: 47; see Perttula 2010: 104).460 The landscape is also capable, however, of reflecting positive change in the protagonist’s luck. When Sakris Kukkelman reaches the heights

458 “Tuossa on hoikka torni rakennettu ylhäälle mökin päätyyn: pikku katos neljän korkean pylvään varaan... ikäänuin maalaiskartanoitten ruokakellotapuli. Mutta pylväitten kiinnitys on ollut huono, ne ovat kallistuneet vinoon, ja niiden keraalla koko kattolaitos...”

459 Protagonists working in building construction can be found, amongst others, in Toivo Tarvas’s short story collection Häviövä Helsingi ("Disappearing Helsinki"; 1917), Helvi Hämäläinen’s Katuojan vetä ("Water in the Gutter"; 1935), and in Mika Waltari’s Mies ja haave ("A Man and his Dream"; 1933), amongst others.

460 “[...] vääriä ja latvasta typistetty [...]”
of happiness, after his beloved Nelma has moved in with him, the landscape, too, is transformed: “Everything is [...] hazy like in a dream... similar to the air, too, which now covers the world” (Lehtonen 1922/2006: 145). Smoke from far-away forest fires in Russia covers the land and the sea, giving the whole surroundings an unreal quality (ibid.). Later in the novel, when Nelma has left Krokelby for good, leaving a desperate Kukkelman to fend for himself, the landscape changes again into a depressing and brooding environment. Fog rises from the sea and the waves of the river Vantaa are described as “cold and murky”; autumn comes, “[t]he world darkens... And it rains” (ibid.: 217–218). The mist that covers the land “sucks the last warmth from the land... and freezes the remaining plants [...]”; the fields smell of decaying plants, and a mist comes that “cuts through bones and marrows” (ibid.: 218). As the cold fog, the darkness and the rain drive out the last bit of warmth from the landscape, Sakris’s despair deepens. Death and decay affect first the landscape, and then the protagonist – not much later, Sakris is found dead: he has committed suicide by hanging himself.

7.2  **HENKIE N TAISTELU (1933): THE MARGINS OF THE CITY AS TESTING GROUND**

*Rakastunut rampa* introduced a new kind of literary character, as well as a new kind of landscape and aesthetics, but it was still fairly modest in terms of plot, genre and the spatial scale within which the narrative was played out. The same cannot be said of Joel Lehtonen’s final novel, in which the environment introduced in *Rakastunut rampa* takes on further universalist meaning as a testing ground of modern society. A novel set at the height of the Prohibition (see section 1.6.), *Henkien taistelu* recounts the story of the pious Kleophas Leantéri Sampila, who is lured to the suburban fringes of the

---

461 “Kaikki on [...] sellaista hämärää kuin uni... samanlaista kuin ilmakin, joka nyt peittää maailmaa.”

462 The smoke from Russian forest fires covering the city is also described in some detail in Helvi Hämäläinen’s *Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä* (“A Respectable Tragedy”; 1941; see section 6.5.), in which the resulting eerie atmosphere has a profound effect on the protagonist Naimi (Hämäläinen 1941a: 79).

463 “Kylmänä ja sameana [...]”; “Maailma pimeee... Ja sataa.”

464 “Usva [...] imee maata... imee siltä viimeisen lämmön... paleluttaa loputkin kasvit.” “[...] usva, joka viiltää läpi luiden ja ytimien.”

465 Not all contemporary critics were enthusiastic about *Henkien taistelu*. V.A. Koskenniemi derided the novel as “light reading”, “too superficially innocent to be satiric”, and “too un-psychological to be humorous” (Koskenniemi 1933: 535). The negative review can hardly be considered a surprise from the kind of conservative critic Koskenniemi was. In *Henkien taistelu*, Lehtonen “shoots at everything that moves” (Turunen 2006: 30), but he takes aim, in particular, at the right-leaning and nationalist forces in society, and at some of their most precious symbols – the national-romantic Finnish landscape, amongst them.
Finnish capital to be tempted by the devil. Krokelby appears relatively late, some 100 pages into the story, when the two main characters are approaching Helsinki by train on their journey home from Paris. They are an unlikely couple to say the least. Sampila is a naive and good-humoured forester working for a forest industry company, who has taken a year’s leave from his position in order to get to know the world. His companion Victor Sorsimo is a beer factory owner who is, in fact, a devil in disguise, a corporal in the army of Barbuel, general of demons. Sorsimo, also known as “the devil in the bottle” (Lehtonen 1933: 10), has chosen as his task to bring his companion to destruction. As they approach the Finnish capital, Sorsimo persuades Sampila to come and spend some time in his home town, Krokelby.

The devil does not try to bring Kleophas to destruction in a truly large metropolis – he would have had the chance to do so in Paris, where they met, nor in a desert or god-forsaken wilderness, as tradition would have it. The environment of choice is Krokelby, and with good reason according to the devil: this is the environment that will function as the symbol of the world in all its ugly viciousness. In his discussion with Sampila, the devil argues that Krokelby will have an instructive function – suggesting overtly an optimistic and uplifting purpose: in Krokelby, too, “you can see and learn a thing or two, if you should wish to” (Lehtonen 1933: 102). The explicit purpose of the extended stay of Sampila in Krokelby, then, is to explore a particular urban landscape in order to gain a better understanding of the world in all its ramifications. The Finnish capital and its suburb Krokelby take on the form of a specific kind of metaphorization of the city, that of an imago mundi, which, in Henri Lefebvre’s words, constructs the citizens’ “representation of space as a whole, of the earth, of the world” (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 243–244).

The universalist nature of the spatial environment in Henkien taistelu is enhanced, first of all, by the fact that Krokelby is by definition an imagined space. The neighbourhood does not have any location in the physically and geographically identifiable city of Helsinki, which is one of the reasons why it has the capacity to take on such strong universalist overtones. Krokelby’s

466 “[... piru pullossa [...]”
467 “Krokelbyssäkin voi nähdä ja oppia, jos sellaista nyt tahtoo, yhtä ja toista [...].”
468 Such a symbolic vision of the city was also present in one of the many literary texts that function as an inspiration for Henkien taistelu: Alain-René Lesage’s satirical novel Le Diable Boiteux ("The Devil in the Bottle"; 1707), which in its turn is based on the text El Diablo Cojuelo ("The Devil in the Bottle"; 1641) by the Spanish author Luis Vélez de Guevara (see Klotz 1969: 22 ff.). Both works are repeatedly referred to in Lehtonen’s novel. In Lesage’s novel, the city is clearly and overtly approached as an imago mundi: when the devil in disguise is about to guide an innocent student through the Spanish capital, he claims that a tour through nightly Madrid will teach the student about “everything that happens in the world” (as quoted in Klotz 1969: 39), and as Klotz points out, if Madrid in this novel represents Paris, both function as pars pro toto for the whole world (Klotz 1969: 39–47).
universalist nature is also closely related to the novel’s generic features, which are typical of genres with clear moral dimensions, in which characters and space take on universalist proportions; genres such as the medieval mystery play, the renaissance picaresque novel, and, in particular, the Menippean satire.

Framed by such a genre, the landscape becomes quite literally a symbolic landscape, an allegorical spatial environment that functions as an “exemplum”, a moral warning one should bear in mind. This is most explicitly the case if we choose to read *Henkien taistelu* as an exponent of the Menippean satire, a satirical genre that flourished in antiquity and that, as a quintessential protean genre, has left a considerable mark on the development of the novel (Bakhtin 1984b: 114–119; Riikonen 1985; Käkelä-Puumala 2007). As is typical of the Menippea, *Henkien taistelu* has a three-layered spatial structure featuring heaven, earth and hell. This juxtaposition of the image of the city with spheres belonging to the religio-mythological is essential for the philosophical and universalist nature of the novel, which is structured as the test of a philosophical idea (Bakhtin 1984b: 115–116). Again, as is typical of a novel belonging to the Menippea, the description of the spatial planes – like all other elements of the narration – is profoundly carnivalized (ibid.: 133), and is presented in a way that turns familiar elements inside out: it is space which, in Bakthin’s words, is “drawn out of its usual rut, ... to some extent ‘life turned inside out,’ ‘the reverse side of the world’ (‘monde à l’envers’)” (Bakhtin 1984b: 122). The satirical

469 Literary critics of Lehtonen’s novel have suggested various generic classifications; one, inspired by the novel’s subtitle, would be the roman-à-clef (Kauppinen 1966; for the real-life people behind the novel’s characters see Tarkka 2012: 420–480). More commonly, *Henkien taistelu* has been widely read as a picaresque novel, in which the protagonist’s journey through various layers of society is described in fairly detached fragments (see, for example, Turunen 1992: 111; Tunturi 2005). One of the earliest critics, Rafael Koskimies, has drawn attention to the fact that the picaresque is not much more than the generic starting point of *Henkien taistelu*, in which elements of the traditional picaresque novel are used in order to produce a satirical critique with a distinctly modern intellectual and artistic content (see Koskimies 1933/1936: 74–75).

On the link between mystery play and Menippea, see Bakhtin 1984b: 135, 146.

470 In Joel Lehtonen’s work, the innovative use of literary genres and of complex intertextual references is particularly significant. Lehtonen, a translator of amongst others the *Decameron*, Stendahl, and the brothers Goncourt (Schoolfield 1998: 134), had a far-ranging knowledge of international literature, which is visible in the staggering amount of intertextual references in *Henkien taistelu*. A profuse number of references to other texts is also a characteristic of the Menippean satire, which can be considered as an exceptionally self-conscious genre (see Bakhtin 1984b: 142; Riikonen 1985: 43). In *Henkien taistelu*, direct reference is made to one of the classical examples of the Menippean satire: Petronius’s *Satyricon*.

471 As H. Riikonen has pointed out, *Henkien taistelu* can be considered a typical example of a Menippean satire (Riikonen 2007).

472 Sakris Kukkelman in *Rakastumut rampa* can also be considered an instrument in the testing of opposite ideas (Perttula 2010: 121).
distortion of the world is described as a deliberate representational strategy at the very outset of the novel by the limping devil who guides both the protagonist and the narration in *Henkien taistelu*:

I intend to show him [the protagonist, Kleophas Leantari Sampila] what people, not without a kind of pride, call life, as if in a film visited by the scissors of the censor, only with the difference that I shall cut out the harmless parts, the quiet, nice people, and shall direct a blinding light from the projector on the corrupt sides of the average citizens and even the exemplary ones. I shall represent it all, intentionally, as largely disconnected episodes; the result, I hope, will be confused and imprecise, like the time in which the world is now living. (Lehtonen 1933: 22)473

The devil, in his prologue, states that the very manner of his representation will be distorted and fragmentary, and he stresses that he will describe people in a satirical light. The novel’s subtitle, too (“A Story about Our Famous Citizens”), draws the reader’s attention to the character description. But the devil’s words can be equally applied to the carnivalesque description of the spatial surroundings in *Henkien taistelu*, whose “confused and imprecise” description is representative of the contemporary world in turmoil. The fragmentary description promised by the crippled devil is visible on a variety of levels. These include the narrative structure of the novel, which is constructed, as promised, as “largely disconnecting episodes”, as well as the individual sentences, which are occasionally fragmented and in which even the conventions of punctuation are carnivalized.474 Not only are the landscape, characters and their movement described in this novel as deformed: the narration itself becomes infected.475

473 The translation is by Jaakko Ahokas (1973: 201–202), but here slightly modified (“censor” instead of the original “censure”).

“Tarkoitukseni on näytellä hänelle sitä, jota ihmiset eräällä tavalla ylpeillen sanovat elämäksi, ikääntuvaan fiilissä, jossa sensuurin sakset ovat käyneet, se vain erona, että minä leikkaan pois vaarattomat kohdat, hiljaiset, siivot ihmiset, ja sinkautan heijastimesta räikeän valon keskolaisten ja mallikelpoistenkin viallisinä puoliin, – esitän kaiken harkitusti episodeina, joilla ei ole liioin yhteyttä; tuloksesta toivon hajanaista, ääriiviivotonta niinkuin aika, jota maapallo nykyään elää [...]”

474 One particularly interesting example takes place at a gathering in a café with leading members of the extreme-right Lapua movement. The atmosphere is described using a collage-like technique, and the conversation is rendered staccato and in a fragmentary style. The syncopated style is immediately commented upon by the narrator, who notes that “no commas were used in the speech” (Lehtonen 1933: 565).

475 Pirjo Lyytikäinen, drawing on Paul Bourget’s thoughts on decadence (1883), argues that the stylistic innovations of 1920s and 1930s international modernism “consistently realized the ‘decadent style’ linked to the degeneration of organisms in the sense which Bourget had had in mind: a style, in which individual paragraphs, sentences and words captured the attention at the expense of the
Similar to the descriptions of the built environment found in *Rakastunut rampa*, deformity is first of all given shape by way of the distorted characteristics of buildings inhabited by parvenus and indicative of the unsuccessful desire to emulate the style of the more privileged social classes. The wooden villas and sheds that constitute the village of Krokelby are described as imitations of imitations, unsuccessful adaptations of foreign building styles which bring to mind comical objects (Lehtonen 1933: 115–118). Some buildings are described using the same similes – a Kirgizian tent and a helmet, for example – that can be found in *Rakastunut rampa* (Lehtonen 1922/2006: 143; Lehtonen 1933: 117). The built environment is portrayed as profoundly inauthentic, and various examples are given of how it displays ill-fitting influences, and of the ridiculous image which is the result. One villa, for example, is described as the imitation of a German medieval castle, with a tower that looks like a German soldier’s helmet; the Gothic devils incorporated in another villa are, for their part, copies from the Assyrian-inspired statues at the Helsinki Railway Station (Lehtonen 1933: 117). The buildings are explicitly described as unsuccessful attempts at imitating the dwellings of the higher social strata: their style is compared to that of “a farmer who in matters of beauty typically mimics the lords” (ibid.: 118).\footnote{“[…] kuten talonpoika kauneusasioissa yleensä matkii herroja.”} The built environment appears literally as a mirror of the preposterous aspirations of their inhabitants, as in the case of a house which resembles a Kirgizian yurt, but with a roof of galvanized sheet metal, of which the proud owner – one of the many bootleggers residing in Krokelby – boasts that “it shines, so that I can see my own image in it” (ibid.: 117).\footnote{“Se kiiltää, jotta voin nähdä siitä kuvani […]”} Another roof, too, reflects the owner, but in a different way: the roof is of gilded sheet metal, because the owner is a tinsmith (ibid.).

The buildings in which many of the characters at Krokelby live can thus be seen as complex spatial metaphors for their inhabitants: presumptuous, preposterous, misshapen and haphazardly constructed buildings the aim of which is to give the impression of a higher social status. As a whole, the cityscape of Krokelby is symptomatic not only of the mentally and physically crippled characters appearing in the novel but of the society at large in which it is set. This is a world in which the parvenus from L. Onerva’s 1911’s collection of short stories *Nousukkaita* (“Parvenus”) have risen to become the leading members of society. In *Nousukkaita*, repeated reference is made to the distorted characteristics of inhabitants of working-class areas; when one of the characters in this collection of short stories, Pentti Korjus, leaves the centre of Helsinki, he is greeted by a procession of “countless similar-looking, tired, overburdened and exhausted people”; “ugly, emaciated human totality.” This fragmentation of the narration, as Lyytikäinen points out, is one “symptom of the crisis of expression […] which is one form of the modern crisis experience – part of the modern apocalypse” (Lyytikäinen 1999: 214).
beings”, “pitiable and shrivelled couples” (Onerva 1911: 30–31). Pentti himself, the parvenu protagonist of this story, experiences a moral and social descent, which is concretized in his gradual physical deformation. In Onerva’s text, the degenerating in-between people who had only recently moved to the capital are depicted as the victims of a rapidly modernizing society. In Lehtonen’s world, misshapenness – moral as well as physical – has become the standard: Krokelby is inhabited by degenerate former prostitutes, liquor runners, speculators, as well as working-class people on their way up on the social ladder, and members of the old bourgeoisie on their way down. Degradation and entropy have run their course, but to the dismay of the protagonist, Kleophas Sampila, he seems to be the only one disturbed by the resulting grotesque spectacle.

7.2.1 A DEFORMED LANDSCAPE

Krokelby can be characterized by the deformity of individual inhabitants and buildings, but on a larger scale it appears as a deformed version of the city itself, as is apparent from the long soliloquy with which the devil-in-the-bottle introduces Krokelby (Lehtonen 1933: 114–118); some extracts from this speech have been quoted above. Using a highly oxymoronic style, juxtaposing high and low, typical of satirical genres and the Menippean satire in particular (Bakhtin 1984b: 118), Sorsimo extols Krokelby, in the meantime, drawing Sampila’s attention to the environment’s flaws. Krokelby is described as an organically grown village, showing similarities to the aesthetic ideal of a naturally developed medieval town – its centre is compared to that of picturesque Siena, but the totality is simultaneously described as a jumble of ill-designed buildings (Lehtonen 1933: 115).479 In another sense, too, Krokelby is described as an organically grown entity: the very first thing the devil tells Sampila is that it resembles a disease-like extension to the body of Helsinki: it is a “village, which like a bump, has grown onto the side of Helsinki” (ibid.: 102).480 Images of the grotesque tend to be related to transgressions of the boundaries of the body, and to what protrudes from the body (Perttula 2010: 108), and the image of a cancer-like extension of the city reads the suburb as a grotesque deformity of the normal urban fabric. It is an image which draws on the traditional imagery of the city-as-body – one of the most potent metaphors with which the city can be

---

478 “[…] lukemattomia samanlaisia väsyneitä, loppuun rääkättyjä ihmisiä […]”; “[…] rumia, kuihtuneita ihmis-olioita […]”; “[…] säälittäviä, näivettyneitä pariskuntia […]”.

479 Other Italian cities, too, provide reference points for the urban space in the novel: the new student house in Helsinki is compared to the leaning tower of Pisa (Lehtonen 1933: 550). Lehtonen had traveled extensively in Italy, and had published a collection of short stories based on his travels (see Ahokas 1997: 193).

480 “Se ikäänuin pattina Helsingin kylkeen kasvanut kylä […].”
conceptualized, and a descriptive strategy which, according to Lefebvre, is made use of in particular when the city and its representatives feel threatened (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 274; see Grosz 1992; see also section 2.2.). This metaphor of the body is used in a sense that equates the city with the body politic, attributing perceived diseases in society to the ailing body of the city.\footnote{The image of the city as a diseased body, as a “wen” or “excrescence”, has a long tradition in relation to London in particular (Williams 1973: 146). See also section 2.2.}

Raymond Williams has pointed out that the consequence of this image is a broader vision of society as rotten: if the city “was seen as monstrous, or as a diseased growth, this had logically to be traced back to the whole social order” (Williams 1974: 146).\footnote{In his earlier prose, too, starting from the travel story collection Punainen mylly (“Moulin Rouge”; 1913), Lehtonen tended to describe characters as well as landscapes as twisted and contorted, as a means to describe moral ills: in the grotesque description, “outward deformity concretizes inner degradation”, as Irma Perttula writes in relation to character description in Punainen mylly (Perttula 2010: 100–101).}

Henkien taistelu is indeed an analysis of a disease of the societal body, a “medical case history”, as one critic calls it: a “merciless analysis of the disintegration and degeneration in a societal body infected by disease” (Ekelund 1937: 379). Lehtonen is one of the first authors to apply such thinking to the literary image of Helsinki and its suburbs, and in Henkien taistelu, the vision of the expanding suburban environment as a deformed, unhealthy, crippled landscape takes on stronger overtones as the novel proceeds.\footnote{Henkien taistelu can be (and has been) read as a political satire, up to the point where the “spirits” in the title are defined as communism and fascism. This would, however, provide a profoundly reductionist reading of the novel. The spiritual battle might as well refer to the moral or philosophical testing of ideas; to the apocalypse that at times seems imminent in this novel; or to the “battle of the spirits” (the liquor-related trade and crime) during the Finnish Prohibition. Like the monstrously deformed landscape it conjures up before the reader, the fragmentary and protean text of Henkien taistelu ultimately defeats a comprehensive interpretation.}

Krokelby is seen as a deformation of the city, but it equally appears, if not more so, as a deformation of the natural environment. Krokelby is juxtaposed negatively, in particular, to traditional Finnish national-romantic natural elements, such as the forest, the swamp, and the lake. In Rakastunut rampa and, much more elaborately, in Henkien taistelu, Krokelby appears as a profoundly carnivalized version of traditional Finnish natural environments and natural-romantic symbolic landscapes. One revealing example is the case of Punkaharju, one of the prime examples of a Finnish national-romantic landscape (see Karjalainen 1989). In Henkien taistelu, Punkaharju is the subject of an elaborate scam invented by a parvenu businessman who intends to “buy” the landscape and turn it into profit. Not surprisingly, the scam does not succeed, but it is instructive for the way in which everything – people, houses and landscapes alike – is considered as a potential commodity and a possible target for money-making. Drawing on
the thinking set out by Lefebvre in *The Production of Space*, what one finds in action here is the “mobilization of space for the purposes of its production”, and the dictum that the “entirety of space must be endowed with exchange value” and drawn into the orbit of the “commodity world” (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 336–337). Such an evolution inevitably leads to a gradual destruction of nature, precipitated by “the economic wish to impose the traits and criteria of interchangeability upon places”, with the result that places are gradually “deprived of their specificity – or even abolished” (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 343).

The distorted features of Krokelby’s landscape are signs of the moral failure of society, but they are also symptomatic of the far-reaching commodification that affects the landscape as well as its inhabitants. Krokelby is portrayed as a space distorted by the “struggle for life” (Lehtonen 1933: 266; see below), the rat race performed to the tune of money, greed and profit.484 Ironically, Sampila himself is part of the machinery that industrializes the idealized landscape of eastern Finland: he is a “forstmestari”, a forester working for an industrial company.

### 7.2.2 FROM CARNIVALESQUE TO GROTESQUE LANDSCAPE

Until well into the first part of the novel, *Henkien taistelu* and the image it gives of the urban and suburban landscape may be described in terms of the comic and the satirical. This initial comic rendering of space is bound up with the perspective in the first part of the novel, which is largely guided by and through the bottled devil. Gradually, however, focalization shifts to Sampila, and with this change in perspective, the tone of the novel becomes ever more pessimistic. The satirical perspective of the devil is gradually adopted by his victim Sampila, and as the devil’s vision of the surroundings, and, by extension, of society at large is interiorized by the protagonist, the tone shifts from the comic grotesque, which dominates the first part of the novel, towards an unsettling, terrifying mode of the grotesque. These two modes of the grotesque can be traced to the two main branches of this generic tradition: the comic grotesque has been related to Bakhtin’s account of low, carnivalistic culture (Bakhtin 1984a), while what has also been called the uncanny grotesque can be related to Wolfgang Kayser’s analysis of the concept (1957) (see Barasch 1993: 88–89; Swain 2004: 11; Perttula 2010: 27). Typical of the latter mode of the grotesque is an inward turn and the expression of a subjective world view, which is the reason Irma Perttula has

484 In this sense, the urban world we find in Lehtonen’s *Rakastumut rampa* and *Henkien taistelu* resembles to a certain extent the fringes of London in Dickens’s later novels, a “strange, eerie, primitive world” at the edges of the city, inhabited with “almost mutant outcasts” (Lehan 1998: 44); a world in which the city has turned itself and its near surroundings into a wasteland of “physical debris and human dereliction” (Lehan 1998: 41).
called this the “subjective grotesque” (Perttula 2010: 30). In *Henkien taistelu*, the vision of a grotesque landscape is gradually internalized and expressed from the perspective of the protagonist Sampila, which entails a shift towards the “subjective” grotesque. This shift is most clearly visible in two panoramic visions of Krokelby (see below), the first, which appears early in the novel, focalized by the devil (Lehtonen 1933: 117 ff.), the second, which appears much later, focalized by Sampila (ibid.: 558 ff.). It is arguably this subjectively grotesque dimension of the novel which has resulted in the reading of *Henkien taistelu* as a “misanthropic satire” that “reflects pure despair” (Tarkka 1965: 92), as a profoundly pessimistic novel (Sarajas 1965: 63; Hellaakoski 1950: 90; Viljanen 1959: 164–165), and even as a “nightmare dream of society” (Kivimaa 1934: 292) despite its many comic passages.

This shift in perspective is also visible in the overall structure of the novel, and in an often overlooked change in the character guiding Sampila. *Henkien taistelu* consists of two parts or volumes; the first volume concentrates mostly on Krokelby, whereas the second volume pays much more attention to Helsinki itself. At the end of the first volume, the devil recedes, and in his place a new figure appears: that of Oiva Tommola, who begins to guide Kleophas Sampila through Helsinki (Lehtonen 1933: 298–299). This change in guides is only minor, however, in comparison with the much more eventful change that takes places within the protagonist. Increasingly, Sampila begins to see society in terms earlier used by the devil in disguise, but without the ironical distance this character lends the narration. Sampila begins to describe Krokelby as a natural landscape corrupted by the vicinity of the capital (ibid.: 205), and he perceives it as a locality that resembles a mishmash “scraped together with debris from the countryside and the refuse from Helsinki” (ibid.: 267).485

The question of who sees and frames the landscape in *Henkien taistelu* is of considerable importance for the interpretation of the experience of space. An urban landscape entails a panoramic view – a vision of the city which, as pointed out earlier (sections 2.4., 5.1.), contains moral undertones, since framing it as a comprehensive totality gives the focalizing instance the possibility of passing judgment. As Sharon Zukin points out, landscape “connotes a contentious, compromized product of society” (Zukin 1991: 16). The grotesque, like the landscape, is something that can be argued to not exist *a priori*: it is not important what is, but how it is described (see Perttula 2010: 52, 53), and who sees (see Salmela 2012: 192). The grotesque, then, resides not in the landscape itself, but in the vision that frames it and gives it meaning. The gradual change of focalization to Sampila, and the pessimistic terms in which his vision of Helsinki’s (sub)urban space is couched illustrate that the workings of the devil have started to have their effect on him. Sampila feels so upset by how his opinions of society and of the Finnish

485 “[…] joka oli hänestä ikäänkuin maaseudun jätteistä ja joistakin Helsingin varisemista kokoonraapustettu […].”
people have changed that he begins to feel repulsed by Krokelby:

He really wanted to move away from this village, this half-city in the neighbourhood of Helsinki, which the struggle for life, as he called it in his thoughts, had certainly ruined, distorted, brutalized [...]. (Lehtonen 1933: 266)

Sampila longs for the pond he left behind at the beginning of the novel, and when thinking of this Arcadian locality he explicitly considers that for him the idea of the pond implies a degree of devoutness and faith: “by that pond he meant something metaphorically, which was devoutness, belief...” (ibid.). It becomes clear by implication that the landscape of Krokelby takes on exactly the opposite symbolic meaning: it becomes a symbol of Sampila’s growing despair.

As Sampila increasingly becomes the focalizer, he moves up in the narrative hierarchy in another sense, too: he appears less and less as the naïve victim of the devil, and increasingly begins to analyse what is happening around him. He becomes obsessed with a story that he has remembered, in which a devil in a bottle is driving an innocent victim to destruction, and in a thoroughly satirical conversation, Sorsimo, who is the bottled devil himself, discusses with him the literary antecedents of the story in which they are mixed up, and gives Sampila two books to read: a Finnish version of the international tale of the devil in the bottle, Wiksari eli piru pullossa, as well as Alain-René Lesage’s Le Diable Boiteux (The Devil in the Bottle, 1707). Henkien taistelu itself is loosely based on both stories. The passage in question, where Sorsimo explains to Sampila the “kind of Faust-like story” (Lehtonen 1933: 410) at stake, contains an interesting, although almost untranslatable pun on Helsinki’s dystopian character; Sampila considers that in similar earlier stories, the devil tries to drive his victim “to Helsinki” (“päin Helsinkiä”) (ibid.). The intended pun lies in the similarities between Helsinki and the Finnish word for hell (“helvetti”), and the fact that “driving one to Helsinki” sounds very much like the Finnish saying to “drive someone to hell/to destruction” (“päin helvettiä”). Whereas at first it is the

---

486 “Hän tahtoi todellakin jonnekin pois tästä kylästä, tästä Helsingin lähistön puolikaupungista, jonka elämänkilvoittelu, kuten hän sitä ajatuksissaan nimitti, oli varmaankin pilannut, viääristänyt, raistaanutt [...].”

487 “No, hän tarkoitti tallaa lammella nyt vertauskuvallisesti jotakin sellaista, joka oli hartautta, uskoa...”

488 “[...] eräällainen Faust-tarina [...]”

489 This passage is one of the hints given throughout the novel that most of the narrative could, in fact, be interpreted as Sampila’s hallucination, and that a considerable part of Henkien taistelu is constructed to lead the reader astray into believing that there is, indeed, a devil present in the story world, while covert references indicate that he stems, rather, from the protagonist’s imagination. In this reading, only the beginning and the concluding part contain magical parts at odds
devil’s mission to convince Sampila of society’s vices and shortcomings, at this point Sampila himself becomes eager to look at the vices of society with his own eyes, and to “gather evidence” (ibid.: 375).\footnote{490} The testing of an idea, carried out by the devil through the figure of Sampila, starts to take its toll: amidst these distorted environments and people, Sampila is described as a man transformed both inwardly and outwardly (ibid.: 378).

### 7.2.3 “LIKE MEAT ON A GRILL”

A crucial moment in Sampila’s experience of the (sub)urban environment comes at a farewell party organized by the devil on the occasion of the latter’s departure from Krokelby. From this moment on, Kleophas Leanteri Sampila will be decidedly on his own; his guide quite literally leaves the stage. The view seen from the upper floor of the villa in which the devil rented an apartment is similar to the panoramic view with which Krokelby was introduced much earlier in the novel (Lehtonen 1933: 115 ff.), but at this point (ibid.: 518 ff.), the focalization is entirely that of Sampila, and the dystopian terms in which the description is couched are indicative of the despair which has gradually taken hold of the protagonist. The long description is couched in visual, almost painterly language:

It was a beautiful day at the end of June. From the upper floor of “Villa Kanisto” one could see the horizon like a wide and grand half-circle, arching to the right and the left, carrying the enormous vault of heaven, underneath which the world seemed to shrink in size and seemed to be flattened down. That horizon, black like the landscape backgrounds in the paintings by da Vinci, seemed like an artistic device, with the effect of making the glaring greenness of the valley seem even more intense than it would have been on its own. […] There was not a breath of wind, everything seemed to have come to a halt. The sea, of which a glimpse could be seen further away, at the grey mouth of the Vantaa River, hardly even rippled, but did not glimmer:

with the “actual” world, and all the magical-realistic elements seen and experienced by Sampila can be related to his possible hallucinatory state. Sampila is repeatedly compared to the “knight of the sorrowful countenance” (but also to Sancho Panza), and like Don Quixote (see Alter 1975: 5 ff.), he sees the world around him as strongly informed by literary texts. Many of the magical-realistic things Sampila notices may have originated in the literature he has read. At one point, Sampila explicitly states that he saw the devil coming out of a bottle in the scene set in Paris at the beginning of the novel. He realizes, however, that this was in reality “resurfacing ideas from literature”, which he had repressed in his subconscious (Lehtonen 1993: 422) (“alitajuntaan painuneita ja sieltä viimein pinnalle palautuneita kirjallisia asioita”).

\footnote{490} “[…] lisäilee todistusaineistoaan.”
it, too, had come to a halt, had dozed off, fallen asleep in the murky veil of the evening haze. – The freshness of spring had long since disappeared from the fields and meadows, – no longer the brightness of the marsh marigold, the brass of the buttercups, the blinding gold of the dandelions! Below, in the garden of Sorsimo’s landlady – which used to be a whore, but was now a Christian’s person’s garden, where the lilacs had just now opened their blue and white loveliness, the white roses were furrowing at the very same moment amidst the brazen grass. – Further away, on the top of a rock, where the whitewashed tower of a villa shimmered, small beings moved around: half-naked sun-bathers, – or they were lying motionless on the rock as if on a torrid stove or like meat on a grill. On the dusty railway track, between the shining rails, a few black labourers were slowly moving to or from their work. – A great silence. Not even a swallow enlivened with its flying circles the milky emptiness of the sky... (Lehtonen 1933: 518–519)

The view from the upper floor of the villa is described as utterly overwhelming, a characteristic which is stressed by the repeated adjectives accentuating its hyperbolic enormity: the “wide, grand half-circle”, and the “enormous” vault of heaven. The enormity of the heavens makes the world itself appear small and shrunken in size, and in relation to it, the human beings moving through the landscape are represented as further diminished in size. The description emphasizes the extent to which the panorama is an artificial, aestheticizing rendering; the horizon is similar to the backgrounds in paintings by da Vinci, and its wide expanse and dark aspect appear to be


Note that in the original text, the “K” in the name of the “Villa Kanisto” is printed as a mirrored letter, in reference to the distorted way in which the name is written on the actual villa in the novel. The distorted features of Krokelby’s physical environment find their way into the very layout out of the texts of Henkien taistelu.
purposely designed to make the green colour of the valley appear even more garish. Describing the (sub)urban landscape in terms of a painting follows a well-established tradition in city literature, pioneered in French literature by the brothers Goncourt and Zola, and in Sweden by authors such as Oscar Levertin, and Hjalmar Söderberg (Borg 2011: 204). In the long description from *Henkien taistelu*, the painterly description provides the landscape not only with aesthetic qualities; it also results in an eerie, almost threatening atmosphere. The uncanny artificiality of the landscape is enhanced by the repeated emphasis on the immobility of its features: there is not “a breath of wind” and the river “hardly even rippled”. The description contains several oxymorons and combinations of high and low to depict one and the same thing – the horizon is portrayed first as pitch black, the sky is the colour of milk – and since it is suggested that the focalization in this passage is that of Sampila, the effect is to convince the reader that the devil’s teachings have had their effect, and that Sampila has started to see the environment in the pessimistic terms used by the devil. The very fact that the setting is a “beautiful day at the end of June” makes the enumeration of negative elements appear the more striking.

The references to natural splendour in this passage are in part that of a faded beauty, and more generally, too, the description focuses rather on what is absent, or what is no longer there: the opulence of the spring flowers, movement, and sounds. An idyllic setting is turned on its head, is “drawn out of its [...] rut” and “turned inside out” (Bakhtin 1984b: 122; see above): the positive elements of the landscape are described through negation, and the effect is one of utter desolation. In the case of the “Christian” garden of the landlady, the “whory” past of the landlady is erased to make way for a presumptuous and artificial construction. The garden is not an Eden but a transformed garden of a past prostitute. The tower of the neighbouring villa, which is “painted white”, can be read as a reference to the whitewashed graves from Matthew 23:27, which are beautiful on the outside but on the inside “full of dead men’s bones, and of all uncleanness”. The intertextual reference to Matthew 23:27 resonates with the immediately consecutive view of half-naked sun-bathing people on the rocks beside the white tower – bodies not described in terms of bodily health, but of carnal transience. The comparison Sampila makes is revealing: to him, these people lie still on the rock “as if on a torrid stove or as meat on a grill”.

The description of the Krokelby rock as a “torrid stove” on which to grill human flesh is one of a number of recurring and disturbing references to human beings in terms of flesh in the novel.492 Immediately preceding the panoramic description of the view from Villa Kanisto, the reader gets a revealing insight into the thoughts of Sampila concerning the culture of sunbathing and nudity which was practised on the Helsinki beach:

There’s also the kind of people who stroll in their bare shirts along the Helsinki streets, glowing in the summer heat, and who plod to the public beach, where Kleophas, too, once had strayed, as if this political turmoil did not concern them in the least. No, they are just lounging about there in the sand, or throw a somersault in the sunshine, those thousands, tens of thousands of people, almost naked, on their stomachs, on their backs, eyes in the glaring sand, – on their backs as if they are bronze statues cast down, black as mulattoes, on their stomachs like dough [...] while the loudspeaker is trumpeting wailing saxophone melodies. Healthiness: flirting, adventures! – And there are similar people all over the country... such – flesh! To Kleophas it is flesh! It seems as if he has started to feel strangely repulsed by flesh. (Lehtonen 1933: 515–516)493

The flirtatious mood of the age, and its interest in exercise and “body culture”, sunbathing and loose clothing performed to the sound of jazz music, is sharply juxtaposed in Lehtonen’s novel with a vision of mortal flesh. The feeling that the body culture on the Helsinki beach is practised against the backdrop of impending doom is made tangible by the reference to the “political turmoil” that is described as not affecting the sun-bathers. It is a reference, of course, to the deepening political divide in the country, and the rise, both in Finland and abroad, of extremist forces (see section 1.6.).

The pessimistic vision of society and of the people that inhabit the near-infernal landscape in Henkien taistelu is thoroughly grounded in the cultural pessimism that held much of Europe in its thrall in the inter-war period and that found its expression in avant-garde movements like German expressionism, a movement to which Lehtonen’s work is not unconnected. 494 This cultural pessimism was exhibited in the work of a whole series of authors and thinkers commenting on a world in disarray, from Oswald Spengler’s Der Untergang des Abendlandes (The Decline of the West; Spengler 1918/1926) and Hermann Hesse’s Blick ins Chaos (In Sight of


494 On the link between Lehtonen’s literary landscapes and those of contemporary Finnish fine artists, see Sarajas 1965: 62; for the link between Lehtonen’s Rakastunut rampa and the contemporary Finnish discussion concerning expressionism, see Tarkka 2012: 215–217, 226–228.
Towards the Margins. Cumbersome Movement through the Urban Fringes

Chaos; 1920/1922) to Freud’s Das Unbehagen in der Kultur (Civilization and Its Discontents; 1930/2002) and Johan Huizinga’s In the Schaduwen van Morgen (In the Shadow of Tomorrow; 1935), and in Finland, Tatu Vaaskivi’s Huomispäivän varjo (“The Shadow of Tomorrow”; 1938). Joel Lehtonen’s utterly pessimistic vision of modern and urban pleasure in the jazz age was shared by other Finnish contemporary authors, most notably by Unto Karri, whose novel Sodoma (“Sodom”; 1929) was perhaps the most Spengler-inspired prose work ever published in Finnish (and who was ridiculed for it by Olavi Paavolainen; see Paavolainen 1932: 78).495 Similar feelings as those expressed by Kleophas Sampila, above, are also felt by Sodoma’s main character Martti, who, after an aborted initiation rite into a worldwide Jewish conspiracy in a suburb of Paris, gets back to civilization only to be confronted with senseless partying in urban nightclubs. “This is seething hell!” Martti thought. ‘Flesh, flesh and sensuousness everywhere’” (Karri 1929: 233)496 Other novels set in Helsinki during this time exhibit a similar troubled image of humans as “mere flesh”.497 In Mika Waltari’s Suuri illusioni (“The Great Illusion”; 1928), too, there is a scene of grotesque carnality, set on a German ship in the harbour of Helsinki, in which one of the characters comments that “[t]his is flesh, and however hard you will try to find anything else, at this moment you will not find anything else here but flesh” (Waltari 1928: 90).498 In a later Helsinki novel written by Waltari, Surun ja ilon kaupunki (“City of Sorrow and Joy”; 1936), the elderly director Sunnila is musing how human flesh can change into an image of death, as he

495 In the collection of essays Nykyaikaa etsimässä (“In Search of Modern Times”; 1929/2002), Paavolainen expressed uncertainty as to whether the modern age, with its interest in machine and body culture, would lead to a healthy or, on the contrary, a crippled future human. Clearly, the possibility that the modern age would deform and distort the human body was for him one of the possible options:

“What is going to be the emblem of the future generation? Is it going to be the naked, tanned youngster in the sparkling sunlight, with the sand and slack of a sports stadium underneath his feet, with an enormous concrete wall in the background? Or is it going to be a freak, degenerate due to pleasure and automatized comfort, with an unnaturally developed skull, a decrepit body, and with arms and legs that have become atrophied by the use of circuit breakers and elevators?” (Paavolainen 1929/2002: 452)

496 “Tämä on kiehuva hellveti! ajatteli Martti. – Lihaa, lihaa ja aistillisuutta kaikkialla.”

497 One of the strangest links between animal flesh and human beings can be found in Iris Uurto’s Rauminn iävä (“The Longing of the Body”; 1935), in which the protagonist Olli Lassila, a mathematics teacher in Helsinki, starts to detest women after he is left by his wife. He repeatedly describes women in terms of fish, and eventually leaves his workplace at a secondary school and argues that the school in reality is only a smoking facility for fish (Uurto 1935: 221, 249). It is unclear whether Olli is merely joking at this point, or whether he has decidedly lost his mental capacities, but the reader will be inclined to guess that the latter interpretation is the most probable one.

498 “Tämä on lihaa, ja vaikka kuinka tarkkaan hakisitte, niin ette ainakaan tällä hetkellä löytäisi täältä muuta kuin lihaa.”
watches a female dancer perform in the electric light of a club night (Waltari 1936: 291–292).

The example from Surun ja ilon kaupunki illustrates the era’s interest in the human body as a mask behind which mortal flesh hides itself; an interest related to the image of the dance macabre, which rose again to prominence in the early twentieth century.499 It is a motif which recurs repeatedly in Henkien taistelu, and which culminates in the most disturbing landscape of the novel, in one of the last chapters, aptly called “Tombs” (“Haudat”). In this chapter, Kleophas Leanteri Sampila has a dream in which he finds the idyllic countryside environment of his childhood suddenly transformed into a graveyard (Lehtonen 1933: 607–611).500 Sampila experiences this infernal landscape as even worse than hell, since it contains no devils or dead souls, in fact nothing at all except filth and flesh. The transformation of a fertile and idyllic childhood landscape into the derelict wasteland of carnal refuse is compared in this passage with late medieval, plague-inspired paintings such as the dance of death at the St. Mary Church in Lübeck,501 and the “triumph of death” fresco in Pisa; but in comparison, Sampila experiences the nightmare as much more unsettling (Lehtonen 1933: 610). In the industrializing world, the link between humans and mortal flesh takes on an even more distressing meaning than the one found in the late medieval, plague-inspired millenarianism. Industrial warfare and the dehumanizing routines of grand-scale factory work have shown that human beings, too, can become part of a rationalized and devouring food chain, and at the end of the novel, a pivotal Krokelby locality appears to embody this apocalyptic vision: the slaughterhouse.

7.2.4 THE SLAUGHTERHOUSE

In the chapter immediately following “Tombs”, the nightmarish image of an infernal landscape is concretized in one particular building set in Krokelby: the slaughterhouse, conveniently situated next to a sausage factory. As Sampila walks past the slaughterhouse, he is again reminded of the Pisa triumph of death fresco, and he happens to look inside through the opening

499 In ballet, the dance macabre was famously restaged in the 1932 ballet piece The Green Table by Kurt Jooss (see Vaaskivi 1938: 333); on the cinema screen, Fritz Lang’s Metropolis (1927) features scenes reminiscent of the dance of death (see Prakash 2010: 25).

500 A visit in hell is a typical episode in Menippean satires (see Käkelä-Puumala 2007: 184–188), as is the “crisis dream” (see Bakhtin 1984b: 152–153). The profoundly misanthropic view expressed in Sampila’s dream, however, and the disconcerting effect the hellish vision has on the protagonist, run counter to the satirical and comic tone of the Menippea, and are indicative of the shift of genre away from satire, towards the subjective grotesque.

501 The painting in Lübeck is referred to also in the immediately preceding chapter, in which Kleopas is flying in his imagination through Helsinki and Krokelby (Lehtonen 1933: 602).
Towards the Margins. Cumbersome Movement through the Urban Fringes

door. The disturbing view of the inside where Sampila sees, amongst others, a bull being stabbed and bleeding profusely, and the head of a pig being crushed with an axe-hammer, in addition to the deafening roar of the various animals, profoundly shakes his already fragile inner balance (Lehtonen 1933: 613 ff.). What is so disturbing about the image of the slaughterhouse at this point of the narration? The fact that most of the characters in Henkien taistelu have animal names and animal-like characteristics makes the prominent presence of a slaughterhouse, and the vision of “mass destruction” it presents all the more forbidding (Tarkka 1965: 92). But the slaughterhouse can also be seen here as a symbol of the unsettling consequences of modernizing society, especially in relation to earlier motifs of human bodies-as-flesh and the dance of death in the novel, references that culminate and become concrete in the slaughterhouse, and complete the gradual and relentless process of utter despair within the protagonist.502

There is a long tradition of seeing death in the everyday city (see section 2.2.), but the image of the slaughterhouse here amounts to a particular kind of symbol of modernity, since it links the fate of humankind with the accelerating process of modernization and commodification, of which the industrialized slaughterhouse provides one of the most disturbing images.503 In 1908, the Danish historian Gustav Bang, in his monumental work on modern times Vor tid (“Our time”; 1908a), devotes a special chapter to the Chicago slaughterhouses and to Upton Sinclair’s literary description of the phenomenon in the novel The Jungle (1906); both books were published in Finnish immediately upon appearance (Chikago 1906; Nykyaika 1908).504 Gustav Bang notes that the phenomenon of the slaughterhouse city, which Chicago had become, also has it consequences for the fate of the working class as well as the consuming class, since both are fleeced by modern techniques as effectively as the animals they produce and consume (Bang 1908: 32).505 The 1920s and 1930s commentators of (American)

502 The link between flesh and the slaughterhouse might have been received with added disgust by contemporary readers, since only a few years before the appearance of Henkien taistelu, in 1931, Helsinki had been shocked by the findings of human body parts on the outskirts of the capital (not that far, in fact, from the Old Town area), and a widely mediatized rumour claimed that human flesh had been mixed into food at a local meat grinding factory (Häkkinen & Similä 2010).

503 See also Brantz: “During the nineteenth century, the close relationship between consumption and death made slaughterhouses emblematic of the rise of mass-production and the amalgamation of science, technology, and state politics. The proportions of this change were nowhere more visible than in the city, and the 19th-century city in particular is unthinkable without the slaughterhouse. As Denis Hollier has put it, abattoirs are part and parcel of ‘the logic of the modernization of urban space.’” (Brantz 2001)

504 Extracts of Gustav Bang’s work were published in the Finnish popular media, for example in the magazine Liikeapulainen (Bang 1908b).

505 The mechanized processes of slaughter in the industrialized slaughterhouse were direct precursors of the assembly line (Hodson 2001: 120).
modernization, such as Vladimir Mayakovski (1925/2010) and Georges Bataille (1929/1997) were fascinated by the slaughterhouse. Part of this fascination must be understood in terms of the uneasiness with which the early decades of the twentieth century saw the advent of a modernizing society dominated by machines and rationalized processes of production, amongst which men and women were perceived to run the risk of being reduced to mere slaves (see, for example, Spengler 1918/1926: 504–505). Several examples from literature and movies of the 1920s and 1930s depicted modern urbanites being passively led to slaughter in the machine-city.506

When Sampila looks through the open door of the slaughterhouse, he reads his own despair and his own fears in the eyes of the frightened animals. The desperation felt by Sampila is not so much related to a fear of death, I would argue; rather, it is the fear that the “struggle for life” which has infected and distorted the (sub)urban landscape and its inhabitants, has erased the last possibilities of believing in humanity. Part of Sampila’s desperate attempt to distance himself from the dystopian world he sees is to become a vegetarian – one last futile endeavour to remain outside of the processes he sees at work in society.507 It is a strategy which, in the ironical words of the narrator (words that could, at this point, be identified with the devil), seals the fate of Sampila. Strangely enough, it is one of the reasons why he should die: “Let him die, since he does not understand how good a stroganoff-steak tastes […]!” (Lehtonen 1933: 618)508 With the view of the slaughterhouse, immediately following Sampila’s nightmare in which his childhood landscape is transformed into a dismal landscape of carnal refuse, the dystopian vision of the city has come to a culmination point. Sampila’s excursions into Krokelby and Helsinki have gradually shattered his optimistic view of the world, and the “struggle for life” starts to weigh down on him – the extended sojourn in this depressing suburban landscape leads to his ruin. At the side of some nondescript forest road in the vicinity of Krokelby, Sampila, disillusioned and resigned to his fate, is killed by a tramp for no particular reason or purpose.

506 Charlie Chaplin’s *Modern times* (1936) opens with a scene juxtaposing an amassed group of sheep driven forward and a crowd of people exiting a metro station; an equally direct link is present in the opening image of John Dos Passos’ *Manhattan transfer* (1925), which describes people arriving in Manhattan as apples in a juice press (Dos Passos 1925/1987: 15).

It would be hard to find a Helsinki prose novel written at the turn of the century which does not describe characters at some point as acting “machine-like”. In Finnish literature an interesting instance of literary characters transformed into machines in the city can be found in Maila Talvio’s *Aili* (“Aili”; 1897), in which the eponymous protagonist works at a Helsinki bank and notices that the girls around her have lost all features of individuality, and have turned into machines (1897: 182).

507 The protagonist in *Rakastunut rampa*, Sakris Kukelman, is also a vegetarian.

508 “Kuolkoon, koska ei ymmärrä, miten hyvä on stroganoff-pihvi […]”
7.3 MAPPING A SOCIALLY DIVIDED CITY: PLACE NAMES

Many of the most disturbing spatial elements in the distorted landscape of Lehtonen’s Krokelby novels not only construct an image of the moral failure of the inter-war society, but are also indicative of the desperate struggle between competing social classes to be king of the dunghill. The ridiculously deformed houses in Krokelby are symptomatic of a satirized upward social drive, and in *Henkien taistelu*, the “struggle for life” is what has “ruined, distorted, brutalized” the landscape and the people living in Krokelby (Lehtonen 1933: 266; see above). The whole of Krokelby is infused with a sense of class: it is an in-between landscape (or even “No man’s land”; see Olsson 1925: 133–134) inhabited by a class of in-between, parvenu people; an environment whose very existence is proof of a society that is on the move. In Lehtonen’s novels, and more generally, in Helsinki novels from the 1920s and 1930s, geographical location is permeated by a sense of social class. In the carnivalesque environment of Krokelby, social identity is fluid and constantly re-negotiated, a condition which constitutes one reason for the anxiety that spurs on most of its inhabitant. In literary representations of more central districts of Helsinki and in a number of clearly-defined working-class districts, social class appears as much more fixed. When literary characters move from the one locality to the other, their social class changes accordingly. Characters’ trajectories through the urban landscape are thus symbolic of their social rise and fall. In *Henkien taistelu*, the formerly successful Myyrimö, for example, has moved downward in society, and has been forced to take up residence in a gloomy cellar in the environment of the working-class districts of Sörnäinen and Vallila, a “terrible place”,\(^509\) which Sampila imagines to be inhabited by dangerous gang members looking like Apaches from Western movies, and people planning their shady business in the shadows and the fog (Lehtonen 1933: 359–360).\(^510\) The trajectory of another minor character in the novel, the successful art dealer and swindler Mikael Reineck (a reference to Goethe’s *Reineke Fuchs*; see Tarkka 1965: 89), has gone in a different direction, ending up in a large private palace in the up-market Kaivopuisto neighbourhood (Lehtonen 1933: 367). And when Sampila takes a tram to leave the centre of the city, he meets yet another of his acquaintances, the architect Maimanen, formerly successful but now an impoverished drunkard living in the area around the street Hämeentie, a locality which constitutes, again, a clear marker of the character’s downward social mobility (ibid.: 439).

---

\(^509\) “[…] kamala paikka […]”

\(^510\) For the link between Apaches and the Helsinki working-class district, see Chapter 6, note 396.
The ebb and flow of people’s social trajectories through Helsinki’s space are already depicted in late nineteenth-century literature. In Santeri Ivalo’s *Aikansa lapsipuoli* (“A Stepchild of his Time”; 1895), a student novel which is also, in part, the story of the protagonist’s unsuccessful endeavours to rise in society, there is a compelling description of the bustle of people moving on the first of June. This specific date, according to the narrator, is “some kind of yearly adjustment day, which more or less organizes and places the various layers and elements of society according to the events of that year, each to the place where he belongs” (Ivalo 1895: 273).511 Some of the Helsinki citizens mentioned move to a better locality, but many, like the protagonist Juuso himself, have to move to more modest localities – the examples given are “down in Vladimirinkatu [present-day Kalevankatu] or in Sörnäinen or in the villas of Eläintarha” (ibid.: 274).512

As these examples indicate, a place name is often enough to breathe social meaning into the surroundings. From the very beginning of Helsinki descriptions in Finnish literature, the literary city is shaped according to particular proper names that function as clear markers of social boundaries. In literary representations, a single geographical proper name may amount to a momentous process of world-making, in the sense proposed by Nelson Goodman (Goodman 1978: 13 ff., see also section 1.4.). In cases in which a particular part of the city is denoted only by a single street name or district name, the process by which the literary city is constructed through reference to the geographically locatable world is one of radical deletion (only the proper name is left), weighting, ordering and supplementation (alone, the proper name receives extraordinary weight and supplements all other dimensions of the world it refers to). In such a radical condensation of meaning, which leaves only the proper name, a whole social-geographical construct is put in place. This is already the case in the prototypical Helsinki text discussed in Chapter 3, Juhani Aho’s novella *Helsinkiin* (“To Helsinki”; 1889), which ends with a reference to a brothel, a locality suggested by the mere mention of a particular address. In Eino Leino’s *Olli Suurpää* (“Olli Suurpää”; 1908), one of the first characteristics mentioned by the narrator to provide background information concerning the eponymous protagonist is the location of his apartment in the district Kruununhaka, a name which evokes civic and upper (middle) class dignity (Leino 1908/1998: 419–420).

Place names guide the movement of people through the city by evoking a complex social geography (de Certeau 1984: 104), but also by providing boundaries and thresholds, indicating the crossing of implicit social (and other) boundaries. De Certeau, in his treatment of spatial stories, argues that frontiers and bridges are “essential narrative figures” of stories, and hence, crucial to stories’ capacities to found spaces and establish spatial

511 “[…] jonkinlainen vuotuinen tasauspäivä, joka ikäänkuin järjestelee ja sioittaa yhteiskunnan eri kerrokset ja ainekset vuoden tapausten mukaan kunkin hänelle kuuluvaan paikkaan […]”

512 “[…] alhaalta Vladimirinkadulta tai Sörnäisistä, tai Eläintarhan huviloista…”
demarcations (ibid.: 123). One of the most prominent Helsinki thresholds, which has received considerable attention in writing on Helsinki since the beginning of the twentieth century, is the Long Bridge (“Pitkäsilta”), which connected the centre of the city with the rapidly expanding working-class districts to the immediate north-east.\footnote{The importance of the Long Bridge as a symbolic frontier within the city appears in numerous historical and autobiographical documents; see amongst many others Waris 1932/1973; Suolahti 1961/1981: 238; Klinge & Kolbe 1999: 48–61).} It functions as a border as well as a bridge between two distinct environments. In early twentieth century writing on Helsinki in literature, the Long Bridge has a prominent position: Runar Schildt (1912), as well as V.A. Koskenniemi (1914) and Mikko Saarenheimo (1916a), in their essays on Helsinki in literature, saw not one Helsinki, but two different cities, divided and connected by the Long Bridge. Schildt, for example, ponders what future writer would become the interpreter of the “swarming masses there, north of the Long Bridge, and their dark psychology” (Schildt 1912: 13). Other literary commentators followed Schildt in looking forward to descriptions from across this social divide. Saarenheimo remarks that “the strongly willing world, which looms large on the other side of the Long Bridge, and which encircles Helsinki on other sides as well, has had to be content with crumbs in the allocation of literary attention” (Saarenheimo 1916a: 206–207). Koskenniemi envisions the possibility of a future socially inspired Helsinki novel, which will pit the bank directors of central Helsinki against socialist agitators from which they were separated – and to whom they were connected – by way of the Long Bridge (Koskenniemi 1914: 89–96). One of the most important works to describe the working-class conditions north of the Long Bridge is Heikki Waris’s influential academic dissertation Työläisyhteiskunnan syntyminen Helsingin Pitkänsillan pohjoispuolelle (“The Birth of a Working-Class Community North of the Helsinki Long Bridge”; 1932/1973), which was drawn upon by Mika Waltari when he was writing his Helsinki trilogy (Waltari 1980: 231–232).\footnote{Waltari also mentions as sources for his trilogy Järnefelt’s Veneh’ojalaiset (1909) and Dreiser’s Chicago novel The Titan (1914) (Waltari 1980: 230–232).}

Several novels thematize the Long Bridge as an important spatial benchmark in Helsinki. In Arvid Järnefelt’s Veneh’ojalaiset (“The Family Veneh’oja”; 1909), the Long Bridge is mentioned repeatedly as a symbolic threshold which also has a strategic function, since by blocking its traffic, an important entry road to the city could be blocked (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 240–241, 304–305, 329, 367). In the short story “Antti Peltari” (“Antti Peltari”), in Toivo Tarvas’s collection Häviävää Helsinkiä (“Disappearing Helsinki”; 1917), the Long Bridge is not only the great divider between the working-class districts where the eponymous protagonist feels at home and the estranging city centre, but also a threshold between old and new, and even life and death (see section 5.3.). In the novel Eri tasoilta (“On Different Levels”; 1916a),
again by Toivo Tarvas, there is one particularly revealing reference to the Long Bridge, in which the protagonist, Albert, after a long stay in the hospital, is at last again walking through his beloved home city. The spring evenings are enchanting:

During those evenings he sometimes has the habit of walking against the stream, as it were, along the street Unioninkatu. The labourers have already changed their dress and they come in a dark queue together with their brides, wives and children to the centre of the city, across that gently curving stone bridge, which [...] connects the city of labour and tears with the beautiful city of affluence and joy. (Tarvas 1916a: 249–250)515

The Long Bridge appears literally as a bridge between two different cities – the working-class “city of labour and tears” and the “beautiful city of affluence and joy”. The position of the protagonist Albert in this social geography is clear: as a privileged member of the upper class, on a beautiful spring evening he walks “against the stream, as it were”, across the bridge to the working-class districts, while “a dark queue” of labourers moves into the centre in the evening. Albert is one of the few natural flâneurs in the literature of this period (see section 4.6.), which may be one explanation why he ventures with such exceptional passion into the working-class areas north of the Long Bridge. One of the other rare flâneurs in Finnish Helsinki novels in the first half of the twentieth century, Lauri Pallas in Iris Uurto’s novel Kypsyminen (“Maturing”; 1935), sees his nightly walks repeatedly punctuated by the Long Bridge, which more often than not functions as a mental barrier. Lauri, a student, lives in the working-class district north of Sörnäinen, and it is never made explicit what makes him stop at this threshold – not social background, since his father is relatively wealthy and lives in the very centre of Helsinki. Lauri sees the Helsinki centre across the Long Bridge repeatedly as a mirage of lights “as if [seen] through a heavy veil” (Uurto 1935: 163)516 – a vision that could be interpreted as representative of Lauri’s unaccomplished dreams of self-fulfilment, both in relation to the woman he loves and with respect to his unsuccessful social advancement (see also below, 7.4.). In most prose texts, however, the Long Bridge carries clear connotations of social meaning, and functions as a radical geographical divide between centre and periphery. In Elvi Sinervo’s collection of short stories, Runo Söörnäisistä (“Poem about Sörnäinen”;

515 “Silloin on hänellä tapana toisinaan kävellä ikäänkuin vastavirrassa pitkin suurta Unioninkatua. Työmiehet ovat jo muuttaneet pukuansa ja tulevat tummana jonona morsiamineen, vaimoineen ja lapsineen kohti keskkupaunkia yli tuon loivakkaisen kivisillan, joka [...] yhdistää työn ja kyyneleten kaupungin kauniiseen varallisuuden ja ilon kaupunkiin.”

516 “[...] paksun harson takaa [...]”.

263
1937), the very title indicates its focalization of one of Helsinki's most (in)famous working-class districts north of this spatial benchmark.

The repeated focus on the Long Bridge, however, has obscured the fact that the social geography of Helsinki, in literature as in reality, was much more complex than a simple north-south dichotomy separated by the Long Bridge suggests. The division in literary representations of Helsinki is more often a juxtaposition between the areas at either side of the railway station running along a north-south axis to the Helsinki central station. In the east, the working-class areas of Kallio, Sörnäinen, Vallila, Kumpula, Toukola and Hermanni. In the west, the “New Helsinki” of Töölö. Such a dichotomy is explicitly visible in Helvi Hämäläinen’s novel *Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä* (“A Respectable Tragedy”; 1941, see section 6.5.), in which the New Helsinki is set apart from the older Helsinki centre of the previous century, but also from working-class Helsinki:

Old Helsinki does not know this human breed [the new generation living in Töölö] any better than the present 1930s New Helsinki knows the working class, whose Helsinki is still situated in the wooden houses of Vallila and the shacks of [...] Toukola, or in the unhealthy and wretched stone houses of Kallio and Sörnäinen. The Helsinki of the early twentieth century which built them sent its inhabitants from the very beginning into unhomeliness and communal living, which nurtures criminality and which spreads venereal diseases and breeds prostitution and rears their children [...] into human material which is unhealthy in body and soul [...]. (Hämäläinen 1941a: 32)517

The description of the diseased city in this passage from *Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä* is reminiscent of the “tentacular city” in texts by Järnefelt and Onerva (see section 5.2.): it is the centripetal city centre which is responsible for society’s ills by the very urban structures it imposes on its surroundings. Most readers of Hämäläinen’s novel could be expected to know that Hämäläinen’s preceding Helsinki novel *Katuojan vettä* (“Water in the Gutter”; 1935), which had been widely reviewed (Lappalainen 1984: 47–48), was set in Vallila, one of those working-class areas which the “New Helsinki” of *Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä* was said to ignore. A further layer of meaning is added to the juxtaposition between a working-class and middle-class Helsinki in this passage from *Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä*,

---

517 "Vanha Helsinki ei tuntenut tätä ihmisluokkaa enempää kuin nykyinen kolmekymmenenluvun uusi Helsinki tuntee työväkeä, jonka asuma Helsinki on yhä Vallilan puutaloissa tai Toukolan [...] puurähissä tai Linjojen ja Sörnäisten epäterveellisissä, kurjuuden täyttämissä kvitaloissa. Se vuosisadan alun Helsinki, joka ne rakensi, syöksi niiden asukkaat jo heti alusta epäkodikkuuteen ja yhteisasumiseen, joka edistää rikollisuutta ja levittää veneerisiä tauteja, synnyttää prostituutiota ja kasvattaa niistä jälkeläisiä [...] ruumiiltaan ja sielultaan epäterveen ihmisäineksen [...]"
especially when considering that Häämäläinen and her works had been drawn into a bitter polemic concerning perceived leftist and rightist preferences of style and content, a polemic in which the “Literature Battle” of 1936 was but one part.518

The idea that Helsinki consisted of three separate cities – “old”, “new” and “working class” – was also explicitly visible in Arvi Kivimaa’s Hetki ikuisen edessä (“A Moment before Eternity”; 1932), in a passage that is prototypical for a vision that can be found more generally in literature of this period:

Here was Töölö – a part of the city that was artificially lifted on rocks and their hollows; across the Bay were Sörnäinen and Hermanni, and further away, grey Katajanokka and Kruununhaka in their eternal sleep, a piece of a bygone century. (Kivimaa 1932: 24–25)519

The protagonist Aarni, whose thoughts are conveyed here, is lost in thought at a tram stop in Töölö, and is saying goodbye to the city he intends to leave. He tries to visualize the city both diachronically, as the sum of his experiences in Helsinki, and synchronically, and it is at this point that he visualizes Helsinki as a city divided into three parts: the middle class Helsinki of Töölö, the working-class Helsinki north-east of the centre, and the old centre, enveloped in “eternal sleep”, something from a past era. But even a division in three clearly separable parts with their clear symbolic and social connotations, such as those presented in these quotes from Häämäläinen and Kivimaa, does not do justice to the more complex reality, both in historical Helsinki in the 1920s and 1930s, and in the experiences of Helsinki in the literature of this period.

An illustrative example of the complex distribution of working-class areas is provided in the passage in Ivalo’s Aikansa lapsipuoli mentioned earlier, in which, on a set day of the year, people whose luck have run out are forced to take up residence in less-desirable areas: “down in Vladimirinkatu or in Sörnäinen or in the villas of Eläintarha” (Ivalo 1895: 274). Vladimirinkatu, present-day Kalevankatu, is situated south-west of the centre, while the villas of Eläintarha (at the Töölö bay) are situated in the west, and Sörnäinen to the north-east of the Centre. In addition, the district of Punavuori, situated in the south of the Helsinki peninsula, is also repeatedly referred to as a seedy working-class area, for example, in the reference at the end of Juhani Aho’s Helsinkiin (see Chapter 3).520 The working-class area to the south-west of the Helsinki centre, in particular, with which also parts of present-day Kamppi

518 See Chapter 6, note 360.
519 “Tässä oli Töölö – kalliolle ja niiden notkoihin keinotekoisesti nostettu kaupunginosa; lahden takana oli Sörnäinen ja Hermanni, kauempana harmaa Katajanokka ja Kruununhaka ikuisessa unessaan, kappale paennutta vuosisataa.”
520 Concerning Punavuori, its housing conditions and the connection between crime and this particular area, see Siipi 1962: 334–341.
and Ruoholahti are identified, repeatedly provides the setting for particularly dismal working-class conditions in literature, in fact almost more so than depictions of “north of the Long Bridge” do. In Waltari’s Sielu ja liekki, it is referred to as “the wretched district of Lapinlahti” (Waltari 1934: 137). In Eino Leino’s Frost Year Novel Jaana Rönty (“Jaana Rönty”; 1907), the social conditions of the protagonist Jaana are defined in part by the simple mention that her lodgings were “somewhere near the Cemetery”, words that evoked the working-class area to the south-west of the Helsinki centre. This is also where the mistress of Olli Suurpää, in Olli Suurpää (1908) is mentioned as living, and the words used are identical to the ones used in Jaana Rönty. This geographical information is all the reader learns about her (Leino 1907/1998: 190, Leino 1908/1998: 380). Other literary characters with a dubious background are similarly placed in the south-western working-class districts of Helsinki: the prostitute girl who acts as Hinkki’s fiancée in Veneh’ojalaiset, for example, lives on the street “Hietalahden rantakatu” (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 78; see also section 5.2.), and the prostitute Sandra, in Kyösti Wilkuna’s Vaikea tie, also lives in the direction of Hietalahti (Wilkuna 1915: 86–87). Names of streets situated in the very same south-western working-class part of the city reappear in literature of the 1920s and 1930s: the back-street abortionist visited by Nelma in Rakastunut rampa (1922/2006: 203) lives in Lapinlahti; Hart and Caritas go to Vladimirkatu to procure illegal alcohol in Waltari’s Suuri illusioni (1928: 21); the working-class mistress of Artur, in Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä (“A Respectable Tragedy”; 1941) lives in Lapinlahdenkatu (Hämäläinen 1941b: 13).

The boundaries between such socially defined neighbourhoods are rarely crossed unthinkingy. When, in Järnefelt’s Veneh’ojalaiset (1909), Hannes returns to Helsinki from St. Petersburg, he hesitates to go straight to his mother’s and uncle’s home in Punavuori, since his appearance in broad daylight in officer’s uniform “in these disreputable streets on the outskirts of the city would draw unnecessary attention” (Järnefelt 1909/1996: 125). Toivo, the protagonist in Mika Waltari’s novel Sielu ja liekki (“The Soul and the Flame”; 1934), realizes that his bourgeois attire attracts unwanted attention when his wanderings take him north of the Long Bridge: his white student cap, symbol of his class, is frowned upon, and in subsequent journeys, he masks himself with the help of his old labourer’s cap when “wandering far to the ‘Lines’ or along the new main road all the way to Hermanni” (Waltari 1934: 137; see also Palmgren 1989: 118).

---

521 “[…] Lapinlahden ilottoman kaupunginosan […]”
522 “[…] jossakin hautuumaan puolella […]”
523 This is also an area in which Kultakutri (“Goldilocks”) grows up to a life of prostitution in Waltari’s novella of the same name (Waltari 1946/1961: 250).
524 “[…] hänen liikkumisensa nälä kaupungin huonomaineisilla laitakaduilla olisi tarpeettoman julkista.”
525 “[…] eteni kauas linjoille tai uutta viertotietä pitkin Hermannin seuduille asti.”
cynical of such bourgeois characters feeling ill at ease in working-class environments is arguably the doctor in Helvi Hämäläinen’s Säädyllinen murhenaigelmä, who is so concerned about his impeccable reputation that, when visiting his former working-class mistress, who is pregnant, he demands that his wife accompany him, because as a couple, they will arouse less suspicion (Hämäläinen 1941b: 37). The doctor’s wife Elisabet experiences it as a “terrible walk, to which her societal instincts had forced her to protect the reputation of her husband and family” (ibid.: 43–44).

In addition to the wide range of socially divided residential areas, the literature also contains a number of areas of leisure that are just as radically divided socially. In the summer months, the island of Lammassaari and the beach of Mustikkamaa are frequented by the working class (see for example Lehtonen 1922/2006: 171–177; Sinervo 1937: 6), while the better-off go to the island of Kulosaari (see Waltari 1931: 178). Parks, too, are part of a social geography: “The poor paid taxes from their wages, so that the state could buy weapons and the city could construct parks for the rich and plant flowers around statues”, as Aarni, the young labourer in Waltari’s Surun ja ilon kaupunki (“City of Sorrow and Joy”; 1936: 27) thinks bitterly at the beginning of the novel. Even death separates the privileged and the underprivileged: the poor have a resting place for twenty years, after which period the earth is opened up and a new body buried in the same place, while the rich buy a resting place for eternity – a possible reference to the two main graveyards in Helsinki at the time, the more exclusive graveyard of Hietaniemi, and the newer graveyard of Malmi (Uurto 1936: 289–289; see Sallamaa 1995: 63).

7.4 THE LOSS OF THE CENTRE

Helsinki, then, appears as a divided city, but not in the dualistic manner that has often been suggested by the image of the Long Bridge as a central benchmark of social divisions. If two parts of Helsinki are directly juxtaposed with each other in 1920s and 1930s literature, it is not Sörnäinen and the centre of Helsinki, but Sörnäinen and Töölö, in addition to a number of proliferating socially-defined areas at the fringes. The increasing importance of these new parts of the city in Finnish literature entails a gradual diminishing of the importance of the centre of the city, a centre that is

526 “[…] tuolta hirvittävältä kävelyltä, jolle hänen yhteiskunnalliset vaistonsa olivat hänet pakottaneet miehen ja perheen maineen suojelumiseksi […]”

527 “Köyhä maksoi veron palkastaan, jotta valtio saisi aseita ja kaupunki raivaisi puistoja rikkaille ja istuttaisi kukkia patsaiden ympärille.”

A poem by the poetess Katri Vala, who belonged to the Torch Bearer movement, regrets that the working-class district Sörnäinen has no parks (Vala 1934/1947). Today, a small park in Sörnäinen named after Katri Vala is proof that some things have changed since the 1930s.
described as a dormant remainder of a bygone age (Kivimaa 1932: 24–25; see above). Around the turn of the century, the Esplanade had still functioned as a focal point for all classes and for all the inhabitants of the Finnish capital, even though cohabitation in this synecdoche environment was never without its friction, as the analysis of uneasy encounters at the Esplanade in Chapter 4 illustrates. In addition to the Esplanade, particular vantage points, such as the Observatory Hill, and large squares, such as the Railway Square and the Senate Square, had acted as congregators of the most diverse citizens during the major upheavals that shook the city during the early years of the twentieth century. Such centrally located focal points gradually lose their meaning in literature of the 1920s and 1930s. The image of the gravitational urban centre begins to recede, and in some of the most prominent city novels of the late 1920s and the 1930s, it is largely left empty: bereft of symbolic meaning, literary protagonists merely pass it by on the move from one part of the periphery to the other. We still find protagonists arriving at the Helsinki railway station, or bumping into acquaintances in the Esplanade. But increasingly, if the city centre is referred to, it is as a world of commodities, and less and less as representative of the traditional symbols of the city as a meeting place, a market place, or as a potent symbol of community.528

In Mika Waltari’s *Suuri illusioni* (1928), mention is made of the Esplanade and of the street Aleksanterinkatu, the two main arteries of the city, but the characters’ interest in the asphalt of the Esplanade is limited, and when Hart and Hellas meet in one of the legendary cafés in the Esplanade, they are bored by their surroundings (Waltari 1928: 82 ff.). An interesting example of the diminishing importance of the centre is present in one of the pivotal scenes in *Suuri illusioni* discussed above (see Chapter 6), in which the protagonist goes on a car trip from Töölö to Vladimirinkatu to buy illegal liquor. The scene is set at night and the centre of Helsinki is quickly passed by and only tangentially observed by means of the lights that fall through the window of the speeding car. The only thing that is visible is the clock of the railway station, which immediately assumes symbolic power as “the moon of modern times” (ibid.: 22; see section 6.3.).529 No real interaction is possible between such a literary exalted symbol and the protagonist speeding by.

If the diminished importance of the centre is clearly visible in some of the novels and texts focusing on Töölö discussed in the previous chapter, this

---

528 John Goode has described a similar change in the description of literary London, in the differences between Dickens and Gissing. In the latter’s novels, a socially divided city becomes visible: “the city is no longer the meeting-place of the classes; on the contrary, it is the structured space of a separation and abstraction” (Goode 1978/1979: 107) and “the social space of the city [...] is partly organized to keep class relationships to an abstraction – suburbs, ghettos, thoroughfares are all ways of keeping the possibilities of direct confrontation at bay” (ibid: 100; see also Harvey 1989b: 178).

529 “Modernin maiseman kuu [...]”
change is even more apparent when looking at novels describing the life of the working classes in Helsinki. A particularly poignant example is offered by Helvi Hämäläinen’s novel *Katuojan vettä* (“Water in the Gutter”; 1935), which is set in a working-class district immediately adjacent to Sörnäinen, i.e. to the north-east of the centre. In this novel, the centre of the city almost completely recedes out of sight, and it is a locality which is visited only for very specific purposes, for example, to go to the hospital (located at Unioninkatu) to give birth. Various Utopias outside of the city (the Soviet Union, America) exert a far greater fascination on this working-class area’s inhabitants, and when the neighbours of the protagonist Kirsti compare their own environment with that of the better-off, they do not refer to the centre, but, predictably, to the new district of Töölö (Hämäläinen 1935: 224).

7.4.1 THE SHOP WINDOW AND THE CITY AS A “BORDELLO OF CONSUMPTION”

In novels depicting the working class, such as Hämäläinen’s *Katuojan vettä*, it is not the tower that is mentioned first when characters visit the centre, but the shop window, which appears as an embodiment of social difference, and is representative of the transformation of the city centre into a repository of commodity culture. In *Katuojan vettä*, the shop window is quite literally the only element of the city centre that is referred to. To the poor working-class mother Kirsti, the shop window does not embody the “women’s paradise” of the shopping centre in any positive sense, but instead, the impossibility of the protagonist of partaking in the feast of consumption. The narrator describes in detail the opulence displayed in front of the protagonist: the beautiful shoes and clothes, the warm children’s clothes, the books, the fruits: oranges, apples, grapes, the beautifully made pastries – all things she is utterly unable to procure (Hämäläinen 1935: 34). In the 1930s, Helsinki, like much of the Western world, was in the throes of a severe depression, and the mention of the riches on display in shop windows becomes an important symbol of unattainable happiness. This topos is also present in the work of authors such as Iris Uurto and Elvi Sinervo (Juutila-Purokoski 2006: 121; see also Koskela 1999c: 332). The shop window is one of the images in which the city shows itself to be what David Harvey has called in his discussion of Dreiser’s *Sister Carrie* (1900) a “veritable bordello of consumer temptation” in which “money (or the lack of it) becomes itself the measure of distance” (Harvey 1989b: 176).

---

530 Zola’s *Au Bonheur des Dames* (*The Ladies’ Paradise*; 1883) was published in Finnish for the first time in 1912 under the title *Naisten aarreaitta* (literally, the “Treasure trove of women”), and later as *Naisten paratiisi* (literally, “Women’s paradise”), in 1974 (see Kortelainen 2005: 98). The name “women’s paradise” had already been used to describe Stockmann in 1937 (see Hapuli et al. 1992: 107–108).
Towards the Margins. Cumbersome Movement through the Urban Fringes

In Joel Lehtonen’s novel *Rakastunut rampa*, too, in addition to the presence of beckoning images of lights and towers, the centre of Helsinki is featured almost exclusively by a shop window. Similarly to the use of this image in *Katuojan vettä*, the shop window in *Rakastunut rampa* functions as an image for the riches of the city which are unattainable to the working-class woman Nelma as she walks through the centre. It provides the immediate background for the act of seduction which will lead to her moral downfall:

There was no money, no hope... It was evening. The sky was black... rainy snow fell on the street... It would be nice to go into the centre of town, where the lights shone more densely. Nelma walked in thoughts... she stopped in front of the window of some shop. And there a gentleman approached her, young, good-looking, and polite... (Lehtonen 1922/2006: 121–122)\(^{531}\)

The gloomy environment where Nelma lives is juxtaposed with the “bright lights” of the city centre, to which she feels attracted. While standing in front of a shop window, and gazing at the out-of-reach commodities it displays, Nelma is approached by a man from a higher social class as if she were a commodity – she is seduced and eventually becomes pregnant, after which a descent into prostitution seems certain.

### 7.4.2 THE CENTRIFUGAL CITY

The experience of a city in which the centre has become largely stripped of its symbolic meaning, and in which movement to and from areas on the urban fringes attains ever greater importance, give literary Helsinki in this period the appearance of a centrifugal city, defined by movements and representations increasingly fleeing the centre. Several elements contribute to this experience of the city in literature of the 1920s and 1930s. It is enhanced, first of all, by the physical and material layout of the Finnish capital, and by the way this guides Helsinki’s urban development during these years. Situated on a peninsula projecting southwards into the sea, the suburbs expanded out of necessity in the north-eastern and north-western directions once the southern tip of the peninsula had become occupied. As a consequence, both the north-eastern and north-western main roads, and several of the tram lines connecting the various parts of the city, converged upon the centre. Notorious was a traffic node in front of the Student House and the Stockmann department store (the new Stockmann department store

\(^{531}\) “Ei ollut rahaa, ei toivoa... Oli ilta. Taivas musta... Kadulla satoi lumiräntää... Teki mieli keskemmälle kaupunkia, jossa valot kiiltelivät sakeammassa. Nelma käveli ajatuksissaan... pysähtyi jonkin liikkeen ikkunan eteen. Siihen tuli herrasmies, nuori, miellyttävä ja kohtelias.”
was erected in 1930), referred to repeatedly in Henkien taistelu as “the madhouse” (“hullunmylly” or literally “mad mill”) or “merry-go-round” (“karuselli”), which was “the knot of tram lines in front of the Student House that was hard to get across or around on account of the swarming vehicles” (Lehtonen 1933: 549; see also ibid.: 347). Traffic problems were further enhanced by the fact that movement on an east-west axis was mostly blocked by the railway. These specific features of the capital exert a profound influence on the way the city is experienced by Lauri, the protagonist in Iris Uurto’s Kypsyminen (“Maturing”; 1935), who earns his money giving private classes to pupils in different parts of the city:

Helsinki is like a slightly irregular five-pointed star, and he had a pupil at every point; and to get to every tip of the star, he had to pass through the centre. These days, he was always in a hurry and he was leaping those long trips like a madman. (Uurto 1935: 126)

The centrifugal dynamics guiding the experience of literary Helsinki in these years were also informed by developments within literary paradigms and genres. Literary representations of the Finnish capital were not only literally fleeing the centre and becoming more interested in the urban fringes, they were also doing so in a more metaphorical sense and in this respect, they resembled international developments in city literature. Richard Lehan, in The City in Literature (1998), uses the concept of the centrifugal city to describe the paradigm shift from naturalism to literary modernism in terms of a move from the centripetal city to the centrifugal city. Lehan refers first of all to a change in narratorial perspective: “The naturalistic narrator observes forces at work from a centre; the modernist narrator finds the

532 “[…] ‘hullunmyllyyn’ eli ‘karuselliin’, Ylioppilastalon edustalla olevaan raitiolinjain solmuun, josta ei aivan päässyt yli eikä ympäri vilisevien ajoneuvojen.”

533 “Helsinki on kuin hiukan epäsäännöllinen viisihaharainen tähti ja hänellä oli jokaisessa haarassa oppilas; kuhunkin kärkeen piti kiertää keskustan kautta. Nykyään hänellä oli kiire aina ja hän harppaili noita pitkää matkia kuin hullu.”

534 Robert Albert argues that in the course of the nineteenth century, the city had acquired a new, centrifugal character, which what he calls “experiential realism”, pioneered by Flaubert, managed to convey in an innovative manner: “Flaubert […] had succeeded in fashioning an innovative language that could register the compelling, disturbing, and essentially centrifugal character of the new urban realm” (Alter 2005: 42).

The term “centrifugal city” has also been used in urban studies, most prominently perhaps in relation to Los Angeles and to that city’s dispersed urban character (Steiner 1981). It is a notion that has more generally been related to a typical Northern American urban phenomenon, and to the emptying of downtown areas. It will be clear that the Finnish context in the inter-war period is very different. The term has also been used in other contexts; in the collection of urban studies essays De Stad (Dings 2006), for example, the concept of the centrifugal city is used to approach a particular example of urban planning in nineteenth-century Berlin (Meuwissen 2006).
Towards the Margins. Cumbersome Movement through the Urban Fringes

centre becoming more complex and opaque, his or her own vision more subjective” (Lehan 1998: 70). Similar observations can be made about the aestheticizing and interiorizing terms in which experiences of Helsinki were couched in novels discussed in the previous chapter, but also the works of Lehtonen, Uurto, and Hämäläinen can be read as part of an increasing interest in subjective experiences (see Laitinen 1991: 413–416; Perttula 2010: 104). The interest in the urban fringes and in experiences of urban dynamics that flee the centre is concomitant with an increasing reluctance to present a comprehensible, totalizing panoramic view of the city, focusing instead on subjective urban experiences, on the fragmentary and the peripheral.535 Lauri, in Uurto’s *Kypsyminen*, is but one of the many literary characters in this period whose innermost feelings are at the centre of the plot, while his movement through the city is bound up with the urban fringes, and with the tips of that “slightly irregular five-pointed star” formed by Helsinki’s built environment.

The centrifugal dynamics and the symbolic emptying of the centre in Finnish literature in the 1920s and 1930s can be seen as emanations of what Henri Lefebvre has called “abstract space”, the dominant space in capitalist and post-capitalist society. Lefebvre argues that “around 1910 a certain space was shattered” (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 25), and new spatial modes appeared: “abstract spaces”, that can be seen at work in “the disappearance of trees, [...] the receding of nature; [...] the great empty spaces of the state and the military – plazas that resemble parade grounds; [...] commercial centres packed tight with commodities, money and cars” (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 50; see also ibid.: 53, 285).536 Abstract space levels and homogenizes the complex layers of historical space, and reduces differences. In the way it dominates space, it draws all elements of space into a process of commodification.537

535 There are some tentative endeavours to narrate Helsinki in a totalizing and comprehensive manner in this period, but the texts in question are for the most part historical novels. Both Maila Talvio’s historical Helsinki trilogy *Itämaren tytär* ("Daughter of the Baltic"; 1929, 1931, 36) and Mika Waltari’s Helsinki trilogy *Isäästä poikaan* ("From Father to Son"; 1933, 1934, 1935) wanted to present panoramic narratives on Helsinki in the form of historical novels. The only truly synoptic Helsinki novel published in this period is arguably Waltari’s *Surun ja ilon kaupunki* ("City of Sorrow and Joy"; 1936), in which the dichotomy Töölö-Sörnäinen considerably guides the dynamics of the protagonists.

536 Lefebvre is not the first, nor the last, thinker who has positioned a radical shift in spatial experience in the years of his childhood; Raymond Williams traces similar thinking throughout centuries of writing on the loss of an idealized countryside (Williams 1973: 9–12). This does not, however, completely disqualify Lefebvre’s observation that radical spatial changes were indeed taking place during the early twentieth century.

537 The homogenizing process involved in abstract space can be considered as a more radical expansion of the "levelling" brought about by the force of money in the Metropolis, as described by Simmel (1903/1969). The effects of the accelerating expansion of what Lefebvre calls "abstract space" also bear some similarities to the more recent notions of non-places, places set apart from history and
The emptying of the centre found in Finnish Helsinki novels from the 1930s is an instructive example of how literature posits urban forces at work that have managed to “force worrisome groups, the workers among others, out towards the periphery” and “to organize the centre as locus of decision, wealth, power and information” (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 375). In this constellation, the city centre no longer functions as a natural meeting place. Emptied of its symbolic meaning, it becomes filled with consumerism and with politically inspired spectacle.

One highly interesting and eventful attribution of symbolic meaning to the historical centre in this period – as described in Helsinki literature – is the “Farmers’ March” (1930), the extreme-right Lapua movement’s display of power (see section 1.6.). Significantly, it was a spectacle organized and performed primarily by outsiders to the city: one of the aims of the march was to show the moderate and leftist forces in the Finnish capital what the Finnish heartland (or more specifically, the province Ostrobothnia) thought and felt. The description of the Farmers’ March in specific novels goes a long way in telling the narrator’s political leanings, as well as his/her stance on the question whether it would be the city or the country that would have the decisive voice in choosing political directions in 1930s Finland. In Lehtonen’s *Henkien taistelu*, Kleophas Sampila is a detached observer as the farmers march through the city which is not his (Lehtonen 1933: 509–523), but the description is couched, as is the novel as a whole, in profoundly satirical terms. In Arvi Kivimaa’s novel *Viheriöivä risti* (“The Blooming Cross”; 1939), the march is juxtaposed with the protagonist’s confused thoughts following the birth of his child, but it is tempting to interpret the juxtaposition in this novel of a new birth and the Farmers’ March as an indication that the narrator welcomes the countryside’s call to action. No dissonant voices in the “jubilant crowd” are recorded (Kivimaa 1939: 259), and not much later, the protagonist turns his back on the city to take up the position of a doctor in a small countryside parish. Juhani, in Mika Waltari’s *Palava nuoruus* (1935: 385 ff.), looks at the marching farmers with detachment, certain only of the fact that he is living a historical moment (ibid.: 386), but although he voices some doubts about the Lapua movement’s methods, nothing in the description indicates that a large part of the Helsinki population would not have been waving their handkerchiefs and hats at those “men of the countryside with their tanned and hardened faces” (ibid.).

The Farmers’ March is a revealing example of how spectacles endeavour to control and dominate urban public space, not in the least since it was modelled on the parade through Helsinki organized by the victorious white army in 1918. This parade, too, was organized in part as a celebration of the victory of a particular kind of rural (and in part Ostrobothnian) Finland over contrasted with “places of identity, of relations and of history”; a concept developed by Marc Augé (Augé 1992/1995: 43), and to Edward Relph’s notion of placelessness (1976).

538 “[...] riemuitsevasta ihmisjoukosta [...]”
what to a certain degree was a particular kind of urban Finland, and it features in several Finnish novels and short stories written in the 1920s and 1930s. In Waltari’s *Palava nuoruus*, it features in relation to a third parade: the celebratory parade that was organized to commemorate the fifteenth anniversary of the Victors’ Parade in 1933. The sight has a profound effect on the protagonist Juhani, and while looking at the passing army regiments, he remembers his feelings as a child when watching the same men marching through the capital for the first time. Again, the description shows a unified picture of the 1918 celebration: “he remembered the sunny picture of the first great parade of the Finnish army, resplendent with flowers, flying flags and delirious, thoughtless delight from his childhood” (Waltari 1935: 452). Similarly to Leo in *Viheriöivä risti*, his experience is swiftly followed by what could be understood as a response to the call of what is described as the “farmers’ army” (ibid.), in a clear echo of the “Farmers’ March” Juhani witnessed in 1930. Not much later, he feels “an overwhelming desire to go there, where all of their power had come from originally” (ibid.: 455), and he travels back to the farm where his family originally started out from on their journey to Helsinki.

Dissenting voices about how rightist endeavours to dominate the capital’s public space, such as the 1918 parade and the 1930 Farmers’ March, were experienced can be found in a number of prose texts from this period. The description of the Victors’ Parade in the final passage of Joel Lehtonen’s novel *Punainen mies* (“Red Man”), for example, gives a profoundly satirical view of the events (Lehtonen 1925/2008: 649–651; see also Palmgren 1989:

---

539 In the work of popular novelist Elsa Soini, both parades are featured: in her debut novel *Oli kerran nuori tyttö* (“Once there was a young girl”; 1923), there is an ecstatic description of the 1918 parade (Soini 1923: 265–270), and in the novel *Rouva johtaja* (“Mrs. Director”) an equally euphoric experience of the 1930 Farmers’ March (Soini 1932: 289) (see Liuttu 1950: 72–73; Palmgren 1989: 102, 132).

540 “[…] mieleen kohosi lapsuuden aurinkoinen, kukkia, hulmuavia lippuja ja haltioitunutta, ajatuksetonta riemua säätelevä kuva Suomen armeijan ensimmäisestä suuresta paraatista.”

541 “[…] valtavan kaipuun sinne, mistä heidän kaikkien voimansa oli alkuaan lähtenyt […]”

The solutions offered in Kivimaa’s *Viheriöivä risti* and Waltari’s trilogy have been seen as part of a more general development in the 1930s, when authors that had earlier thematized the city turned increasingly to countryside thematics, a move that can be rooted in the patriotic and rightist atmosphere (see Koskela 1999c: 332).

An interesting postscript to the experience of the 1918 parade was written by Waltari in the educational booklet *Helsinki kautta vuosisatojen* (“Helsinki through the centuries”; 1937). In describing the events of the first decades of the twentieth century, Waltari reused material and characters from his Helsinki trilogy, but the description of the 1918 parade is not as unequivocally positive: the protagonist’s grandfather tells the boy Juhani that, regardless of the joyous atmosphere, he feels sad, since “there are thousands, for whom this day is a disconsolate day of disillusion” (Waltari 1937: 90). For his primary school audience, Waltari seems to have consciously tried to construct a past in which both the winners and losers of the Civil War have their place.
103) that resonates with the description of the Farmers’ March in * Henkien taistelu*. And the working class, in turn, took occasional possession of the symbolic potential of the city centre, as in, for example, a short story in Sinervo’s *Runo Sörnäisistä* (“Poem about Sörnäinen”; 1937), in which a girl remembers a triumphant May Day march (Sinervo 1937: 38).

### 7.5 HAMPERED MOBILITY

The transformation of the city into a “bordello of consumer temptation” was, according to David Harvey, also commensurate with the extent to which “money (or the lack of it) becomes itself the measure of distance” (Harvey 1989b: 176). In Finnish literature of this period there is a striking correlation between belonging to the less privileged social classes and experiences of hampered physical mobility in the capital. In the Torch Bearer inspired literature of the late 1920s and 1930s, heightened speed and mobility were symptomatic of the inner drive of the characters, of their interest in modernity, urbanity, and the exotic, but also indicative of their social class. The exceptionally large range of mobility and described urban geography, for example, in Waltari’s novel *Appelsiininsiemen* (“The Orange Seed”; 1931), especially from the perspective of the female protagonist Irene, is indicative of the literary characters’ desires and dreams, but also of their social class and the possibilities engendered by membership in the upper social strata. Running parallel to texts inspired by Torch Bearer aesthetics, however, a whole literature of the urban margins comes into view during these same years; a literature which is more concerned with the extending horizontal plane of urban sprawl, and with experiences of cumbersome movement and severely hampered mobility.

A case in point is the description of the young woman Kirsti in Helvi Hämäläinen’s *Katuojan vettä* (“Water in the Gutter”; 1935). In the very beginning of this novel, there is a description of severely impinged mobility, in which the protagonist Kirsti is described while she is dragging her cumbersome belongings through the snow on her way to the railway station from where she will take the train to Helsinki. She has only recently been fired from her white-collar job because she is pregnant. With an absent husband and no savings or financially supportive family, she finds herself fast on a downward social track. Throughout the novel, images of cumbersome movement reappear at crucial stages. When, in the latest phase of her pregnancy, she goes to the maternity institution (at the centrally located Unioninkatu), she walks with great difficulty through dark and snowy Helsinki. Rather than spending the little money she has on a tram ticket, she decides to walk the distance, and her difficulty of movement is described at considerable length (Hämäläinen 1935: 33–35). Legally, too, Kirsti’s mobility is restricted: her husband has left her, but as long as they are married, Kirsti falls under the authorities of her husband’s home town, and it is this place
she is supposed to go to if she wants poor relief. The difficulty of movement in *Katuojan vettä* is related, in particular, to movement from the periphery to the centre, not so much because extensive distances have to be crossed, but because Kirsti lacks the money to spend on public transport. There are also material reasons why Kirsti feels ill at ease moving in the centre: her clothes and shoes are in a poor state, and as a result, “while moving in the centre of the city, she received the kind of glances reserved for suspicious and badly-dressed creatures” (Hämäläinen 1935: 138). Physically, too, she begins to change through the hard manual work, and her body becomes deformed (ibid.: 158).

Apart from Kirsti in *Katuojan vettä* and Sakris Kukkelman in *Rakastunut rampa*, there is a whole range of literary characters who, due to a variety of causes, exhibit a degree of deformity which has its effect on the way they move through their urban environment. In most prose texts, social class takes on a central role in the factors leading to hampered mobility. This is the case, for example, in the short story “Lentolehtiset” (“Pamflets”), in Elvi Sinervo’s *Runo Söörnäisistä*; in which a communist agitator is literally crippled by a police horse during a demonstration (Sinervo 1937: 66). A sense of restricted mobility, however, is not only felt by this individual character, but also by the girl Anna in the same story, and by the working class as a whole, which was “in a way in the same state as Anna, crippled by what had hit it, didn’t dare to do anything, didn’t want anything” (ibid.: 71). In this story, the debilitating effects of the losses incurred during the Civil War are still felt by the unprivileged. Other examples of crippled characters are the blind war veteran of the Crimean War, who is eventually run over by a car on the Long Bridge, in a 1917 short story by Toivo Tarvas (see Chapter 5), and the old man, crippled by sorrow, who is hit by a car in front of the Helsinki railway station where he has just arrived, in Waltari’s *Surun ja ilon kaupunki* (1936). Both of these working-class characters are overtaken by modernizing society. A particular case is Kalle, in Matti Kurjensaari’s 1930s student novel *Tie Helsinkiin* (“The Road to Helsinki”; 1937). This sickly student is repeatedly described as having difficulties to walk the streets of Helsinki because of a medical condition, but he is also sexually frustrated and crippled by poverty. His plight is that of a generation of Finnish young men and women trying to move upwards in society in the decades between the wars (Laitinen 1963: 7). Kalle’s friend, the novel’s protagonist, expresses their
predicament as follows: “All our ability to act was broken by an appalling and incessant lack of money. We were like cripples watching from the sidelines how others moved.” (Kurjensaari 1937: 45)

In a number of texts by Iris Uurto, too, questions of class find their expression in the crippled mobility of the protagonists. This is the case on a very material level, for example, for the protagonist Lauri, in Kypsyminen ("Maturing"; 1935), the student mentioned above. A part-time flâneur, not all his city walks are performed voluntarily. Because of lack of money, he rarely takes the tram but instead covers the considerable distances he has to cross in the capital on foot (Uurto 1935: 154). In between lessons, he rarely has time to return home to his peripherally located rented room, which means he is forced to spend his time idling around, a situation which angers him and gives him the feeling that his life is out of joint: “How disjointed is my life, an hour here, another one there, and always running around through the city” (Uurto 1935: 49). Lauri’s difficulties in terms of mobility, however, run much deeper. He is repeatedly described as unable to move, and lying on his bed in a state of utter lethargy (ibid.: 192, 231, 314, 387). This immobility is in part brought about by feelings of depression due to his unhappy love, but also related to Lauri’s in-between position in society: educated, he is unable to work with his hands, but he does not have the possibility of turning his knowledge into financial profit, either, and he explicitly states that this social position is at the root of his unsuccessful love (ibid.: 349). Lauri is not the only character in the novel who displays a “lethargic passivity” that enraged some readers (Väre 1946: 26). Lauri’s friend Niilo is also an in-between character, but one who has made the reverse social journey: as an educated member of the working class, he feels pulled in two opposing directions, with lethargy as the result: Niilo confides to Lauri that he dreams of spending his life lying down, but regrets it is impossible (Uurto 1935: 72). In the sequel to the novel, Rakkaus ja pelko ("Love and Fear"; 1936), the same characters again take central stage (this time Lauri’s sister Kaari is the focal point of the narration), and their difficulties in taking their lives in their own hands is repeatedly juxtaposed with descriptions of how they are lying in bed or lounging on couches (Uurto 1936: 34, 51, 61). Again, the characters’ passivity is related to the difficulties they encounter in fulfilling themselves – difficulties that stem, in part, from sexual and moral conventions of the society in which they live, but also from class differences.

545 “Meidän kaiken aloitekykymme mursi kaamea ja alituinen rahattomuus. Me olimme kuin rampoja, jotka katselivat sivusta muiten liikkumista.”

546 “Onpa minun elämäni hajallista, tunti silloin, toinen taas erikseen, aina harppailla yli kaupungin.”
7.5.1 A DIVIDED CITY: CLASS AND GENDER

Movement through the city, and the way in which this movement is impeded or experienced as difficult, is also, of course, closely related to the gender of the city walker. The analysis of the experiences of female city walkers in Helsinki around the turn of the century, in the chapter “The Fateful Esplanade”, shows how literary instances of women being harassed in the capital’s public space during these years typically carried a clear message of social, moral or even political indignation. In literature of the 1920s and 1930s, unpleasant encounters in urban public space are framed within a rather different discourse, and more often than not, they are used as illustrations of an unbridgeable moral or social divide. The evil that befalls women in Helsinki’s public space does not function, in this context, as a wake-up call to change social injustice, but as a reminder of social realities.

A socially divided city is visible, for example, in the encounters by women in the Helsinki of Mika Waltari’s 1920s and 1930s novels. In almost all of these novels, there are descriptions of women being harassed and, in some cases, raped in a public or semi-public space, but little in the way of moral indignation is expressed by the narrator. A symptomatic example can be found in Waltari’s debut novel *Suuri illusio* (“The Great Illusion”; 1928). When Hart and Caritas go by taxi to a working-class home to buy illegal liquor, the working-class woman they meet tells them that her little daughter sells liquor on the streets, and that she is sometimes harassed by upper-class men. She insinuates that one of them has tried to rape the girl (Waltari 1928: 23). To Hart and Caritas, the whole scene is merely interesting as an example of urban working-class conditions, not as a reminder that anything should or could be done: “This is kind of an adventure. And such a cute little girl!” 547 Caritas exclaims when they are back in the car (ibid.).

In Waltari’s subsequent Helsinki novel, *Appelsiininsiemen* (“The Orange Seed”; 1931), there are again repeated instances in which references are made to women being harassed in Helsinki’s public space. The threat of gendered violence is repeatedly related to transgressions of class boundaries. At the beginning of the novel, the charm of the April evening is compared by the middle class protagonist Irene to the exciting moment when she is approached by a working-class man on the streets – dangerous, but also arousing (Waltari 1931: 20). Towards the end of the novel, a shocking case of gang rape is recounted, which involves one of the students of Irene’s father, a university professor, who has secretly and platonically fallen in love with an innocent-looking student. During an intermission at a concert at the University, the professor overhears people telling the story in question. At first he is hardly moved, and revealingly, the reason for his indifference is that he considers the event to be not more than “a sign of all those things, of which he was already certain: that they lived in times that were brutal and

547 “Tämä on seikkailua tavallaan. Ja niin suloinen pikku tyttö.”

278
pitiless” (ibid: 451). The only reason why he is moved slightly more than usually is that “it concerned an educated girl, a student” (ibid.). To the professor, violence against working-class women is not something by which he is moved, let alone something which would lead him to consider taking measures. When someone from the educated class is involved, however, his interest is awakened.

The description in *Appelsiininsiemen* of the terrible events which had befallen the female student, who turns out to be the object of the professor’s idealized love, revolves again around class and the perception of class. On the fateful night, the girl had been visiting acquaintances in the district of Munkkiniemi – to the north-west of the Helsinki centre – and was walking back late in the evening to a tram stop. A group of men forced her into a car, raped her, and subsequently left her in the working-class district of Sörnäinen. Interestingly, the reason, as proposed by the gossiping people standing near the professor, why the men had picked this particular girl, was that the men had “perhaps thought that she was some sort of servant girl or a normal [sic] fallen woman” (ibid.). It is a trail of thought which reveals the speakers’ world view: shocking is not so much what had happened in itself, but that the person involved was from the educated class, and had apparently been mistaken for a working-class girl. The events themselves are considered normal by the speakers, and would not have been the subject of conversation if the victim had been a “servant girl or a normal fallen woman”. The conversation, moreover, strengthens a sense of social geography, in which the working-class district of Sörnäinen appears as a particularly dangerous area; in the same conversation, a story is told of a “bloke with a venereal disease who had tried to rape an eight-year-old” girl in Sörnäinen (ibid.).

In *Sielu ja liekki* (“The Soul and the Flame”; 1934), the second part of Waltari’s Helsinki trilogy, a mini-story recounts how a country girl comes to Helsinki, is seduced and raped. The story, set in the years of the Great Strike and the Viapori rebellion, is recounted from the point of view of the protagonist Toivo, a vicar. It is remarkably similar to the tales of seduction found in literature from the turn of the century – a young girl moves to the city, is seduced and/or raped and becomes pregnant – but the conclusion drawn by the narrator is very different from these earlier stories. The case “gave Toivo a deeper insight into life on the city’s fringes than ever before”

---

548 “[...] vain merkki kaikesta tuosta, mistä hän jo aikaisemmin oli varma, että aika oli raaka ja armoton [...]”
549 “[...] kysymyksessä oli sivistynyt tyttö, ylioppilas.”
550 “[...] olivat ehkä luulleet joksikin palvelustytöksi tai tavalliseksi huonoksi naiseksi [...]”
551 “[...] sukulontautainen jätäkä, joka yritti raiskata kahteksasvutoista tyttöä [...]”
552 The novel can be considered a historical novel, since it is set in the years of the Great Strike and the Viapori rebellion, although it was written decades after these events.
Towards the Margins. Cumbersome Movement through the Urban Fringes

(Waltari 1934: 323). Toivo does not blame the man who had seduced the girl, then made her drink alcohol, dragged her to a shed, and raped her, nor does he fundamentally consider how the structures of society underlying such events could be changed, as Henrik in Järnefelt’s *Veljekset* (“Brothers”; 1900), Hannes in the same author’s *Veneh’ojalaiset* (“The Family Veneh’ojalaiset”; 1909), or Markus in Kyösti Wilkuna’s *Vaikea tie* (“The Difficult Road”; 1915) would do. Instead, he ponders the motives of the girl; he is not sure whether her tale is an expression of innocence or stupidity; eventually he decides “that the strange, fabulous city life had drugged the senses of the girl, so that she didn’t know what she did” (Waltari 1934: 324).

The way in which rape and the harassment of women in urban public space is represented in Waltari’s oeuvre in the 1920s and 1930s is interesting also from the perspective of a discourse on the “new woman” and a new kind of relationship between men and women based on equality and comradeship, which authors such as Waltari and other contemporary authors such as Arvi Kivimaa have been claimed to represent. In Waltari’s 1920s and 1930s Helsinki novels, women such as Caritas, as well as the girlfriend of the protagonist’s little brother in *Suuri illusioni*, Irene in *Appelsiininsiemen*, and Sisar Sunnila in *Surun ja ilon kaupunki* have all attained a measure of independence, and in their relationships, men and women pay lip service to equality. Behind a new and relative independence and a new kind of relationship based on being soul mates, however, lies a radical class-divide. This is something Aarne, in *Surun ja ilon kaupunki*, the working-class man who is in love with the upper class girl Sisar, learns to his dismay. To Aarne, the centre of Helsinki constitutes a place where he, as a member of the working class, is not at ease: when going to the main library in the centre “he always went walking fast, slipping past passers-by, with his hands deep in his pockets and his hat over his eyes” (Waltari 1936: 75).

553 “Tämä kohtaus antoi Toivon silmätä syvemmälle laitakaupungin elämään kuin koskaan aikaisemmin.”

554 “[…] että vieras, komea kaupunkilaiselämä oli huumanut tytön aistit, niin ettei hän tienne mitä teki.”

555 In one of the few doctoral dissertations devoted to Waltari’s work to date, Taru Tapioharju focuses on the discourse concerning the “new woman” in Mika Waltari’s 1920s and 1930s Helsinki novels (Tapioharju 2010). Tapioharju only tangentially refers to class differences, and focuses mostly on the middle class experiences of the novels’ protagonist. This approach obscures the extent to which the gendered geography of fear in 1920s and 1930s Helsinki was defined by class – as well as the lack of narratorial concern which is expressed in Waltari’s novels in relation to the harassment of women in Helsinki’s public space. A more recent dissertation concerning Waltari’s early works, Juha Järvelä’s *Waltari ja sukupuolten maailmat* (“Waltari and gendered worlds”; 2013), focuses on gender questions and masculinity, discussing questions of urban representations in literature only in passing.

556 “[…] sinne hän meni aina nopeasti kävellen, livahdellen vastaantulijain ohitse, kädet syvällä taskuissa ja hattu silmillä.”
appears as a more or less class-neutral environment, in which Aarne is able to cross the social divide and become acquainted with Sisar Sunnila, the daughter of a factory director. Outside the library, however, there is a divided world order. Whereas Aarne feels uncomfortable in the centre of the city, the presence of Sisar is not accepted in the working-class cafés Aarne frequents, and they can only meet in secret in places on the urban fringes, such as the waterfront (ibid.: 79–80). In a final meeting in Kaisaniemi Park, the situation comes to a head when, consumed by his impossible love, Aarne tries to forcibly embrace the girl. Sisar slaps him in the face, and their ways part. To Aarne, Helsinki has no future to offer, and he leaves the city.

7.6 A HOME ON THE MARGINS?

Henri Lefebvre suggest that all cities have “an underground and repressed life, and hence an ‘unconscious’ of its own” (Lefebvre 1974/1991: 36). In several novels and short stories that appeared in the 1920s and 1930s and thematized Helsinki, this urban unconscious appears as often distinctly uncanny images of crippled figures, landscapes and buildings, through which characters are cumbersomely making their way. Helsinki novels and short stories in these decades are not only concerned with speed and with accelerating mobility; on the contrary: during these years, a whole range of city novels and short stories come into being that depict the impeded mobility – both concrete, and socially – of marginalized characters.

In all the novels discussed in this chapter, the experience of the capital is permeated by a sense of class, and it is class or class struggle that looms large in the background of the trajectories taken by characters such as Sakris in Joel Lehtonen’s Rakastunut rampa, Kirsti in Helvi Hämäläinen’s Katuojan vettä and Lauri in Iris Uurto’s Kypsyminen. The cumbersome movement of these characters through the city, and their often downward social trajectories in the city, would seem to warrant the conclusion that for lower-class characters, the experience of Helsinki is a distinctly pessimistic and dystopian one. Not only are the urban fringes described – like the people that inhabit them – in terms of deformity, poverty and disease, they are also repeatedly portrayed as generic and nondescriptive. The street where Kirsti lives in Katuojan vettä, for example, is described by a visiting doctor as indistinguishable from other similar streets: “Is it here? [...] These small streets on the outskirts of the city are so hard to distinguish from each other” (Hämäläinen 1935: 228).557 Similarly, in the opening story of the collection of stories in Sinervo’s Runo Sööräisistä (“Poem about Sörnäinen”; 1937), the narrator describes the wooden houses in one working-class street as “all the same” (Sinervo 1937: 5).558 These suburban fringes are portrayed as a generic

557 “Täälläkö se on? [...] Näistä laitakaupungin pikkukaduista ei tahdo saada selvää.”
558 “Kaikki puutalot ovat samanlaisia [...]”
Towards the Margins. Cumbersome Movement through the Urban Fringes

environment, displaying characteristics of what Edward Relph has described with the term “placelessness” (Relph 1976: 79–121); Relph uses the term to denote (mostly industrialized) environments that lack “diverse landscapes and significant places” and that are defined by “[c]ultural and geographical uniformity” and by inauthenticity (ibid.: 79, 80–89).

If one were to give the final word, however, to the extradiegetic narrators in Sinervo’s Runo Söörnäisistä or in Lehtonen’s Rakastunut rampa, or to the outsider perspective of the doctor in Hämäläinen’s Katuojan vettä, this would be to miss an important point concerning the experience of the city in these novels. The urban fringes that are repeatedly portrayed by outsiders as generic and nondescript are also portrayed as homely and infused with individual stories and emotions, and even the most dystopian environment can be experienced as a home for the people who inhabit it. Krokelby is a case in point. For all its terrible defects, Krokelby in Rakastunut rampa (“A Cripple in Love”; 1922) is repeatedly described lovingly. In the summer, even the houses in Krokelby are described as beautiful and homely (Lehtonen 1922/2006: 144) and the natural beauty is repeatedly portrayed without the downgrading tone of irony or satire. Tellingly, Sakris does not want to move away from these surroundings: he dreams of a place for him and his beloved Nelma not far from Krokelby, near the Vantaa River rapids (Lehtonen 1922/2006: 131).

The sense of attachment to everyday urban environments visible in several of the above novels is in part related to their genre. Several of these prose texts are, in terms of genre, much closer to what Blanche Gelfant has called the “ecological novel”, a novel that “focuses upon one small spatial unit such as a neighbourhood or city block and explores in detail the manner of life identified with this place” (Gelfant 1954: 11; see section 5.6.), than to the “synoptic novel”, the city novel that lacks a clearly identifiable hero, and “which reveals the total city immediately as a personality in itself” (ibid.). Helvi Hämäläinen’s Katuojan vettä, Joel Lehtonen’s Rakastunut rampa and several of the texts by Elvi Sinervo in Runo Söörnäisistä, with their limited perspective and focus on a very limited area in the city – sometimes as small as one house, street, or block of houses – bear many traits of the ecological novel. In ecological novels, the dystopian characteristics of the city as a whole tend to be offset or at least temporarily suspended by the sense of place that everyday and often communal experiences of dwelling and making-do is able to confer to the bleakest of environments. As Relph points out, “superficial expressions of placelessness are far from being an infallible guide to deeper attitudes; being lived-in confers some authenticity on even the most trivial and unrelentingly uniform landscapes” (Relph 1976: 80). In all of the examples above, the view of the environment as typified by “placelessness” is

559 The third category of the city novel distinguished by Gelfant is the portrait novel which “reveals the city through a single character, usually a country youth first discovering the city as a place and manner of life” (Gelfant 1954: 11).
not shared by the people inhabiting these districts. Kirsti, in *Katuojan vettä*, becomes a member of a closely-knit society with a strong sense of communal solidarity. Similarly, in *Runo Söörnäisistä*, the inhabitants of the outskirts of the city are described as having an intimate knowledge of the secrets of that particular area, especially from the viewpoint of children: young Veera, for example, introduces her friend, the I-narrator of the story “Veera”, to the “secrets of the outskirts of the city” (Sinervo 1937: 31).

For a native of Helsinki, the city is able to offer some consolation even in conditions of poverty and unemployment. Lauri, the protagonist in Iris Uurto’s *Kypsyminen* (“Maturing”; 1935), considers with a sting of self-irony when he wanders the city in search of a job: “I also still have one particular right in this birth city of mine: I am allowed to walk on the shady part of the street” (Uurto 1935: 335). This statement may at first sight seem purely ironical, but regardless of his difficulties in Helsinki, Lauri feels a profound sense of attachment to his home city, which surfaces occasionally during the narrative. The most explicit passage occurs when Lauri returns home after some time in the countryside, which he experienced as particularly depressing. When watching the urban panorama from the threshold of the railway station, he feels joy and almost gratitude, and when he starts to walk, the experience is described as “real pleasure from the city” (ibid.: 393). In part, this happiness is related to the fact that what Lauri sees around him in the city are things he desires but has not (yet) attained, and which for him are embodied in the tram: “speed, easy velocity, collectivity” (ibid.).

---

560 “[…] laitukaupungin salaisuudet.”
561 “Onpa minulla vielä myöskin eräs oikeus tässä syntymäkaupungissani, voin kulkea varjonpuolella katua.”
562 “[…] tunsii suorastaan nautintona kaupungista […]”
563 “[…] nopeus, vaivaton vauhti, yhteisyys [...]”
8 CONCLUSION

This dissertation analyses the experiences of Helsinki in prose literature written in Finnish in the period 1889–1941. It analyses the relationships that are formed between Helsinki and the fictional characters in a selection of novels and short stories, focusing, in particular, on the way in which urban public space is experienced. The primary material consists of a selection of some sixty novels, collections of short stories and individual short stories. In terms of theory, this study draws on two sets of frameworks: on the one hand, the expanding field of literary studies of the city, and on the other hand, theoretical concepts provided by humanistic and critical geography, as well as by urban studies.

As the analysis chapters show, a first and crucial observation is that Helsinki literature written in Finnish during these years contains a range of urban experiences that is much more complex than contemporary critics have claimed, or than would appear from the limited attention that has been given to literary Helsinki during most of the twentieth century. Contrary to the depreciative idea of literary Helsinki as an eternal Cinderella, an idea which occurs repeatedly during these decades, Finnish prose literature set in Helsinki and thematizing the Finnish capital in this period is conspicuously rich, both in quantitative terms and in the range of experiences it covers. Several novels published during this period can aspire to the title of a fully-fledged Helsinki novel, with Arvid Järnefelt’s *Veneh’ojalaiset* (“The Family Veneh’oja”; 1909) as arguably the first candidate for the title of a Great Helsinki Novel. In the 1910s, several more texts that could be read predominantly as city novels appear in quick succession: Eino Leino’s *Pankkiherroja* (“Bank Lords”; 1914), Maila Talvio’s *Niniven lapset* (“Children of Nineveh”; 1915); Toivo Tarvas’s *Eri tasoilta* (“On Different Levels”; 1916) and *Kohtalon tuulissa* (“The Winds of Fate”; 1916). What these novels have in common is that most literary critics have not read them predominantly as city novels, although the plot in all cases revolves around the ways in which the protagonist(s) come(s) to grip with the city. In the 1920s and 1930s, again, a number of prose texts appear that can be considered as city novels: Joel Lehtonen’s *Henkien taistelu* (“Battle of the Spirits”; 1933), several of the novels written by Iris Uurto, as well as novels by Unto Karri, Arvi Kivimaa and Mika Waltari. The only works that have been read mostly as Helsinki novels are those by Mika Waltari and other authors associated with the Torch Bearer movement, such as Karri and Kivimaa.

This dissertation is not, however, primarily concerned with the image of Helsinki in Finnish literature as such, but with the experience of the city in these texts, and with the relationship between the urban perceiver and the urban perceived in Helsinki literature. The fundamental urban experience in
Finnish prose literature written around the turn of the twentieth century is that of the shock induced by arrival in the disorientating city. Juhani Aho’s novella *Helsinkiin* (1889) can be considered as a prototypical text in this respect. The disorientating and in part paralyzing shock of arrival experienced by Antti Ljungberg, the protagonist in *Helsinkiin*, reverberates with the collision of different spatial and temporal dimensions: a cyclical, agrarian society running head-on into the more linear spatial experience of the modern city. In the context of international literature of the city, the experiences of Antti and similar characters in Finnish prose fiction of the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries fit into the pattern of the “Young Man/Woman of the Provinces” novels (following Chanda 1981), which describe the move of ambitious provincials to the metropolis. The shock of arrival must also be understood as rooted in the dystopian and entropic visions of naturalist and decadent literature, in which the city is experienced as an alienating and degenerating environment.

The everyday experiences of urban public space in the selected prose texts depend largely on the class, gender, and even on the political and linguistic background of the literary character in question. The centrally located Esplanade, in particular, can be considered as a pivotal environment, crucial for an understanding of how differently Helsinki’s public space was experienced by people from various backgrounds. In literature, the Esplanade constitutes a microcosm of all of Helsinki and appears as a “shorthand expression” of the city (following Wohl & Strauss 1958). For the bourgeoisie, a walk along the Esplanade at the appropriate moment amounts to a ritual that affirms one’s status and position in society. The fact that this environment is, in particular around the turn of the century, also the main area in which Helsinki’s street prostitution was carried out, leads to a number of revealing misunderstandings concerning the unwritten rules governing the use of public space. In the analysis of Eino Leino’s novel *Jaana Rönty*, one further dimension of the experience of Helsinki’s public space in this period becomes evident: the tense political situation in the Finnish capital during these years.

In prose texts that appear during the first decades of the twentieth century, Helsinki is experienced as a space in motion. The Finnish capital is depicted as an expanding and transforming city, with new streets being laid out and stone houses replacing dilapidated wooden sheds. In texts such as Toivo Tarvas’ *Häviävää Helsinkiä* (“Disappearing Helsinki”; 1917), Helsinki is also described as a disappearing city, and inhabitants of the city see beloved places being swept away by the forces of modernity. The accelerating transformations visible in Helsinki are intimately bound up with the strained socio-political situation. Arvid Järnefelt’s novel *Veneh’ojalaiset* (1909) presents a kaleidoscopic panorama of the various experiences evoked by Helsinki during these volatile years. In the early twentieth century, the political tension of the “Frost Years”, the first period of Russian oppression, transforms the experience of Helsinki into something that borders on the
Conclusion

ecstatic, but also on the apocalyptic. In several prose texts, Järnefelt’s *Veneh’ojalaiset*, in particular, the sense of an urban world falling to pieces is not entirely pessimistic, but exists side by side with feelings of a strong attachment to characters’ urban surroundings.

The socio-political conditions particular to Helsinki in the early decades of the twentieth century infuse the literature of the Finnish capital with an unmistakable and distinct atmosphere, setting it apart from other contemporary literary cities. Other elements, too, can be singled out as distinct for literary Helsinki in the early twentieth century. Apart from a few exceptions to confirm the rule, most literary characters in Helsinki novels in Finnish in the period 1889–1919 are outsiders to the capital. Two other aspects that should be stressed in identifying elements typical of Helsinki are the relative smallness of the city during most of this period, especially when compared to other European capitals, as well as the setting of the Finnish capital on a peninsula, and the resulting importance of waterscapes in the literary discourse on Helsinki. In literature, the city is repeatedly associated with the (Baltic) sea, and in novels such as Järnefelt’s *Veneh’ojalaiset*, the long shore line of the Finnish capital takes on aspects of a liminal space, in which boundaries are transgressed and potent secrets of the city revealed.

Helsinki literature of the 1920s and 1930s further develops the defining traits that take form around the turn of the century, and adds a number of new thematic and stylistic nuances. In novels by authors such as Mika Waltari, Iris Uurto and Arvi Kivimaa, the city experience is explicitly thematized, and, more importantly, the urban experience is increasingly aestheticized and internalized. The internalization of the urban experience and the appearance of particular motifs such as the nocturnal car drive through the city give rise to specific narrative techniques through which the innermost emotions of the literary characters are rendered. In Mika Waltari’s debut novel *Suuri illusioni* (“The Great Illusion”; 1928), in particular, the city appears as a catalyst of plot developments, and functions as the privileged subject matter of the characters’ discussions and imagination. As a lived environment, it becomes intimately intertwined with the protagonists’ consciousness.

During these decades, a rupture in the way the Finnish capital is experienced in literature becomes visible. This rupture is not, as often ascertained, primarily situated in the works of the Torch Bearers or prose authors writing in their wake. Rather, the new literary approaches to the Finnish capital can be found in literary works that explore a two-fold periphery: on the one hand, novels that describe marginalized city dwellers and city spaces, and on the other hand, texts that make use of literary genres that until then had been fairly marginal. Joel Lehtonen’s novel *Henkien taistelu* can be considered as a key novel in the way it explores new, hitherto peripheral terrain on the fringes of Helsinki, and particularly in the way it makes innovative use of an unusual literary genre, the Menippean satire.
As the description of the city moves inwards, the experience of Helsinki becomes increasingly dominated by a sense of centrifugal dynamics. The analysis of literary descriptions of spatial movement reveals to what extent Helsinki in 1930s literature is described in terms of relations, directions and thresholds. New city districts assume the role of central environments in the city novels and prose stories during these decades, and the importance of the city centre gradually diminishes. The district Töölö becomes the symbol of a New Helsinki and of a new, middle class urban experience. In addition to literature centred on Töölö and middle class experiences of Helsinki, the 1920s and 1930s witness an increasing number of texts exploring working class areas such as Vallila, Sörnäinen and Punavuori, as well as the expanding suburban fringes of the city. Several of the characters in the prose texts describing these social and/or geographical margins of the city display difficulties in their movement through urban public space. In texts such as Joel Lehtonen’s *Rakastunut rampa* (“A Cripple in Love”; 1922), Helvi Hämäläinen’s *Katuojan vettä* (“Water in the Gutter”; 1935) and Iris Uurto’s *Kypsyminen* (“Maturing”; 1935), hampered mobility becomes the symbol of the difficulties characters experience in rising above the limitations imposed by class or by the moral boundaries set by society.

One final conclusion to be drawn is the profound sense of attachment to the city which permeates many of the Helsinki prose texts written during this whole period. Even in the most pessimistic Young Man/Woman from the Provinces novels, an optimistic view of the city is present at least in the form of a potential future in the capital. The distinctly negative experiences of many turn-of-the-twentieth-century characters, whose environments are forcibly transformed by modernization and industrialization, are also, paradoxically, rooted in a profound sense of attachment to environments that are experienced as intimately known and even beloved.

Many of the central characteristics of how Helsinki is experienced in the literature published during this period (1889–1941) remain part of the ongoing discourse on literary Helsinki: Helsinki as a city of leisure and light, inviting dreamy wanderings; the experience of a city divided along the fraction lines of gender, class and language; the city as a disorientating and paralyzing cesspit of vice; the city as an imago mundi, symbolic of the body politic; the city of everyday and often very mundane experiences, and the city that invites a profound sense of attachment – an environment onto which characters project their innermost sentiments.
9 REFERENCES

9.1 PRIMARY SOURCES

Aho, Juhani 1890/2003: *Yksin*. Helsinki: SKS.
Aho, Juhani 1891a: “Hätääkärsivien hyväksi.” In *Uusi kuvaletti* 1891/12, 94.


e. 1893: “Hanna Toivosen ystävä.” In *Koti ja yhteiskunta* 1893/6–7, 80–82.
Hämäläinen, Helvi 1941a: *Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä I*. Porvoo: Werner Söderström.
Hämäläinen, Helvi 1941b: *Säädyllinen murhenäytelmä II*. Porvoo: Werner Söderström.
Jääskeläinen Kaapro 1899: “Paholaisen käynti Helsingissä.” In *Uuden ajan kynnyksellä: Suomen työväen alpumi* 1, 87–89.
Kivimaa, Arvi 1932: *Hetki ikuisen edessä*. Helsinki: Otava


Waltari, Mika 1929: Yksinäisen miehen junan. Porvoo: WSOY.


Waltari, Mika 1933: Mies ja haave. Romaani. Porvoo: WSOY.


Non-Literary Sources


9.2 SECONDARY SOURCES


af Ursin, N.R. 1907: “Kaupunkien laajeneminen.” In Työmess 22.02.1907, 3.


Anonymus 1899a: “Häviävä Helsinki.” In Isänmaan Ystävä 1899/3, 3.


Anonymus 1900: “Maaseudun vero suurkaupungille.” In Uusimaa 1900/99, 1–2.

Anonymus 1902: “Häviävä Helsinki.” In Päivälehti 18.5.1902, 3.


Anonymus 1903b: “Hermostuminen ja kaupungin elämä.” In Päivälehti 08.10.1903, 3.


http://pm.nlx.com/xtf/view?docId=augustine/augustine.23.xml;chunk.id=div.aug.psalms.v3.204;toc.depth=1;toc.id=div.aug.psalms.v3.204;brand=default 14.5.2013


http://eprints-phd.biblio.unitn.it/692/1/Notes_from_the_Suburb.pdf 14.5.2013


Bell, Marjatta & Hietala, Marjatta (eds.) 2002: *Helsinki, the Innovative City. Historical Perspectives*. Helsinki: SKS.


Donald, James 1999: Imagining the Modern City. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.


Envall, Markku 1992: “Romaani kuin kaleidoskooppi: Mika Waltarin Surun ja ilon kaupunki.” In Turunen, Risto; Saariluoma, Liisa; Assmann,


References


H.S. [Herman Stenberg?] 1908: “The Tribune’n lakkaaminen.” In *Päivä* 1908/7, 58.


Herman, Luc & Vervaeck, Bart 2005: *Handbook of Narrative Analysis.* Translated by Luc Herman & Bart Vervaeck. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.


Hollsten, Anna 2004: *Ei kattoa, ei seiniä. Nääköulma Bo Carpelanin kirjallisuuskäsitykseen.* Helsinki: SKS.

Hubbard, Phil; Kitchin, Rob; Bartley, Brendan & Fuller, Duncan (eds.) 2002: *Thinking Geographically. Space, Theory and Contemporary Human Geography.* London: Continuum.

References

Häkli, Pekka 1955: *Arvid Järnefelt ja hänen lähimaailmansa.* Porvoo: WSOY.
Isomaa, Saija 2009: *Heräämisten poetiikkaa. Lajeja ja intertekstejä Arvid Järnefeltin romaneissa Isänmaa, Maemon lapsia ja Veneh’ojalaiset.* Helsinki: SKS.
http://dpc.uba.uva.nl/tvs/vol24/nro1/art02 14.5.2013


http://www2.hs.fi/extrat/kaupunkt/korttelisarja/43_1.html 14.5.2013


Kallinen, Ari 2011 [?]: “Kumpula kaunokirjallisuudessa.”

http://kaupunginosat.net/vanha_kumpula/kol12.htm 14.5.2013


Kemperink, Mary 2001: *Het verloren paradijs. De literatuur en de cultuur van het Nederlandse Fin de Siècle*. Amsterdam: Amsterdam University Press.


Keunen, Bart 1995: “The Aestheticization of the City in Modernism.” In Berg, Christian; Durieux, Frank & Lernout, Geert (eds.): *The Turn of the
References


Keunen, Bart 1999: “The Decline of the City as Modernist Symbol: City Images in Postmodern Urban Fiction and in Collective Memory.” In GUST (eds.): The Urban Condition: Space, Community and Self in the Contemporary Metropolis. Rotterdam: 010, 359–376.


Kortelainen, Anna 2005: Päiviä naisten paratiisissa. Helsinki: WSOY.


http://www.doria.fi/bitstream/handle/10024/67365/siljalaine_doria.pdf?sequence=3

14.5.2013


References


Nummi, Jyrki; Rossi, Riikka & Isomaa, Saija 2011 (eds.): *Pariisista Iisalmeen. Kansainvälinen ja kansallinen Juhani Aho.* Helsinki: SKS.


References


Saarenheimo, Kerttu 1969: “Pyramidiuni.” In Saarenheimo, Kerttu (ed.): 
Saarenheimo, Mikko [M.S.] 1915: “Talvio, Maila, Niniven lapset.” In Aika 
1915/5, 217–220.
Saarenheimo, Mikko 1916a: “Helsinki kaunokirjallisuuden kuvastimessa.” In
Aika 1916/2, 199–208.
Saarenheimo, Mikko [M.S.] 1916b: “Talvio, Maila, Kultainen lyyra.” In Aika 
Saarenheimo, Mikko 1924: 1880-luvun suomalainen realismi. Porvoo:
WSOY.

Sarajas, Annamari 1962: “Routavuodet ja kansankuvan murros.” In Sarajas,
Annamari: Viimeiset romantikot: kirjallisuuden aatteiden vaihtelua


Schildt, Runar [R. Sdt.] 1912: “Helsingfors i skönlitteraturen.” In Dagens
Tidning 7.4.1912, 11–12.

Industrialization of Time and Space in the 19th Century. Berkeley, CA:
University of California Press.
Schlegel, Jean L. 1910: “Emile Verhaeren.” Translated by Maija K-nniemi. In

Schoolfield, George C. 1998: A History of Finland’s Literature. Lincoln:
University of Nebraska Press.
Bradbury, Malcolm & McFarlane, James (eds.): Modernism. 
Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.


Sonda, Giovanna; Coletta, Claudio & Gabbi, Francesco (eds.) 2010: Urban Plots, Organizing Cities. Farnham: Ashgate.


References

http://www.attackingthedevil.co.uk/pmg/tribute/#sthash.iWqXn4Sb.dpbo
14.5.2013


Steiner, Rodney 1981: Los Angeles, the Centrifugal City. Dubuque, IA: Kendall/Hunt.


Tani, Sirpa 2001: “‘That kind of girl in this kind of neighbourhood...’ The Potential Problems of Street Prostitution Research.” In City 5/3, 311–324.


http://tampub.uta.fi/handle/10024/66599 14.5.2013


Tuan, Yi-Fu 1977: *Space and Place. The Perspective of Experience.* Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.


https://jyx.jyu.fi/dspace/bitstream/handle/123456789/13460/9513922618.pdf?sequence=1

14.5.2013


References


Waltari, Mika 1980: Kirjailijan muistelmia. Porvoo: WSOY.


Unpublished sources


<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Aalto, Minna</td>
<td>84, 132</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ackroyd, Peter</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ahlund, Claes</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alter, Robert</td>
<td>23, 25, 36, 42, 57, 59, 64, 104, 157, 174, 184, 200–210, 212, 221, 232, 252, 271</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anttila, Aarne</td>
<td>17, 20, 72, 153, 166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Augé, Marc</td>
<td>273</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Augustine, Saint</td>
<td>38, 40, 45, 63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aura, Seppo</td>
<td>114</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bakhtin, Mikhail</td>
<td>39, 55, 86, 148, 155, 210, 244, 247, 249, 254, 257</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bal, Mieke</td>
<td>49, 51, 55, 62, 121, 177, 223</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Balshaw, Maria</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Balzac, Honoré</td>
<td>22, 49, 59, 84, 148, 156–157, 165, 187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bang, Gustav</td>
<td>258</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bassini, Alessandro</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bataille, Georges</td>
<td>259</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baude laire, Charles</td>
<td>26, 36, 46, 49, 59, 61, 72, 104, 114, 120–121, 136–137, 139–141, 143–144, 165, 175, 184, 201–202, 213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bal, Mieke</td>
<td>49, 51, 55, 62, 121, 177, 223</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bergbom, Kaarlo</td>
<td>170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bergson, H.L.</td>
<td>216</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bergroth, Kersti</td>
<td>17, 206</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berman, Marshall</td>
<td>78, 137, 165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Borg, Alexandra</td>
<td>36, 42, 46, 57, 59–60, 62, 77, 104, 111, 119, 129, 141, 166, 254</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bourget, Paul</td>
<td>245</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bridgeman, Teresa</td>
<td>56–57, 80, 82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brooks, Peter</td>
<td>35, 45, 68–69, 76, 120–121, 157</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Calvino, Italo</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Canth, Minna</td>
<td>125, 214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chanda, A.K.</td>
<td>26, 57, 84–87, 91, 285</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chaplin, Charlie</td>
<td>259</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chesterton, G.K.</td>
<td>212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conrad, Joseph</td>
<td>48, 171, 209</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dannenbergh, Hilary P.</td>
<td>24, 56–58, 80, 88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Davidoff, Leonore</td>
<td>25, 60, 129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Donald, James</td>
<td>23, 41–42, 63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dos Passos, John</td>
<td>35, 259</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dreiser, Theodore</td>
<td>46, 49, 84, 122, 262, 269</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Döblin, Alfred</td>
<td>35–36, 169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eliot, T.S.</td>
<td>209</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ette, Otmar</td>
<td>56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Flaubert, Gustave</td>
<td>36, 71, 157, 184, 223, 271</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Flecker, James Elroy</td>
<td>211</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Foucault, Michel</td>
<td>55, 157–158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Freeborn, Richard</td>
<td>171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Freeman, Nicholas</td>
<td>36, 149, 161, 193, 212, 221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Freud, Sigmund</td>
<td>135–136, 210, 256</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frisby, David</td>
<td>49, 59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gelfant, Blanche H.</td>
<td>193, 282</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gil, Isabel C.</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gissing, George</td>
<td>36–37, 49, 268</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goethe, Johann Wolfgang von</td>
<td>165, 200, 210, 260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goode, John</td>
<td>36, 268</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodman, Nelson</td>
<td>23–24, 52, 261</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gott diener, M.</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gumbrecht, H.U.</td>
<td>57, 100, 133</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harvey, David</td>
<td>16, 41, 47, 49, 52–56, 62, 85, 92, 119, 150, 163, 180, 268–269, 275</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Havu, I.</td>
<td>17, 20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hesse, Hermann</td>
<td>255</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Huizinga, Johan 256
Häkkinen, Antti 79, 124–125, 128
Kurjensaari, Matti 69, 83, 207, 276–277
Lagopoulos, A.P. 47
Laine, Silja 19, 21, 166, 190, 198–199, 222
Laitinen, Kai 15, 18, 38, 141, 195–196, 203, 205, 218, 272, 276
Lappalainen, Päivi 70, 74, 84, 97, 126–127, 132, 136, 197, 206, 217, 264
Laurila, Aarne 19, 21, 198–199, 204, 240, 225
Le Bon, Gustave 96, 186
Leino, Kasimir 110–113, 126, 133, 140
Levy, D.W. 69
Liuutu, Pentti 17, 20, 67, 166, 237, 274
Loivamaa, Ismo 17
Lomas, Herbert 74–77
Lynch, Kevin 23, 45, 62
Lylytikäinen, Pirjo 46, 70, 82, 86, 96, 122, 129, 171, 176, 186, 245–246
Lönnrot, Elias 173
Mann, Thomas 43
Mannerheim, C.G.E. 32
Marx, Karl 78, 150, 156
Mayakovski, Vladimir 259
Merenmaa, Matti 237
Mitchell, Don 25, 51

Järvelä, Juha 280
Joyce, James 30, 36–37, 42, 156, 209
Kallio, Olavi 156
Karjalainen, P.T. 21, 50, 75, 248
Karri, Unto 83, 135, 168–169, 195, 205, 207, 218, 222–223, 237, 256, 284
Katz, Cindi 50
Keating, Peter 37
Kemperink, Mary 96
Kennedy, Liam 22
Kern, Stephen 74
Kervanto–Nevanlinna, Anja 29, 32, 54, 92, 108
Keunen, Bart 25–26, 36–37, 46, 59, 68, 78, 84, 148, 178, 196, 201–202, 216, 233
Kivi, Aleksi 151
Kivijärvi, Erkki 43, 83, 208
Kivimies, Yrjö 13
Klotz, Volker 35, 243
Lönnrot, Elias 173
Mann, Thomas 43
Mannerheim, C.G.E. 32
Marx, Karl 78, 150, 156
Mayakovski, Vladimir 259
Merenmaa, Matti 237
Mitchell, Don 25, 51
Molarius, Päivi 69, 72, 85, 95–96, 99, 107, 118, 136, 141, 155
Moorjani, Angela B. 223
Moretti, Franco 56–57, 69, 82, 103–104
Mumford, Lewis 40–42, 44–45, 48–49
Niemi, Juhani 145, 150–152, 154, 171
Nieminen, Reetta 21, 203
Noponen, Alpo 110
Nummi, Jyrki 18, 21, 58, 69–71, 82, 86, 203, 206–207
Nünning, Ansgar 24, 55–56, 58
Olsson, Hagar 211, 260
Paavolainen, Olavi 195, 197, 199, 207, 210, 212, 226, 228, 256
Palmgren, Raoul 15, 17, 19, 21, 29, 31, 107, 166, 195, 228, 240, 266, 274
Parsons, Deborah L. 45, 121
Pedersen, A.T. 19–20, 76, 140, 206
Perttula, Irma 206, 238–239, 241, 244, 247–250, 254, 272
Pike, Burton 22, 25, 35, 37–38, 40–42, 48, 63, 145, 165, 193
Poe, E.A. 59, 136, 201
Pollock, Griselda 60, 121
Prendergast, Christopher 36, 45–46, 58, 61, 115, 146, 148, 174, 182
Preston, Peter 39
Procopé, Hjalmar 170
Pushkin, A.S. 177–178
Rantamala, Irmari 46
Relph, Edward 25, 27, 55, 64, 273, 282
Ricoeur, Paul 22–23, 52
Riihonen, H.K. 21, 203, 244
Rimminen, Mikko 23, 75, 105
Rodenbach, George 43, 178
Rojola, Lea 72, 82, 122, 132, 166
Rossi, Rikka 70–71, 96
Rotella, Carlo 23, 36
Runeberg, J.L. 95, 108, 137–138, 182
Räsänen, Hilma 125
Saarenheimo, Mikko 20, 70, 77, 79, 85, 262
Saarikangas, Kirsu 32
Saarinen, Eeli 44
Sarajas, Annamari 122, 250, 255
Schildt, Runar 20, 43, 122, 129, 234, 262
Schoolfield, George 118, 137, 227, 238, 244
Sennett, Richard 44, 49, 54, 119
Shakespeare, William 159
Sharpe, William 22–23, 37–38
Sielaff, Steffen 53, 62
Simmel, Georg 59, 63, 104, 272
Simpson–Housley, Paul 39, 49
Sinervo, Elvi 18, 235, 239, 263, 267, 269, 275–276, 281–283
Smith, Neil 50
Soini, Elsa 207, 224, 274
Soja, Edward 49, 51, 55
Spengler, Oswald 169, 207, 255–256, 259
Strauss, Anselm 41, 109, 285
Strindberg, August 12, 59, 70
Söderberg, Hjalmar 140, 254
Söderhjelm, Werner 69–70, 79, 93
Tani, Sirpa 23, 25, 50, 105, 128
Tarkiainen, Viljo 123
Tavaststjerna, K.A. 18, 70–71, 76, 206
Topelius, Zacharias 28, 43, 67, 108, 166
Trilling, Lionel 26, 84, 86
Tuan, Yi–Fu 25, 49, 55, 160
Tunturi, Janne 17, 19
271–272, 277, 281, 283–284, 286–287
Vaaskivi, Tatu 205, 227, 256–257
Vala, Katri 267
Vandervelde, Émile 162
Vartiainen, Perttu 39
Veivo, Harri 21, 67
Verhaeren, Émile 161–162
Viljanen, Lauri 153, 229, 250
Waris, Heikki 262
Westö, Kjell 20, 31
Whitman, Cedric 37
Williams, Raymond 35, 37–38, 44, 59, 248, 272
Wilson, Elizabeth 25, 35, 46, 60, 111, 121, 125, 129, 139, 147–148, 157, 180–181, 221
Wirth-Nesher, Hana 25, 36–37, 40, 76, 104
Wohl, Richard 41, 109, 285
Wolff, Janet 60, 121, 125, 128, 141, 236
Woolf, Virginia 22, 36–37, 232
Zola, Émile 22, 37, 44–45, 49, 69, 100, 120, 148, 157, 254, 269
Zukin, Sharon 250